





# UPGRADE SPECIALIST IN ANOTHER WORLD

BOOK 04

*Endless Sea Of Clouds*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Upgrade Specialist in Another World

(异界之装备强化专家)

by

Endless Sea Of Clouds

(茫茫云海)

# Synopsis

---

Just as a gamer found an overpowered skill book called 'Item Upgrade' in the hottest virtual reality role-playing game on Earth, something happened to the game's system, causing his soul to leave his body and go to another dimension. Common sense dictates that he would be born anew then become the greatest overlord of this world by making use of his advanced knowledge. Not in this case! He was already dead. Only some fragments of his soul and that skill book managed to get into that dimension and merge with an ordinary common youngster called Bai Yunfei.

This was the enormous Tianhun continent, where humans could be said to have no limits. There was a group of humans here who could cultivate the power of their own souls then control their bodies, the natural elements and even other people's souls with that power! These special beings were called — soul cultivators. Come witness how the several fragments of the dead inter-dimensional traveler's soul and that skill book, which was not governed by the laws of this plane, were going to help Bai Yunfei become a legendary soul cultivator and craftsman!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Deceptioning @ [Wuxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 301: Going Home

---

“Wha—?” Flabbergasted, Bai Yunfei looked oddly at Tang Xinyun, “They... they don’t know who you are?”

Tang Xinyun was surprised too. Though she didn’t think the guards would be happy or excited to see her, them blocking her path wasn’t expected at all. “Who are you? I’ve never seen you before.” She asked after taking a closer look at the guard.

“What do you mean who am I? That’s what I should be asking you! Do you even know where this place is!? Are you trying to gain entry without an invitation slip!? You—”

“He Yang, stay your tongue!” A sudden growl stopped the guard from speaking anymore. Turning his head in surprise, He Yang and the others could see a man in his forties walking forward, “That is the fourth miss you are talking to. Mind your manners!”

This new man was the captain of the gate guards. As the captain, he stood at the very back of the gates and was in a state of shock when he first saw Tang Xinyun. It took him a little longer to confirm who she was before quickly coming forward.

“The fourth miss?” He Yang cried out in alarm before turning back to Tang Xinyun.

When Tang Xinyun saw the man walking toward them, she nodded her head in greeting, “Liao Ba, are you the one on gate duty today?”

“I hadn’t realized it was you—I could hardly believe my eyes...” The one known as ‘Liao Ba’ warmly smiled. “This man,” he pointed at He Yang, “is new, please forgive him for not recognizing you, miss.”

“Oh,” Tang Xinyun noted, “That’s fine then. Liao Ba, may we go in now?”

“Yes, of course! Miss and sire, please enter...” Liao Ba responded

with all the swiftness he could muster before stepping aside for the two to walk past.

It was only when Bai Yunfei and Tang Xinyun walked past the gates and into the residence that He Yang finally snapped to attention. “Liao Ba, is... is she really the fourth miss that left a year ago? I heard she joined the Crafting School, was that true?”

The eyebrows on Liao Ba’s face scrunched together. “He Yang, you’re new here, so there’s plenty about the Tang you don’t know. Have a piece of advice, the fourth miss and her mother are under very special circumstance compared to the rest of the household. As subordinates, it isn’t our job to poke our noses into our employer’s business. Do your job as you’re expected, understood?”

“Yes...” Though he replied, He Yang simply couldn’t understand why Liao Ba wasn’t willing to say anything.

But he knew better than to ask.

.....

Not long after they walked past the gates, Bai Yunfei and Tang Xinyun both came across a white-haired, old man who looked extremely healthy for his age. This man was Tang Yongzhong, the head housekeeper. When Liao Ba realized that Tang Xinyun was back, he had someone make a report to Tang Yongzhong. He knew she was back; hence, why he was here so fast.

“You’ve returned, miss. The young master is waiting in the lounge, please go on in with your friend.” Tang Yongzhong smiled to her and gave Bai Yunfei a nod.

Bai Yunfei took a moment to try and investigate the man’s strength with his soulsense.

“He’s strong!” Bai Yunfei raised an eyebrow. This old man’s strength was by no means weak, but Bai Yunfei made sure to keep his emotions from showing on his face other than a smile.

“I don’t even know what my body’s doing right now, so feel free

to see how strong I am.”

“Uncle Zhong, you look as healthy as ever...” Tang Xinyun nodded, “Is big brother around?”

“Haha, I’m getting on in the years. My bones aren’t what they used to be...” Tang Yongzhong lamented for a while before answering her question, “The lord has been busy with the auction and is rarely at home, but the young master is coincidentally home today.”

“Oh, I see.” Tang Xinyun nodded in understanding, “Then I’ll be heading for the lounge. If you’re busy with something, uncle Zhong, please don’t mind us.”

“Very well then, I’ll be on my way then...” He laughed.

Bai Yunfei and Tang Xinyun left the old man where he was as they entered the lounge. As they walked, Tang Yongzhong continued to stare at the two in pensive thought. “Zhao Mancha said that the fourth miss had joined the Crafting School and had become a disciple of one of the elders. How is she still a late-stage Soul Warrior even a whole year later? How strange, Zhao Mancha isn’t one to lie... and that young man was only a late-stage Soul Warrior as well. Who is he? Has the fourth miss... no no, the house of Qin wouldn’t be happy to hear that...

“Alas... fourth miss, why return after leaving for so long? The Tang will surely add to your troubles now...” Another sigh made its way out. With a shake of his head, he purged the thoughts in his mind and turned to walk away.

In the other direction, Tang Xinyun led Bai Yunfei past a series of limestone roads before finally entering a large lounge.

The lounge was spacious, but only a few people stood at the entrance. A man in his thirties stood at the center of the lounge in greenish-blue robes. The hair of his eyebrows was thick, his nose aquiline. He was by no means handsome, but the spirit of a warrior



could clearly be felt in him with how calm he was.

This man was the older brother to Tang Xinyun and eldest son to the Tang, Tang Jing.

“Big brother,” Tang Xinyun greeted as she approached him.

There was a slight smile on Tang Jing’s face when he saw Tang Xinyun approach, but it quickly started to disappear when he saw Bai Yunfei follow her in. By the time they drew closer, the smile on his face was no longer anywhere to be seen. He nodded his head slightly before going straight into a hushed voice, “Fourth sister, I never imagined that you’d return. You left without a word for over a year. Don’t you know how angry father is with you? He’s busy with matters, but when he arrives home, you’d best think of a way to placate him else risk being punished...”

Rather than any words of greeting or comfort, he chose to rebuke her straight away.

The smile on Tang Xinyun’s face froze at that. “Your little sister understands,” she whispered, “I’ll think of an apology for father...”

Bai Yunfei narrowed his eyes, though Tang Xinyun always said that family didn’t matter to her, the sight in front of him was still strange to the eyes. It worsened his impression of the Tang, but since he was an outsider, he had no right to interfere.

Seemingly sensing the minute changes on Bai Yunfei’s face, Tang Jing’s eyes shifted to give him a look. “And you are...?”

Bai Yunfei could sense an aura similar to that of Jiang Fan from Tang Jing’s body. That meant he was surely a Soul Exalt in strength.

“I am Bai Yunfei, a student of the Crafting School. Pleased to meet you, brother Tang.” Bai Yunfei gave a nod to Tang Jing. Since Tang Jing was Tang Xinyun’s older brother, Bai Yunfei saw no reason to be rude.

“A student of the Crafting School?” Tang Jing repeated with some shock. Giving Bai Yunfei a look over, Tang Jing tried his best to think back to his memories of the Crafting School, but Bai Yunfei’s name just didn’t ring a bell.

“A late-stage Soul Warrior... while that’s decent for his age, he should only be in the higher ranks of the internal school...” Tang Jing thought.

“Fourth sister, Zhao Mancha said that you’ve joined the Crafting School, is that correct? I recall you being at the crux of becoming a Soul Sprite when you left. Why are you still a late-stage Soul Warrior then?” He didn’t doubt Zhao Mancha’s words about her joining the Crafting School, but her being the personal disciple to one of the elders left plenty of room for doubt.

Whitening in the face at the question, Tang Xinyun found herself at a loss for words. Fortunately, it was Bai Yunfei who spoke up for her. “Xinyun became a Soul Sprite shortly after joining the Crafting School, but her strength has temporarily weakened because of some unforeseen circumstances.”

“Oh? Something like that can happen?” Surprised, Tang Jing looked at Tang Xinyun with a pensive look, “What would that...”

Before he could say anymore, the sounds of approaching footsteps stopped him from speaking. Looking up, he saw Tang Yongzhong walk into the lounge.

As soon as he entered the lounge, Tang Yongzhong said, “Young master, the men from the house of Cai in Guanbo City have sent some very important goods. As of now, they are located in the Treasure Trove. If you could come...”

“Oh? They’re here already?” Tang Jing remarked, “Very well, I’ll be on my way.” He nodded.

“Fourth sister,” he turned to Tang Xinyun, “I have matters to attend to, so I’ll end things here. As for lord Bai... I’ll leave you to

make arrangements for him.”

With a final nod to Bai Yunfei, he moved to follow Tang Yongzhong out of the lounge, leaving Tang Xinyun and Bai Yunfei alone.

It was only after Tang Jing left through the gates that Bai Yunfei let some semblance of emotion return to his face.

Only a few words were spared between this reunion between brother and sister that ended due to a material reason. He hadn't even asked a single question regarding his sister's weakened state—something Bai Yunfei had a hard time believing.

Tang Xinyun didn't seem to mind. Giving only a sigh, Tang Xinyun turned to Bai Yunfei, “Yunfei, I'd like to see mother now...”

“Eh?”

“Oh! Yes, let's go then, Xinyun.”

.....

Bai Yunfei followed Tang Xinyun through a series of passageways and corridors. On the way, they came across several astonished servants. They bowed to her as she passed, but as soon as she and Bai Yunfei walked far enough away, the servants began to whisper to each other with hushed voices.

After walking for several minutes, the surrounding area grew more and more quiet due to them passing fewer servants, and before long, the two finally arrived at a simple and quiet courtyard.

Tang Xinyun came to a sudden stop at the front of the gates as if hesitating. Both of her hands tightly gripped her clothes and her upper teeth bit down on her lower lip. In her eyes, expectation, excitement, and even a little fear could be seen...

Puzzled by her reaction, Bai Yunfei asked, “Xinyun, what's

wrong?”

“It’s... it’s nothing...” She dismissed Bai Yunfei’s concern with a smile before stepping into the courtyard.

# Chapter 302: Reunion Between Mother and Daughter

---

The courtyard wasn't large by any means, only a few rooms and a fairly small outdoor area. In the middle of the courtyard was a stone table with stone stools, and on the right was an old tree with a trunk as thick as an arm. The leaves on the tree were sparse, and the tree was yellowing by a small degree, a clear sign of it slowly dying. A purple vine was growing around the trunk and tree branches, but even that vine was slowly fading in color, as if it was on the verge of death.

A figure in white was on the ground underneath the tree. The woman was hard at work weeding the area. Several strands of her hair would sometimes droop down and touch the ground.

When Bai Yunfei walked into the courtyard, the very first thing he saw was the woman using her left hand to brush her hair behind her ear—exactly like Tang Xinyun's habit.

Clearly engrossed in her work, the woman didn't notice Tang Xinyun or Bai Yunfei until they were far into the courtyard. A serene smile appeared on her face as she looked up to greet her visitors.

As soon as her eyes landed on Tang Xinyun, the smile on her face froze. Likewise, her hands stopped what they were doing as their owner stared blankly at Tang Xinyun. The weeds that were in her hands fell to the ground and dirt landed on her white robes, but the woman didn't seem to notice.

Even Tang Xinyun ceased walking to stare when the woman turned around. However, her eyes weren't as blank as the woman's. Her eyes were filled with excitement.

Moments went by as the two women stared at one another in silence.

It was Tang Xinyun who was the first to break the silence. Her red lips slowly opened as she said with a quavering voice, “Mo—mother, I’m home...”

.....

And so the mother and daughter started to talk to each other. Not wanting to disturb the two, Bai Yunfei walked over to the stone table and sat down. A small silver knife appeared in his hand, and he started to toy around it with. Every so often, he’d look over to where the other two were with a small smile.

Since the mother and daughter hadn’t seen each other in a long time, there was plenty to catch up on. As such, they were inside while Bai Yunfei stood guard outside.

“Creaakkkk...”

The door to the room Tang Xinyun and her mother had been in creaked open. Turning his head, Bai Yunfei watched the two women slowly walk out.

Tang Xinyun’s eyes were slightly red, but her lips were curled in a cheerful smile.

Tang Xinyun’s mother, Chu Qingxue, led her daughter to Bai Yunfei and smiled to greet him. “Lord Bai, Xinyun has told me all about you. I thank you for constantly looking after her and for bringing her here. Thank you for all your troubles...”

Her voice was soft, but succinct to the ears, just like Tang Xinyun’s. Not even a wrinkle could be seen on Chu Qingxue’s pale-white skin, making it extremely hard for Bai Yunfei to believe that she was Tang Xinyun’s mother. According to what Tang Xinyun had once said to him, her mother was reaching her older years.

But the woman in front of him right now looked no older than thirty-five at most.

“Haha, auntie, please just call me Yunfei.” Bai Yunfei gave an uneasy smile, “Xinyun and I are students of the Crafting School, so

it's only natural that we look after one another. There's no need for auntie to be so polite."

His personality somewhat surprised Chu Qingxue. Her daughter had told her plenty about Bai Yunfei, like how he was the disciple of the ex-headmaster of the Crafting School and how talented and unordinary he was, but the fact that he was surprisingly 'shy' was a nice contrast, earning him several favors in her book.

Smiling warmly, Chu Qingxue asked him, "Yunfei, what are your plans? Do you have any desire to go into Mo City and look around?"

"I don't have any plans for visiting anywhere. I'll just wait for Xinyun to enjoy her time with auntie before we return to the Crafting School. In the meantime, thank you very much for your hospitality, auntie..." He replied after giving the question some thought.

"Haha, then you may as well live in this courtyard for now." Chu Qingxue pointed to one of the spare rooms off to the left, "Make yourself at home. Xinyun can take you sightseeing the next few days, but... some of the places in this residence are off-limits. I'm sure Xinyun told you before, the two of us are..."

Bai Yunfei shook his hand before she finished that thought, "Don't worry, auntie. I won't go where I'm not supposed to."

The three of them sat at the stone table and continued to talk. Now that she was reunited with her mother, Tang Xinyun looked a lot happier than before; it showed on her face. She spoke excitedly about several interesting things she saw or heard with Zhao Mancha on their way to the Crafting School. She even shared several stories about her time in the Crafting School.

Bai Yunfei listened to her talk from the side and smiled whenever she did. He felt happy; to see her smile so much made all the traveling it took to get here worth it.

“My lady, my lady! I heard the young miss is back, is it true?!”

All of a sudden, the ‘loud’ voice of another person broke the flow of conversation before a rush of orange light swiftly flew into the courtyard.

The voice caused Bai Yunfei’s heart to suddenly stop beating. He thought about jumping up and running away, but before he could even move a finger, the person was already in front of the three.

Standing up, Tang Xinyun greeted the person with a smile. “Auntie Zhao, I’m home...”

“Young miss, it really is you!” Zhao Mancha was dressed in garbs a simple farmer would wear, but her face was flush with emotions; the smallest of tears could even be seen gathering near her eyes. “Young miss... why didn’t you send a letter before you came back? I could’ve gone to get you...”

“Haha, auntie Zhao, Yunfei used a flying sword to get us here, so I didn’t have the time to send one.”

“Yunfei?” Zhao Mancha repeated, her eyes slowly slide over to where Bai Yunfei was sitting.

Rather awkwardly, Bai Yunfei nodded his head to the older woman. “Ah... auntie Zhao, long time no see... haha...”

“You!!” Exploding with anger, Zhao Mancha immediately started to interrogate him, “Why are you with the young miss!?”

Sensing the fury and suspicion in her tone, Bai Yunfei started to wave his hands to plead for himself, “Please don’t misunderstand, auntie Zhao. Xinyun and I somehow met at the Crafting School again. I didn’t know that your goal was to bring her there as well...”

Unable to hide the smile on her face, Tang Xinyun spoke up next, “Auntie Zhao, Yunfei and I really did meet again at the Crafting School. He actually got there a month later than we did. Please don’t doubt him...”



At a loss for words, Chu Qingxue listened to the interaction in silence; Tang Xinyun hadn't mentioned this before.

Fearing that Zhao Mancha might strike out, Bai Yunfei had Tang Xinyun explain the situation to defuse her anger. Zhao Mancha relented most likely because of her trust in Tang Xinyun. She stared at him for a moment. "I was mistaken about you ever since our first meeting. Please forgive me, lord Bai. It was because of your doing that we were saved outside of Gaoyi City, and now that you've brought the young miss home to reunite with her mother, I, Zhao Mancha, cannot thank you enough!!"

"Oh..." Clearly not expecting such a calm and fair response, Bai Yunfei shook his head in a hurry, "Your words are far too polite, aunty Zhao. As long as you believe me, I'm fine with that, haha..."

Just as Chu Qingxue was finally about to inquire about something, Zhao Mancha suddenly remembered something, "Young miss. On your way back home, did you come across Hua Binbai?"

"Eh?" Bai Yunfei spoke up with narrowed eyes, "How do you know about that, aunty Zhao?"

Seeing the change in expression from Bai Yunfei and Tang Xinyun, Zhao Mancha was able to confirm her doubts. Stern-faced, she replied, "On my way here, I came across a group of men from the Hua storming into the Tang residence. The second master invited them in, so I was able to hear from them that the young miss was home. I wasn't able to hear the details, but I did manage to hear something about Hua Binbai and the young miss needing to justify her actions..."

A chilling light flashed across Bai Yunfei's eyes, "Hmph! Is he really here? Trying to get revenge is he then? He's only going to find trouble waiting for him!"

Confused beyond confused, Chu Qingxue asked for clarification, "Xinyun, Yunfei, what is going on? Did something happen between

you two and him?”

“I...” Tang Xinyun hesitated, unsure of how to respond to such a question.

Bai Yunfei didn't have any misgivings. He swiftly retold the story of what happened with Hua Binbai back on Mt. Orchid.

“He said such horrible things to the young miss?” Zhao Mancha blew up, “He's daring, very daring! Despite lady Chu's kindhearted nature, even accepting their incessant whinings, they continue to demand more and more; will they not be satisfied until she and the young miss are driven out of the Tang!?”

Worried, Tang Xinyun asked the older woman, “Auntie Zhao, who... who came from the Hua?”

“I'm uncertain myself,” Zhao Mancha replied after some thought, “but I think the one leading the group was Hua Binbai's second brother, Hua Chenshi. He might have a few guards and other visitors with him...”

Chu Qingxue chose then to say, “Let me deal with them. Xinyun has only just returned home, so it's best not to make a huge deal out of this...”

“Bah! The Hua grow even more unreasonable by the day! This time, they've brought even more people to cause trouble. That Hua Yueying favors the Hua far too much. I'm certain she'll side with them and raise a fuss to trouble lady Chu and the young miss. I say we should pretend the young miss isn't home and let them rant by themselves!”

Chu Qingxue didn't seem to agree. “How could we do that?” She asked, “By now, there are many people that are aware Xinyun is home. We cannot dance around this topic. Do you wish to make Xinyun's return home seem like she is some sort of thief?”

Throughout the conversation, Tang Xinyun was biting her lower lip in concern, “Mother, why don't I apologize to Hua Binbai?”

They're here to regain what face they had, so if I..."

"Bang!!"

The sound of something breaking jolted the three women from their conversation. Whipping their heads toward the sound, they saw a piece of the stone table dropping to the ground and an angry Bai Yunfei rubbing his right hand. "Apologize? What for! I disagree! Why should Xinyun have to accept this abuse? Why should the Hua be allowed to act as they are? This is ridiculous! I was the one who hit him, so his qualms should be with me. If he wants, I'll return the favor again!"

Just like that, Bai Yunfei flew out of the courtyard, running for the lounge.

"Yunfei! Yunfei!!" Alarmed, Tang Xinyun jumped up, crying out after him, but he didn't respond.

He was already out the courtyard and well on his way. Around the corner he ran, headed for the lounge.

## Chapter 303: Paying a Visit

---

Tang Xinyun turned to look at her mother in worry, “Mother... what... what should we do?”

Both Chu Qingxue and Zhao Mancha were stunned into silence by Bai Yunfei’s sudden actions.

“Sigh...” Chu Qingxue shook her head, “What an impulsive child... let’s go after him quickly. We mustn’t let anything happen to Yunfei.”

It wasn’t as though she couldn’t understand why Bai Yunfei was angry about their attempts to ‘compromise.’

While she could understand Bai Yunfei’s anger, how in the world could Bai Yunfei understand the helpless situation they were in?

.....

Bai Yunfei traveled to the lounge with a quickness like the wind. His expression was as dark as a storm. He was angry about the decisions of the three women. They were faced with humiliation and persecution from the Hua, yet they chose to apologize and compromise; that was something Bai Yunfei felt hard to accept.

He wasn’t a man so impulsive that he’d let his emotions affect all of his decisions, but he knew that Chu Qingxue suffered. Despite not fully understanding the situation, Bai Yunfei would never allow Tang Xinyun ‘apologize’ to Hua Binbai. There was no way he’d let her accept such humiliation: absolutely not!

“I may be an outsider and not understand what the Tang is like, but I can at the very least duke it out with the Hua!”

With his speed, only three minutes were needed for him to arrive near the lounge of the Tang residence. Before he turned the corner, he could hear the sound of footsteps, so he started to slow down. Turning the corner with a calmer face than before, he was greeted by the sight of several people marching toward him in an

aggressive manner.

Eyeing the group, Bai Yunfei was able to pick one out of the entire crowd. A person bandaged up as heavily as a mummy.

That person was, without a doubt, Hua Binbai.

Noticing Bai Yunfei turn the corner, the men coming toward him started to slow down as well. They were surprised to see the unwelcome expression on his face.

“It’s... it’s him! Brother, he’s the one that slut Tang Xinyun attacked me with!! He’s the one that hit me!” As soon as Bai Yunfei’s face registered in Hua Binbai’s eyes, he immediately raised a hand to point out Bai Yunfei. Since his teeth were missing, speaking was a little hard for him, but the hearing of everyone around him was good enough to make sense of what he was saying.

The light in Bai Yunfei’s eyes was like daggers as he glared at Hua Binbai, “You men of Hua, I wasn’t quite sure what I just heard. Care to repeat that again?”

“Yo—” Hua Binbai wanted to say something more, but when he met Bai Yunfei’s glare, he found himself unable to say anything else. His heart stopped beating for a moment, and his face grew a rosy-red, as if he was getting constipated.

Of course, since he was wrapped up in so many bandages, no one could tell what was going on with him.

“Arrogant brat!!” At that moment, a bulky-looking person walked over from Hua Binbai’s side. Glaring at the young man in front of him, he spat, “Are you the one who hurt my younger brother!?”

This thick-browed man must’ve been the one Zhao Mancha referred to as Hua Chenshi, the older brother of Hua Binbai. The moment Hua Chenshi stepped forward, Bai Yunfei could tell that he wasn’t even bothering to hide his willingness to fight with how heavy his aura was getting.

“Early-stage Soul Ancestor!” Bai Yunfei remarked. Hua Binbai was only an early-stage Soul Sprite, so Bai Yunfei hadn’t expected his older brother would be that much stronger.

“That’s right! I was the one who beat him, but with how rude he was being, it’s no wonder he found himself getting beaten up! So what, are you going to take his anger out on me in his stead?” Though Bai Yunfei was normally good-natured, the Bai Yunfei of right now was anything but that.

“Very well, then! You’ve guts, brat! Men, break his legs!!” With a roar, a dozen guards immediately came forward to fulfill his command.

“Stay your hand!” A deeper voice boomed from within the lounge. From there, a golden-robed man in his thirties walked out. He was on the skinnier side, his beard was pointed, and his eyes were as unfriendly as his stern lips. At a first glance, he’d give anyone the impression of being ‘cold-hearted.’

Right behind him was Tang Yongzhong, the head housekeeper.

Bai Yunfei wasn’t one to judge appearances, but even he found himself filled with loathing for this person.

Sparing a glance at Bai Yunfei, the man then spoke to Hua Chenshi, “Brother Chenshi, please do not spill any unnecessary blood on the grounds of the Tang. Please take your business outside, else I will find it hard to explain myself to father.”

“Second brother, what do you mean by this?” Just then, an even gentler voice asked a question. This time, it was Tang Xinyun who appeared by Bai Yunfei’s side. “Second brother,” she said to the unfriendly-looking man, “Yunfei is a guest of our home, how could you treat him this way!?”

This unkindly-looking person was the second brother of Tang Xinyun, Tang Zhi, a late-stage Soul Sprite.

Somewhat surprised by her sudden outburst, Tang Zhi looked at

Zhao Mancha and Chu Qingxue, who only just arrived behind Tang Xinyun, “Tang Xinyun, you know that I’m your older brother. How dare you speak to me that way!? The man you brought home injured Hua Binbai severely, you can’t escape your responsibility! The Hua are good friends with us Tang, yet you pull something like this when you come home. Are you mad!? Are you trying to destroy the friendship between our two families!?”

“I... I didn’t mean to...” Cowed by the intimidating scolding of her older brother, Tang Xinyun’s face drastically whitened. For a good while, she didn’t say anything else. She bit her lower lip, troubled.

The knot in Chu Qingxue’s eyes grew slightly thicker as she prepared to speak, but it was Bai Yunfei who beat her to the punch. “What a groundless accusation! Are you just going to listen to Hua Binbai’s one-sided story to make your decision!?”

Tang Zhi chose to throw his lot with the Hua to focus on Tang Xinyun. This, to Bai Yunfei, felt extremely wrong. They were brother and sister of the same father. It was utterly incomprehensible to Bai Yunfei why Tang Zhi would choose to make life difficult for Tang Xinyun.

“That is right! The Tang will believe in master Hua’s words!” Without even skipping a beat, Tang Zhi unreasonably started to confirm what Bai Yunfei had said, “As an outsider, you should resign yourself to your punishment for harming another! And Tang Xinyun should offer up an apology!”

“An apology!? You’re making your own sister offer up an apology to the one who spoke so rudely to her in the first place!?” Bai Yunfei sarcastically snapped, “Second master Tang, I’d like to ask you something. Do your words represent the entirety of the Tang?”

Tang Yongzhong spoke then, as if reluctant to have Tang Zhi answer that question, “Young master, I—”

“Stay your tongue, I act well within my rights! With father gone, the Tang is up to me to manage!” Tang Zhi boomed to Tang Yongzhong before turning back to Bai Yunfei, “That is correct! I speak on behalf of the Tang, and the Tang says that Tang Xinyun should apologize!”

“Hahaha! Alright then! What a great family the Tang are!” Tang Zhi’s answer forced a laugh from Bai Yunfei.

Only now did Bai Yunfei realize just what kind of treatment Tang Xinyun had faced at the hands of her own family. If Tang Zhi could speak about her in such a manner while speaking on behalf of the Tang, that meant there’d be no repercussion for him since the others felt the same way.

With a hand to stop Chu Qingxue from speaking, Bai Yunfei continued to say, “Fine then! I was the one who hurt Hua Binbai! Their grievances are with me! If you want to deal with me, then bring it on! If you’re a soul cultivator, then by all means use your strength to prove yourself to me!”

A clamor started to rise among the crowd. Did Bai Yunfei really mean he would fight an entire family by himself!?

“Haha, what an ignorant brat you are! Don’t think that you can act as arrogant as you like just because you defeated my younger brother in such an underhanded manner! Men! Capture and bring him back to our home!” Hua Chenshi nodded at Tang Zhi for confirmation before commanding his men to arrest Bai Yunfei.

.....

“That... that Bai Yunfei, why is he so reckless!? He might be strong, but does he really think he can fight off the Hua...?” Zhao Mancha uttered with disbelief and wide-open eyes.

“Hold on!” Zhao Mancha suddenly realized something, “His strength... what’s wrong with him!? He was a mid-stage Soul Sprite before, so why is he a late-stage Soul Warrior right now!?”



She whirled to Tang Xinyun, “And young miss! You... why are you still a late-stage Soul Warrior!? It’s been a year since you joined the Crafting School! You should be a Soul Sprite by now! What in the world happened!?”

“Aunty Zhao, it’s a little complicated,” Tang Xinyun sighed. “A lot of things happened to us, but I can explain everything at another time...”

Chu Qingxue continued to watch as the Hua family started to close in on Bai Yunfei, “Xinyun, why do you look as if you’re not worried about Yunfei?”

Tang Xinyun smiled gently before turning to look at the very calm-looking Bai Yunfei, “Mother, don’t worry. If it's these people, they won’t be able to even hurt Yunfei...”

# Chapter 304: Utter Defeat!!

---

At Hua Chenshi's command, seven figures came flying forward with blinding speed to surround Bai Yunfei. None of them had any weapons on hand. They were within the grounds of the Tang after all, so it wouldn't do to be excessive.

These seven men were all Soul Warriors; meaning that the power of the Hua was considerably large. However, this wasn't enough to frighten Bai Yunfei just yet, "Do you think you can compare to the Crafting School in strength?" Bai Yunfei thought.

Bai Yunfei no longer had to worry about matters like this; he was a person with 'backing' now.

However, mobilizing the Crafting School should only be done when necessary. Now was not one of those times.

"Bang! Bang! Bang..."

The sounds of seven muffled strikes could be heard before the seven Soul Warriors flew back without warning.

They had been beaten back just as quickly as they had come forward.

Everyone found themselves at a loss for words until the very last of the seven came to a stop on the ground. Awed, they looked to where Bai Yunfei was.

Not even a single step had been taken from his original position, but everyone could see a faint red glowing object flying right by his side. It seemed to float in the air as it spun circles around Bai Yunfei.

The Cataclysmic Seal!!

As a lifebound armament, the Cataclysmic Seal could be controlled as easily as moving an arm. If it could be controlled that easily, how could any Soul Warrior hope to defend against it?

They wouldn't even be able to see it when it struck. If not for Bai Yunfei's precise control over its strength, the seven would've been more than just hurt.

"Aren't you going to capture me? I haven't moved at all. If you've the skill, come and get me!" Bai Yunfei smirked at the gobsmacked people in front of him.

"Soul armament!!" The pupils in Hua Chenshi's eyes dilated a bit in shock. Not only was he shocked that Bai Yunfei had one, he was shocked that it was so abnormally strong.

"Autonomous control... he can control it at will!! But how? How could a soul cultivator as weak as a late-stage Soul Warrior possess such a spectacular soul armament!?" Hua Chenshi was lost in thought, but he wasn't the only one thinking this, everyone else was also thinking this, other than the still-smiling Tang Xinyun.

Events like this would be easily accepted at the Crafting School, but when these events took place in the outside world, where very few knew about soul armaments, they'd be extremely shocking. They weren't privy to what lifebound armaments were, so there was no way they'd even know the Cataclysmic Seal was one.

Bai Yunfei's actions were extremely alarming to everyone, but Hua Chenshi was far from intimidated. "Xia Wu, Xia Meng, Chen Chong, and Chen Luo, forward!"

At his command, four new figures flew forward in two pairs of violet and green light. The four of them were mid-stage Soul Sprites. The two on the right were of the lightning affinity, and the two on the left were of the wind affinity. This meant that they were extremely fast compared to the normal soul cultivators. In a matter of moments, they were already close enough to Bai Yunfei to grab each one of his limbs.

Even despite the fact that he was being attacked by four even stronger enemies, Bai Yunfei didn't move a muscle. His eyes twinkled with light as the Cataclysmic Seal started to act in

accordance to his will. A half-circular orange glow of light immediately materialized in front of his body.

“Bang bang bang bang!!”

The four didn't even have enough time to pull their arms back. Caught off guard by the barrier, their arms struck it, but rather than bounce off, their arms merely stopped!

“They're stronger!”

With a sneer, Bai Yunfei fed in even more soulforce into his barrier so that it wouldn't dissipate. Now that his defenses had been bolstered, Bai Yunfei commanded for the Cataclysmic Seal to strike furiously at the four figures close to him.

There was a flash of orange light, rendering the four unable to see what in the world was going on. Before the idea to retreat could even fully form in their heads, the Cataclysmic Seal had struck.

Since it was defending against their attacks, how could it let them get away so easily?

Another four blows could be heard as the Cataclysmic Seal struck each of the four squarely in the chest. They flew through the air from the blow, and two of the fighters were unable to stop themselves from spitting out a mouthful of blood.

“.....”

The silence was so thick in the courtyard even a pin could be heard if it were dropped.

If the crowd was 'awestruck' by how Bai Yunfei had managed to knock back seven of Soul Warriors, they were now 'terrorized' that a late-stage Soul Warrior was able to defeat four Soul Sprites without even lifting his hand!!

No, that wouldn't be accurate.

Bai Yunfei defeated four Soul Sprites without moving even a single finger!!

Only Bai Yunfei and Tang Xinyun were calm at this development. Even the elder behind Tang Zhi, Tang Yongzhong, was squinting his eyes at Bai Yunfei. Pensive as he observed him, the old man's eyes flashed brightly, but no one noticed the light.

The corners of Bai Yunfei's lips quirked just slightly. He raised his right hand and pointed a finger at the remaining middle-aged man. He had a scar on his mouth and was standing behind the Hua brothers. "And last up, are you going to let him fight me?"

Hua Chenshi messed up. The proverbial iron plate had been kicked, and now he was left with a stubbed toe to make up for his troubles.

He glared furiously at the still shocked Hua Binbai behind him; not to blame him for being dragged into trouble, but to blame him for not giving correct information. They couldn't back away now and admitting defeat was no longer a possibility.

Gnashing his teeth, Hua Chenshi commanded the scarred man behind him in a very polite manner rather than the dictative way he spoke to the others, "Uncle Lin, if I could trouble you to help us..."

Lin Li was a guest of the Hua, and he was a mid-stage Soul Ancestor with an affinity for earth. Although he wasn't super strong, he was still quite a ways stronger than Hua Chenshi.

Though he wasn't a subordinate of the Hua, so Hua Chenshi made sure to treat him politely.

Lin Li stared inquisitively at Bai Yunfei. It wasn't clear if he was staring at Bai Yunfei himself or the Cataclysmic Seal floating right next to him. Upon hearing Hua Chenshi's request, Lin Li gave a stern nod and stalked toward Bai Yunfei. His right arm swung out, revealing bulging muscles, and the pigmentation of his skin began to turn gray in color.

This show of strength caused everyone's heart to stop for a

moment.

The man was a mid-stage Soul Ancestor; a level many times higher than the people from the previous two attempts. Up against an expert like this, would Bai Yunfei be able to defend himself as easily as before?

Turning to look at said person, the crowd could see that there was finally a difference in his stance than before. The Cataclysmic Seal was now floating behind him as if trying to say it wouldn't be used. His right arm flexed forward in a manner similar to Lin Li, and under everyone's eyes, a glove the color of violet and black appeared over his right fist.

Everyone thought that Bai Yunfei knew his soul armament wouldn't be able to help him against this enemy, so he was preparing to fight himself this time.

What they didn't know was that Bai Yunfei had other plans in mind.

His movements had given Lin Li a brief moment of pause, but the pause was quickly overtaken by a rich amount of fighting spirit as he started to prepare himself for a fight.

He wasn't stupid enough to believe Bai Yunfei was a weak Soul Warrior, but Bai Yunfei was clearly indicating that he wanted a mano-a-mano battle. That was what made Lin Li so happy.

Soul cultivators with an affinity for the earth all craved this type of battle. A battle where fist would meet fist and where force would be met with force.

The two stalked forward three steps each while they stared hard at one another. As if by some sort of tacit agreement, their legs immediately dug into the ground, and they boosted themselves forward with so much force that they fractured the area underneath them. Like arrows, they flew toward one another with great speed. Lin Li was cloaked in a rich glow of orange light while

Bai Yunfei's right fist had a halo of elemental fire wrapped around it.

There were no superfluous movements or wasted actions. As soon as the two drew close enough to each other, they lashed out with their fists.

“Bang!!”

Red and orange clashed against each other in a brilliant show of light as the two fists collided. Waves of intense heat and energy sloughed off one another. A fearsome storm swept through the surrounding area.

“Crack!!”

Then, the distinct sound of bone being fractured could be heard.

Though relatively soft to the ears, it was loud enough for everyone to hear it clearly. They held their breaths in anticipation. Hua Chenshi and Hua Binbai both looked on in glee. They thought that Bai Yunfei had overestimated himself and lost.

Challenging Lin Li in a battle of fists would surely lead to Bai Yunfei's arm breaking in several places, if he was not maimed completely. So assured were the two that glee appeared on their faces before the dust died down.

On the other side, Chu Qingxue and Zhao Mancha were looking visibly worried. Even Tang Xinyun—who normally had the utmost faith in Bai Yunfei—was clenching her fists as she strained her beautiful eyes, watching the fight in an unwavering manner.

“Boom!!”

The next moment, a single person flew out of the explosion of light with blood flying from his mouth. As the mist of blood stained the air and eventually the ground, the person came crashing down.

This person had fallen in the opposite direction from where he

had started off.

Right next to the Hua brothers!

As soon as Lin Li fell to the ground, the light from the previous collision faded from sight. Left at the center of it all was Bai Yunfei. He was still standing carefree on both feet, and his right arm slightly shook. The red light from his hand was gone now, having retreated back into the area behind him.

A mid-stage Soul Ancestor...

Defeated in one fell stroke!!



# Chapter 305: Intimidation

---

Bai Yunfei held his right fist with a calm look of indifference from where he stood.

No one could tell, but the upper right portion of his arm was trembling just slightly in his sleeve.

In order to defeat the mid-stage Soul Ancestor, Lin Li, in one strike, Bai Yunfei owed the... Eighty-one-fold Fist Force!

It was indeed the very same powerful soul skill he hadn't fully mastered yet!

Using the Cataclysmic Seal wasn't a guaranteed win against this enemy. With the insane amount of defense that came with being an earth type soul cultivator, Bai Yunfei was afraid that he'd have to expend a large amount of effort in order to defeat him.

But if he used all of his upgraded equipment in unison, he'd have a greater chance of victory. It'd be equally stunning, but it wouldn't be nearly as impressive as the strategy he went with.

He'd rather use the Eighty-one-fold Fist Force to defeat Lin Li in a single blow. This was the best way to show off one thing: might!

With how strong Lin Li appeared to everyone else, his defeat would surely shock everyone!

This left one more thing to finish off...

Bai Yunfei's head snapped back to the dazed Hua Chenshi and Hua Binbai. The two of them were stunned into silence when they saw the pain-filled look of shock on Lin Li's face. Their minds were completely blank, as if unable to compute what was happening.

Smirking, Bai Yunfei's eyes gained a sharp glint of steel to them. At his command, the Cataclysmic Seal shot forward with tremendous speed, planning on striking Hua Chenshi!!

What Bai Yunfei did was noticed by Hua Chenshi, but there was

no way he could move faster than the Cataclysmic Seal as an early-stage Soul Ancestor. Kicking off against the ground, he tried his best to evade. He barely managed to dodge the Cataclysmic Seal and keep it from hitting him.

As soon as Bai Yunfei saw the Cataclysmic Seal graze Hua Chenshi's skin, his eyes narrowed together. A large amount of soulforce entered the brick, and then, in a flash of light, the brick suddenly expanded, becoming three meters wide!

“Bang!!”

Despite Hua Chenshi's instinctive attempt to protect himself with his arms and with a glow of white light around him, he was struck by the Cataclysmic Seal. How could he possibly block it? In a single second, he was sent flying through the air. His right arm was bent at an awkward angle, and his face was a flush-red as blood escaped from his mouth.

Hua Binbai was struck by the Cataclysmic Seal as well. He was sent flying backwards before landing on the ground with a thump.

He gave a small groan, and then he fell unconscious.

“.....”

Silence descended for some time. This time, even Tang Xinyun was among the ones who stared at Bai Yunfei in shock. Even she didn't expect Bai Yunfei to so swiftly strike the Hua brothers when he had only just defeated Lin Li. They weren't servants or guests, and no matter how hedonistic or rude they were, they were still in the direct line of succession to a major family. Injuring them would only mean escalating the initial problem by another level of degree.

In Tang Xinyun's eyes, this wasn't something Bai Yunfei would normally do.

It was a little too... overbearing.

Moments went by before Tang Zhi found himself able to speak.

The situation at hand was far beyond what he could control now; if the Hua brothers were seriously injured, Tang Zhi wouldn't be able to save himself from trouble.

Narrowing his eyes, he was just about to command the guards to capture Bai Yunfei when a single hand came down on his shoulder before he could act.

Turning his head, Tang Zhi saw Tang Yongzhong shake his head as if to say no.

"You... who are you!?" Struggling to get up from the ground, Hua Chenshi held his injured left arm with his right. For the first time since he had met Bai Yunfei, he was finally starting to grow concerned about Bai Yunfei's identity.

It was a test. Since he knew that he was no longer a match for Bai Yunfei, Hua Chenshi could only hope to use the power of his family to exact revenge, but he'd have to know Bai Yunfei's background before revenge could be exacted.

"You want to know my background?" Bai Yunfei barked with cold laughter. "I am Bai Yunfei of the Crafting School. My master is Zi Jin! If you still wish to fight, then I'll be happy to keep you company!" Each word he spoke was spoken with zealous emphasis.

The very mention of the Crafting School was enough to cause the entire group from the Hua to look surprised. Their group, Tang Zhi included, didn't understand who this 'Zi Jin' was, but Tang Yongzhong, who stood behind Tang Zhi, immediately reacted when he heard the name. Though his pupils rapidly dilated, the flash of light that sparked to life was more than enough to cover up the look of disbelief in them.

.....

The house of Hua left swiftly after that. They had come in like a tidal wave ready to destroy, but their departure had been as

miserable as a pack of beaten wolves.

Turning around, Bai Yunfei completely disregarded Tang Zhi and the others. He walked straight to Tang Xinyun. “Xinyun,” he smiled, “I’ve taken care of the troubles, let’s go on back.”

“.....”

Not a single word was said when left. Tang Zhi didn’t even think about trying to stop them.

“Uncle Zhong, what do you think?”

Finally, Tang Zhi asked Tang Yongzhong for his thoughts. No longer was he as cold and indifferent as he was when the Hua were here; he was far more pensive to the eye now.

“Hard to say.” Tang Yongzhong slowly slid his eyes away from Bai Yunfei’s retreating figure of. “He is without a doubt a student of the Crafting School. That object he was using is definitely a soulbound armament, and a special one at that...

“Second, his strength is beyond that of a late-stage Soul Warrior. I can’t sense any elements in his body, but his physical strength is that of a Soul Ancestor at the very least!!”

“Soul Ancestor!!” Tang Zhi had come to this same conclusion as well, but he didn’t dare accept it as fact until Tang Yongzhong confirmed it.

Even then, he found it hard to stomach. It took countless drugs and primal stones to forcibly make him a late-stage Soul Sprite level, yet he had been stuck at the final threshold before the Soul Ancestor level for several years.

Of course, this was due to his poor training talent.

His fourth brother was able to become a late-stage Soul Sprite by the age of sixteen; a feat like that was seen once every several hundred years, even in the house of Tang, but it still remained to be seen if he could become a Soul Ancestor before he hit twenty.

Bai Yunfei was twenty at oldest, yet he was a Soul Ancestor already! Not only that, he was able to defeat a mid-stage Soul Ancestor in one blow; this meant that he was most likely a... late-stage Soul Ancestor!

The very thought of Bai Yunfei being a late-stage Soul Ancestor was enough to shock Tang Zhi to his very core. The ‘ordinary’ boy his fourth sister had brought along, who was he?

“Uncle Zhong, who is this... Zi Jin? Why haven’t I heard about him before? Is he a nobody from the previous generation?” Tang Zhi asked the older man in confusion.

“Don’t be so rude!” Tang Yongzhong suddenly chastised him. “Senior Zi Jin was the... headmaster of the previous generation!”

“Wh—what!?” Eyes bulging out in surprise, Tang Zhi’s current expression had completely shattered the ‘knowledgeable’ persona he had tried so hard to maintain. “That Zi Jin is... the previous headmaster of the Crafting School!? Then wouldn’t that mean Bai Yunfei is...”

Nodding his head with a serious expression, Tang Yongzhong continued, “According to what I know, the last time senior Zi Jin took up a disciple was twenty years ago or so. A man named Jiang Fan, and if Bai Yunfei is a student of the school, he’d surely know better than to make lies like that, so...”

“Then the situation has gotten a little more complicated... second master, we should await the lord’s return and speak with him...”

“Yes,” Tang Zhi agreed after giving it much thought, “I’ll wait for tonight. When father returns home, I’ll make the report!”

.....

In one of the left-most rooms of a small courtyard to the west of the Tang residence—

Bai Yunfei sat in front of a circular table with his right arm resting on the table. He wore a different set of robes than before,

and even the Ardent Sun Glove was no longer on his right hand. All of the muscles in his right arm constantly twitched, and his skin had bruised a nasty mixture of red and purple. From the looks of things, his arm was in an awful state of pain, and it showed on Bai Yunfei's grimacing face.

The Eighty-one-fold Fist Force required him to use elemental fire to protect his body, but he hadn't been able to do so this time. Though it was true that he had the Soul Recovering Armor to help him, it wasn't enough to fully heal his wounds without the assistance of time.

He didn't regret it though. Mere flesh wounds like this were nothing since he had managed to accomplish his goal.

For him, that was worth it.

Not only were the Hua completely intimidated by Bai Yunfei's strength, the Tang were given a hint of what Bai Yunfei was capable of.

In ordinary times, Bai Yunfei preferred to keep a low profile. This didn't mean to say he wouldn't make use of his 'backing' if he needed to; in fact, he'd make use of it if it was necessary, but until the case proved otherwise, Bai Yunfei found it foolhardy to use that trump card often.

Before this, Bai Yunfei had only been a simple soul cultivator with plenty of soul armaments and a decent talent in cultivation. Those three factors wouldn't be enough to sway the Tang into thinking Bai Yunfei was a somebody.

However, if he were to add that he was 'the disciple of the previous headmaster,' the weight behind his name would grow exponentially.

Showing off his strength and the enormous backing he had at once would provide the biggest impact.

Of course, everything he did was done for the sake of Tang

Xinyun.

He wanted to let everyone know that he had Tang Xinyun's back, and the Crafting School had the back of both of them!

“This way... Xinyun's mother should have a much better time at home now, right?” Bai Yunfei thought as he fed soulforce into his arm. Turning to look at the darkening sky, he sighed. “It shouldn't be that simple. I'm sure the Tang will have someone fetch me very soon...”

“Knock knock knock...”

Just then, a knock could be heard coming from the other side of his door.

“Eh? They came that soon?”

# Chapter 306: Worth It!

---

“May I come in, Yunfei?”

The warm voice that came from the other side of the door was recognized by Bai Yunfei’s ears. The voice belonged to Tang Xinyun, not someone else from the Tang.

Taking his right arm off the table and fitting his sleeve over it, Bai Yunfei said, “Come in.”

The door to his room slowly creaked open as the white-robed Tang Xinyun made her way inside.

“Xinyun, how’s auntie?” Bai Yunfei asked in concern.

A few minutes after the group returned to the courtyard after the earlier day debacle, Chu Qingxue’s old illness made a comeback, causing Tang Xinyun to worry.

Thus, Bai Yunfei had returned to his room, so he could leave her in peace and heal his arm.

“Mother’s doing fine now. Even though mother has been sick for over ten years, her strength as an early-stage Soul Ancestor is more than enough for her to keep it in check. Since it’s still in her body, it causes her some trouble every now and then.” Tang Xinyun shook her head before taking a seat next to Bai Yunfei.

So, Chu Qingxue was a Soul Ancestor.

No wonder she looked so young. Maintaining the appearance of a twenty-something year old wasn’t hard for a soul cultivator compared to a commoner.

Relieved to hear such news, Bai Yunfei changed the topic, “That’s good... Xinyun, I’m still not aware of something. How did auntie get sick? Why isn’t she able to get rid of it even as a Soul Ancestor?”

Tang Xinyun sighed. “I’m not clear how she did either... I only



know that over ten years ago, mother came across an evildoer on one of her trips outside, but mother never revealed any details about it...”

“I see...” Bai Yunfei nodded, things like this were clearly meant to be secrets. If Tang Xinyun didn’t know, Bai Yunfei wouldn’t ask.

“Is there really no way to help her cure her illness?” Bai Yunfei murmured. Long-lasting injuries weren’t very common to soul cultivators normally, but exceptions always existed to this rule. The corrosive energy that was in Tang Xinyun’s body, for example.

“I’m not sure, my father tried everything he could at first, but nothing worked. After that... he just stopped caring...”

“Woops...” Bai Yunfei cursed. He realized that Tang Xinyun was talking about the moment when the third wife came into the picture, causing both Tang Xinyun and her mother to fall down the ranks of the Tang.

“Hey, Xinyun, will what I did today to the Hua... trouble you and auntie in any way?” Bai Yunfei changed the subject. Even though what he did was for the sake of Tang Xinyun, he wasn’t aware of the finer intricacies of her family, so the consequences of his actions were completely unknown to him.

“Aren’t there always troubles?” Tang Xinyun smiled. “But Yunfei, what you did today was really different than what you would normally do...”

“Eh, really? Haha, they were the ones that came knocking. It was a little sour to look at, so of course I had to teach them a lesson.”

While he spoke, Tang Xinyun’s head was already dipping down, “Yunfei,” She whispered, “Thank you...”

“Hm?” Surprised for only a brief moment, Bai Yunfei cracked a smile, “Xinyun, why are you always thanking me? You don’t need to thank me at all, I...”

He hadn’t even finished speaking when all of a sudden, Tang

Xinyun's hand flew forward to grab his right hand!

Completely caught off guard by Tang Xinyun's abrupt actions, Bai Yunfei didn't know what to think at first.

When he realized where she was holding, a silent curse ran through his mind. He tried to pull his arm back, but Tang Xinyun's grip was like iron around his hand. She swiftly rolled up his sleeve, revealing his grotesque right arm.

Tang Xinyun's body seemed to tremble slightly at the sight, but her left hand retained the grip she had on his palm. Her right hand slowly moved to touch his arm, as if wanting to soothe his bloody wounds and quivering muscles.

Her head tilted slightly up, looking at Bai Yunfei with her teary eyes. She looked troubled at the state of his arm.

"Yunfei... why must you always do this to yourself each time you help me? I already owe you so much. How will I ever repay you...?"

Embarrassed just slightly by what she was saying, Bai Yunfei replied, "Xinyun, what brings this up all of the sudden? You don't need to repay me at all. Everything I do for you is because..."

"Because it's... worth it?"

She finished his sentence for him with a soft whisper, eliciting a look of surprise from him.

At this moment, the tender beauty that was Tang Xinyun took Bai Yunfei's breath away. His heart stopped beating for half a second, but that half a second was all it took for courage to suddenly surge through him.

Clenching his right hand tight, Bai Yunfei's hand held Tang Xinyun's incredibly soft hand in his own.

"It's worth it to me!" He stated without breaking eye contact with Tang Xinyun.

His statement was only a sparse five words, but those five words

greatly affected the female. Those words combined with the warmth from Bai Yunfei's hand caused Tang Xinyun's eyes to glimmer with emotion. Her cheeks were gaining a red hue, adding another layer of beauty that made Bai Yunfei's heart race.

He exhaled slowly. "Xinyun, I..."

"Knock knock knock..."

Like a splash of cold water, the sudden arrival of a third party dispelled the special mood in the room, shaking the two from their trance. Jerking her hand back, Tang Xinyun's face was now extremely red. She wasn't even willing to meet Bai Yunfei's gaze now, but he found it equally embarrassing.

Bai Yunfei wanted nothing more but to beat the crap out of whomever interrupted them.

"Who is it?"

As dejected as he was, Bai Yunfei's voice couldn't help but convey a bit of his current emotions as he asked.

"Master Bai, our lord wishes to speak to you in the lounge."

The elderly voice from the other side of the door caused Tang Xinyun to jolt from her seat, "Ah! It's uncle Zhong..."

The flames of anger in Bai Yunfei's heart were doused straight away. Intuition told him that if push came to shove, the old man would be more than a match for him.

Rising from his seat, Bai Yunfei moved to open the door. Greeting Tang Yongzhong with a smile, he inquired, "Uncle Zhong, does lord Tang wish to meet me now?"

There was a small twinkle of light in Tang Yongzhong's eyes when he saw Tang Xinyun inside Bai Yunfei's room. Seemingly surprised by her, Tang Yongzhong nodded his head in response to Bai Yunfei. "Yes, master Bai. When the lord heard that the disciple of master Zi Jin came to visit, he made sure to have this old one

come to guide master Bai to the lounge for a small chat.”

A small smile crept onto Bai Yunfei’s face as he rejoiced over how useful his master’s name was.

It clearly worked quite well on the Tang.

“Xinyun,” Bai Yunfei turned back to the still seated female, “I’ll be meeting your father, so you should rest up first. The past few days of travel were very tiring after all...”

She nodded her head. “Be careful, Yunfei....”

Unable to stop a smile from growing on his face, Bai Yunfei laughed. “I’m only going to see your father. What’s there to be careful about? Am I going to be in danger?”

“No no,” Tang Xinyun blushed as she tried to explain, “I meant that my father is...”

“It’ll be fine. What’s there to worry about? I won’t fight him, so go on back and rest up. You still need to take me around the city tomorrow!”

Bai Yunfei waved his hand nonchalantly, attempting to alleviate her concerns. He then followed Tang Yongzhong out of the courtyard.

.....

With how dark the sky was getting, the road to the lounge was filled with lanterns to light up the way. Stones that gave off a soft illuminating light were in such abundance that shadows couldn’t gather.

When Bai Yunfei stepped into the lounge, he felt three pairs of eyes land on him.

Looking up, he could see the figures of three different people. The people he had met earlier today, Tang Jing and Tang Zhi, were both seated to the right while an unknown middle-aged man in purple robes sat in the chair above them. The man had white hair

and a wrinkled face from age, but his eyes were unnaturally sharp as if challenging anyone who dared to look at him.

Bai Yunfei could barely feel the same intimidating aura that his senior Kou Changkong would normally radiate...

This man was Tang Xinyun's father and head of the Tang Tang Qianlei.

The moment Tang Qianlei's eyes shifted over to inspect Bai Yunfei, a shadow of doubt spread across his face, but it soon disappeared from sight just as quickly.

By now, Bai Yunfei was at the center of the lounge. With a polite nod to Tang Jing and Tang Zhi, Bai Yunfei then bowed to Tang Qianlei, "Junior Bai Yunfei pays his respects to lord Tang."

"Haha, there's no need for such etiquette, nephew Bai. Please, sit." Tang Qianlei's face broke into a smile as he pointed at an empty chair to his right. "I was absent during the day and was unaware that we'd have such a guest today. Please forgive the late reception, nephew Bai."

The man known and respected by everyone as the lord of house Tang was actually treating Bai Yunfei as warmly as he would treat family. If any outsider were to see this, they wouldn't be able to believe their ears.

Even Tang Jing and Tang Zhi found themselves with their jaws slightly ajar.

Sitting on the chair pointed out to him, Bai Yunfei smiled. "Thank you, Lord Tang. There's no helping it if someone of your stature has work to do. First master Tang Jing and second master Tang Zhi were kind enough to receive me already."

If Tang Qianlei was greeting him as an honored 'nephew,' then Bai Yunfei would greet him by his proper title. He had even decided to call Tang Jing and Tang Zhi by their proper titles.

Though his words were polite to the ears, there was an air of

peculiarity to them.

Even worse was Bai Yunfei emphasis on Tang Zhi's way of receiving him into their residence. An extremely sarcastic way of mocking what had happened with the Hua earlier that day.

What Bai Yunfei said stunned the three men. None of the three had expected Bai Yunfei's to be so 'unfriendly' straight from the get-go.

# Chapter 307: A Conversation and A Test

---

“Youngster, what are you getting at?!”

Clearly sensing the ‘pointed attack,’ Tang Zhi’s hand slapped away the cup of tea next to him as he cried out in displeasure.

“Brother!” Tang Jing cautioned softly.

Upon sensing the cross look his father was giving him, Tang Zhi’s body stiffened just slightly. Daring not to meet his gaze, Tang Zhi bowed his head and said no more.

“The two Hua brothers had their problems with brother Bai. Now their family will have to reflect on their mistakes. With the wounds suffered at your hands, brother Bai, wouldn’t you say that’s enough punishment? We hope that you will consider the face of the Tang and let bygones be bygones. Would that be agreeable with you, brother Bai?” Tang Jing smiled.

The fact that the eldest son of the Tang was trying to compromise with someone was an extremely rare sight. Anyone else would’ve been extremely humbled by this rare offering, but Bai Yunfei was not aware of how the Tang worked nor was he aware of how terrifying his trump card, the Crafting School, was. Bai Yunfei was completely impassive in the face because of his blissful ignorance.

Though he was slightly surprised by how Tang Jing was talking about the Hua, Bai Yunfei managed to maintain an indifferent tone in his voice, “Ah yes, those clowns. I had almost forgotten about them.”

There was the slightest twitch on Tang Jing’s lips. The house of Hua was one of the three biggest powers in Huwait City, making the two Hua brothers very powerful people.

Yet, Bai Yunfei’s assessment of the two was so befuddling that Tang Zhi didn’t know if he was crazy or if he was powerful enough

to really back up what he said without fear.

“Nephew Bai, Tang Zhi’s actions earlier this afternoon were rather improper. Why don’t we leave matters as they lie right now?” Tang Qianlei proposed. “They’ve offended you, and you’ve merited punishment. Nephew Bai, if we are to go by the customs based on statuses, they’ve learned their lesson already. There shouldn’t be a need to pursue the matter any more, is there?”

Bai Yunfei just had to suppress a small laugh inside his head, “When did I ever say that I’d pursue the matter? Are you afraid that I’ll do something more to them?”

“Lord Tang, there is something incorrect in what you say. They didn’t offend me.” Bai Yunfei shook his head, “Hua Binbai was disrespectful to Xinyun. That’s why I taught him a lesson. As long as Xinyun forgives him, I won’t pursue the matter anymore.”

“Hmph, so now you’re more polite. You’re almost like a pendulum of manners.” Tang Zhi snorted. “Fourth sister won’t mind matters like this. Brother Bai, there’s no need to make life any more difficult for the Hua.”

“I never said that I’d do anything to the Hua. That’s what your family says, not me, and by what right do you have to determine whether Xinyun will mind or not mind? What gives you the right to make her decisions for her!?” Bai Yunfei’s eyes narrowed together. From the very start, Bai Yunfei had a very low opinion of Tang Zhi, so this newest line was displeasing to hear.

Tang Qianlei’s eyes narrowed together as well, but the reason his eyes narrowed was different. “Well then, nephew Bai, why don’t we move away from this unhappy topic? I would like to thank you for escorting my daughter home. How long might you be staying in Mo City, nephew Bai?”

Bai Yunfei shook his hands. “Lord Tang, you are far too polite. I was more than willing to escort Xinyun home, so there’s no need for thanks. However long I stay will be up to Xinyun. Before we left



the Crafting School, the third elder said that Xinyun is to stay as long as she'd like to reacquaint herself with her mother."

"Third elder?" Tang Qianlei asked, "Would that be elder Cang Yu?"

"That is correct. Xinyun's master is the third elder."

Bai Yunfei's confirmation was like a clap of thunder to the three men's ears. His words carried a far heavier weight of truth to them compared Zhao Mancha's.

This meant that Tang Xinyun was really the disciple of the third elder, and by extension, this meant the Tang would be better off with that connection...

Tang Qianlei smiled, "Nephew Bai, how is senior Zi Jin doing nowadays? I was once fortunate enough to meet senior Zi Jin before. As a matter of fact, the soul armament I use was crafted by senior Zi Jin thanks to my father...

"Even moreso, I was fortunate enough to try my hand against the honorable Kou Changkong. I was of a stronger level than he, but he managed to defeat me. How I brooded that day! It's been decades since then. Time truly does fly..."

A nostalgic expression appeared on Tang Qianlei's face as he started to reminisce about the past.

The fact that there was some sort of history between Tang Qianlei and the Crafting School surprised Bai Yunfei since Zi Jin had never mentioned it before.

Whether it was left out intentionally or forgotten, he wouldn't know.

"Master has spent his days training. He's doing well since he came out of seclusion. Thank you for your concern, lord Tang."

"Haha, might I ask when you became the disciple of senior Zi Jin, nephew Bai?"

“Half a year ago, at the same time Xinyun and I joined the Crafting School.”

“Oh, is that right? Haha, you are incredibly strong, nephew Bai. Being accepted as senior Zi Jin’s disciple is only proof that your future will be limitless...”

“Lord Tang, your praise is far too high for someone like me. I was merely lucky enough to gain master’s recognition.”

“Ah, nephew Bai, I heard that the heir to the house of Mo entered the Crafting School, have you met him before?”

“Oh, are you referring to Mo Xiaoxuan, lord Tang? He’s in the internal school right now, training to become a Soul Sprite.”

“.....”

.....

It wasn’t a very friendly conversation, but it wasn’t rude either. Bai Yunfei knew the Tang were dissatisfied with Tang Xinyun, but he still made sure he maintained the most basic etiquette. Tang Qianlei might’ve looked as though he was happy with the idle chat, but Bai Yunfei knew better. It was a test to see how he’d respond. A test that would let the Tang know if Bai Yunfei was who he said he was.

Bai Yunfei, of course, had nothing to hide. Nothing he said was false, so he was fearless as he answered Tang Qianlei.

The ‘conversation’ continued for roughly an hour before the Tang had nothing left they wanted to verify. Disinclined to talk anymore, Bai Yunfei bid farewell and returned to his room to rest.

Bai Yunfei’s aura was far enough away from the lounge for Tang Jing and Tang Zhi to recompose themselves. Looking at their pensive-looking father, Tang Zhi asked, “Father, how is it? Was there anything wrong with what Bai Yunfei said? Is he really the disciple of the old headmaster?”

Tang Qianlei nodded after much thought, “From what I can tell, everything he said is true. Combined with what you’ve said about his strange soul armaments, I can assume that he is indeed a disciple of senior Zi Jin... but I can’t say that with certainty...

“If any of the other major schools were to have their headmaster take in a disciple, it would only take several months for the entire continent to find out, but that’s how the Crafting School is. Bai Yunfei joined the school half a year ago, yet news of his rank hasn’t made the rounds. The school keeps a very low profile.”

“We’ve already sent a messenger bird to the Great Plains Province to verify the information, father. We’ll be able to find out if he’s lying or not.” Tang Jing responded.

“How should we treat Bai Yunfei in the meantime?” Tang Zhi asked.

“Whatever the case, he is still a guest, so treat him politely.” Tang Qianlei gave a look at his two sons. “I know that you’re good friends with Hua Chenshi, but it’s best to avoid conflict with Bai Yunfei for now. You’ve seen his strength today, so don’t bring trouble to the house even if you get angry, understand!?”

Snapping to attention, Tang Zhi replied, “Yes, your child understands...”

.....

When Bai Yunfei returned to the courtyard, he noticed a beautiful woman in white staring up at the dark sky.

If not Tang Xinyun, who else could it be?

Slightly confused why Tang Xinyun was waiting for him, Bai Yunfei asked with a happy smile, “Xinyun, what are you doing here? Shouldn’t you have gone to bed?”

She shook her head, “Don’t worry, I’m not tired... how’re you, Yunfei? Did my father... trouble you?”

“Remember what I said, I didn’t go there to fight him, so what trouble could there be? It’s getting late, so hurry up and get some rest. You’ll need it when you take me sightseeing tomorrow!” Bai Yunfei laughed.

Now that Bai Yunfei had returned safe and sound, Tang Xinyun could rest easy. Laughing slightly, she smiled at him, “Haha, okay. Then I’ll come by early in the morning!”

“Alright, hurry to bed then. Good night, Xinyun.”

“Yes, good night...”

# Chapter 308: There'll Always Be An Unexpected Windfall Amidst the Buyout

---

Compared to Redfire City, Mo City was many times bigger in size, economy, and city life.

Out on the streets, Bai Yunfei and Tang Xinyun walked shoulder to shoulder as they laughed and chatted with one another. Every so often, Bai Yunfei would remark on a particularly popular sight or would comment on some scenery. When he did mention something, Tang Xinyun would quip a quiet line or two about each place like a tour guide giving a tour. In a way, her being more willing to talk was a sign that she was feeling better after returning home, else she wouldn't have been so 'interested.'

Not even a meter behind the two stood a 'burlish' figure in simple clothing. At first glance, this person looked like a farmer aunty coming to the market to sell her wares for the day, but she stuck to Tang Xinyun like a shadow.

It was Zhao Mancha.

Nowadays, Zhao Mancha didn't treat Bai Yunfei with the same 'guarded' feeling as she had before. The things Tang Xinyun had said to her about Bai Yunfei had surprised even her, and even though she was quick to anger and quicker to speak because of her personality, she wasn't someone that wasn't completely unreasonable.

After careful consideration, she had to admit that Bai Yunfei wasn't too bad of a person. After the debacle yesterday with the Hua, Zhao Mancha had gained a new level of respect for Bai Yunfei since he went and did all those things for the sake of Tang Xinyun.

Since Bai Yunfei didn't have any accessories left to 'upgrade,' he had Tang Xinyun take him to a place where he could buy more. The place she had in mind was known in Mo City as 'Jewelry

Street.’ The street was a kilometer long and contained eighty percent of Mo City’s jewelry traders.

Both sides of the streets were filled to the brim with all sorts of jewelry stores as far as the eye could see. Not only were there jewelry stores, there were also small vendors on the streets with sparkling ware lined up on a counter.

Under the illumination of the morning sun, each piece of jewelry reflected an extremely illustrious light.

Bai Yunfei browsed the two sides of the streets as he wished. He soon came to the realization that the highest grade accessory was only of ‘superior’ quality. Not a single ‘rare’ grade item could be seen.

Bai Yunfei noticed that some of the smaller vendors on the streets had some superior grade items after buying a few from the store, but the vendors’ products weren’t as gorgeous or as precious as the ones sold in the stores.

Distinctions like those weren’t a problem since Bai Yunfei only wanted accessories based on their grades. With that in mind, Bai Yunfei bought them as he wished.

Despite money not being a limiting factor anymore, Bai Yunfei still found it hard to spend lavishly. He tried to save money if possible. It was inherent to his nature. Something that persisted with him despite the wealth he accumulated.

Tang Xinyun would follow Bai Yunfei to each store as well. She never bought a single item, but she still window shopped while he was busy doing the actual buying.

It confused Zhao Mancha since she didn’t understand why Bai Yunfei was buying all of these accessories.

Could he be buying them for Tang Xinyun?

It didn’t seem like it...

Searching each piece of accessory for their stats was second habit to Bai Yunfei now. Time was not an issue, so he could take his time and move as slowly as he liked. With each piece of accessory going through his hands, Bai Yunfei could test to see if it was a superior item or not. At first, there hadn't been a problem with what he was doing, but after going through several vendors, the owners were starting to gossip to one another.

Bai Yunfei had already bought almost half their wares!

By the time Bai Yunfei reached halfway down the street, he and the ones around him were the topic of discussion on the streets. Each vendor would stare curiously at Bai Yunfei. Even passersby would stare strangely at him.

The males all revealed looks of scorn on their faces; Bai Yunfei was practically flaunting his wealth by buying out the majority of the vendor's stock, and the females were all looking jealously at Tang Xinyun next to him with sighs.

If only they had a wealthy boyfriend that would treat them as well as he did.

Bai Yunfei's selection speed wasn't too slow, but the street was extremely long. This gave the many store keepers Bai Yunfei hadn't reached enough time to pull out their wares.

When Bai Yunfei did reach them, the amount of wares he looked over was such a large number that Tang Xinyun found it extremely ridiculous.

However, Bai Yunfei continued to pick out accessories without a care in the world.

An unknown amount of time went by before Bai Yunfei finally reached the end of the street. By now, everyone was staring at him as if he was a monster or something similar.

"Yunfei, can... can we leave now?" Unable to withstand all of the strange looks she was being given, Tang Xinyun tugged at his

robes, pleading with him.

“Hm?” Snapping out of his thoughts, Bai Yunfei suddenly realized all of the strange glances being thrown in his direction. Scratching his head in embarrassment, Bai Yunfei smiled, “Haha, alright. Let me buy from one more store and then we can leave.”

The owner of said store let out a sigh of relief. If rich Mr. Money Bags didn't buy anything from his store, the owner would've puked blood straight from his mouth.

Refusing the owner's kind introduction, Bai Yunfei began to look through each of the accessories.

Not long after, Bai Yunfei walked up to the counter with nearly a hundred new accessories to buy. Happily calculating the final bill, the store owner was in such glee that he relented and discounted the price to eighty percent.

With all of the accessories stored in his space ring, Bai Yunfei was about to walk out of the store when the shop owner suddenly stopped him.

Sneaking a glance around first, the man then whispered to him, “My lord, this store of mine has several more rare goods. Would you be interested in perusing them?”

“What?” Bai Yunfei asked, “What rare goods? Let me see them.”

Chuckling, the man replied, “They're some recently unearthed oddities. I was planning on taking them to the more knowledgeable stores to appraise them, but if my lord has some interest, I'll let you look at them first. If any catch your eye, we can agree on a suitable price.”

The man took out a tightly wrapped bag from underneath the counter. He unfurled it to reveal several more accessories. Many of the items were caked with dirt or were faded from age, but nonetheless, each of them possessed the aura of ‘antiquity.’

Just from aura alone, they looked as if it had been years since



they had last touched air.

The first two items Bai Yunfei picked up were disappointing to say the least. Whether they were artifacts from another time or not wasn't relevant to him. Many of the items he picked up weren't even 'high' grade, and only a small few were of the 'superior' quality.

With a frown on his face, Bai Yunfei picked up a dirt-encrusted earring before he decided he would leave.

Equipment Grade: Mid Human  
Elemental Affinity: Wood  
Attribute: +160 Strength  
Upgrade Requirement: 75 Soulpoints

“Eh?” Bai Yunfei froze up. Renewed interest flickered across his eyes as he inspected the earring in his hand.

.....

When buying things in large amounts, there'll always be a rare quality good.

That was a fact!

A great big smile had been carved into Bai Yunfei's face when he walked out of the store. Happy beyond happy, Bai Yunfei never would've thought that he'd come across an accessory-type soul armament while he was buying accessories to upgrade; what luck!

“Bai Yunfei?”

A skeptical voice suddenly called out to him.

Each of the three curiously turned their heads toward the source of the voice. They saw a young man in blue robes not too far away from them. He was staring at Bai Yunfei in confusion as if unsure of what he was seeing. Right next to him was a younger woman dressed in pink robes.

“You’re... Zhao Xiluo!!”

The name came to Bai Yunfei after a moment of consideration. This was the very same Zhao Xiluo Bai Yunfei had come across way back in Gaoyi City!

“Haha, it really is you!” Zhao Xiluo roared with laughter before racing up to them. Bowing in greeting, Zhao Xiluo smiled, “Brother Bai, I never imagined that I’d meet you here, talk about coincidence!”

Bai Yunfei smiled in return, “Haha, it really is. I didn’t think you’d still remember me, brother Zhao.”

“You’re a young hero, brother Bai. How could I possibly forget?” Zhao Xiluo asked, “It’s been, what, a year since we met in Gaoyi City? How fast time goes...”

“Actually, did you ever join the Crafting School, brother Bai?”

This question caught the attention of the female next to him, earning Bai Yunfei a strange look.

“Haha, I managed to gain a spot in the Crafting School last year on the eleventh month.”

“Oh? As expected of you, brother Bai! Everyone on the continent knows that the Crafting School is the hardest school to get into! Of course, that’s probably because of how specific their test for testing ‘crafting’ talent is.” Zhao Xiluo chuckled in admiration.

“Ah, speaking of the Crafting School, you should definitely meet this person!” Zhao Xiluo added after that.

As he spoke, he beckoned to the girl next to him, “This is the disciple of our Water School’s second elder, Kou Tingting. She’s...”

# Chapter 309: Kou Tingting

---

“Kou Tingting!?”

Before Zhao Xiluo could even finish his introduction, Tang Xinyun suddenly blurted out in shock. “The Water School... could you be the headmaster’s daughter!?”

Taken aback by the sudden outburst, the pink-robed woman took a moment to respond. “My father is indeed the headmaster of the Crafting School. Are you a student there too, miss?” She smiled.

Bai Yunfei was in shock. Not only had he come across Zhao Xiluo again, but Kou Tingting had made an appearance as well. Bai Yunfei had once heard her name when Kou Changkong mentioned that his daughter joining the Water School. She was the disciple of one of their elders.

Kou Tingting wore a pink robe and had long hair that draped over her shoulders. She had bangs that covered her oval-shaped face and eyebrows by a small amount. Her fair-white skin looked so supple and moisturized that it felt as if there might actually be water that’d come out if her body was wrung.

At a glance, she definitely looked like a very gentle and refined young woman.

Since Kou Tingting was utterly incapable of learning how to use elemental fire, she was incapable of learning the art of crafting. Though that never bothered Kou Changkong. As soon as her tests revealed that she had elemental water training talent, she was sent to the Water School when she was twenty. Under their tutelage, she was able to become an early-stage Soul Ancestor.

Her appearance was by no means absolutely stunning, but she could still at the very least fall under the category of being ‘fair and elegant,’ and she could certainly blossom into something more.

Was this perhaps the effects from training in the water element?

“This is Tang Xinyun, the disciple of elder Cang Yu.” Bai Yunfei introduced her, “She joined the Crafting School the same month I did.”

“Aunt Yu’s disciple!?” Kou Tingting’s eyes lit up with surprise as she looked to Tang Xinyun. The fact that Cang Yu would have another disciple surprised her.

“Tang Xinyun?” The eyebrows on Zhao Xiluo’s face flew up, “So you really were the fourth daughter of the Tang, my apologies for my lack of manners...”

Bai Yunfei turned to Zhao Xiluo next, “Xinyun, this is Zhao Xiluo, the eldest son of the Zhao in Gaoyi City. I meet him after living with Tianming’s family for a while.”

“Tianming’s family?” Tang Xinyun asked. Like Bai Yunfei, she went to Gaoyi City too, but after being chased by the Beast Taming School, she had to make an escape. Even after Bai Yunfei saved her, she was too far away from the city to know anything that happened there.

“Haha, I first heard about brother Bai from senior You Qingfeng before I actually met him in Gaoyi City. We didn’t talk long, but I was awed by Bai Yunfei’s strength.” Zhao Xiluo laughed. “He was a late-stage Soul Sprite back then, so after joining the Crafting School, he has to be a lot str—”

He tapered off when he noticed something was amiss with Bai Yunfei. “Hey now... brother Bai, your strength...”

“Brother Zhao, there’s no need to be puzzled. My current situation is a little unique after something I experienced a while back. For the time being, I can’t use any elemental fire.” Bai Yunfei smiled.

“Oh? Such a thing like that can happen? Then in the future...”

“Haha, thanks for your concern, brother Zhao. It’s only temporary, I’ll be back to full strength soon enough.” Unwilling to

talk about his current strength, Bai Yunfei turned his attention to Kou Tingting, “Well now... uhm...”

He didn’t know how to address Kou Tingting. He was younger than her by a good amount, but calling her older sister didn’t seem quite appropriate. Calling her by name was even more strange and rash since it’d denote an even closer relationship than expected.

Kou Tingting smiled. “Haha, I’m a person of the Crafting School, so if junior Bai doesn’t mind, feel free to call me senior Kou.”

“I...” He grew even more embarrassed.

“Haha, senior Kou, if we go by titles, then Yunfei doesn’t have to call you senior.” Tang Xinyun giggled. “You’d have to call him ‘senior uncle’ instead!”

“Eh? What do you mean?” Kou Tingting asked with Zhao Xiluo confused as well.

“Yunfei’s master is master Zi Jin, the previous headmaster.”

“What!?”

The red lips on Kou Tingting’s face quivered slightly in disbelief.

“You... you mean to say that he’s... he’s the disciple of grandfather Zi!? How... how is that possible?”

“Br—brother Bai, are you serious? You’re the disciple of headmaster Zi Jin!?” Even Zhao Xiluo’s voice seemed slightly strangled asking this question.

Bai Yunfei nodded his head in embarrassment.

“Doesn’t... doesn’t that make you a junior to headmaster Kou then...?” Another strangled question.

Unwilling to get more embarrassed about how he should be called, Bai Yunfei smiled, “Haha, what’s the point of titles? If you don’t mind, feel free to just call me Yunfei. Anything else would be weird to me.”

Kou Tingting fell silent for a long while after that.

“In that case, you can call me Tingting, Yunfei. Since we’re both related to the Crafting School, there’s no need to treat each other as outsiders. Sister Xinyun, may I call you Xinyun as well?”

Tang Xinyun smiled. “Of course. Tingting is right, there’s no need to treat each other like outsiders.”

“Well, alright then. Yunfei, you can call me Xiluo as well.” Zhao Xiluo piped up.

Now that this question was resolved, Bai Yunfei could sigh in relief. There wasn’t a way to fix the fact that he was by all rights a senior in the Crafting School, so it was rather awkward to come across this scenario outside of the school. “Xiluo, if you’re accompanying Tingting, does that mean you’re taking her back to the Crafting School?”

“That’s right,” Zhao Xiluo confirmed. “We were planning on heading straight to the Crafting School as soon as the auction here in Mo City is over.”

“Auction?” Bai Yunfei asked. “What auction?”

Surprised, Zhao Xiluo gave a confused look at Tang Xinyun. “There’s an auction every year in Mo City. It’s the Tang’s turn to oversee the auction this time. Didn’t you know, Yunfei?”

It was Bai Yunfei’s turned to Tang Xinyun.

“Yes,” Tang Xinyun nodded her head. “This year, my family is doing all of the preparations. The auction will have several things that a soul cultivator can use. You only just came here and I never really cared about the auction, so I never thought to tell you about it...”

“Oh, I see now.” Bai Yunfei nodded his head in understanding. He could just faintly remember hearing Tang Yongzhong talking about an auction before, and with everyone from the Tang busy, that surely meant it was the auction house that they were busy

with.

After thinking about it, he asked, “What items will be sold at the auction?”

“Hard to say.” Zhao Xiluo answered, “It definitely won’t be your everyday items though. If one of the Five Clans are managing it, the items will definitely be rare. Primal stones will be the means of currency for plenty of the items. Rare treasures, soul skills, soul armaments, and even young soulbeasts will be sold. Anything you could possibly want will be sold, and as long as you have the funds, you’ll be able to bid for them. Even to soul cultivators, auctions like these are stuff that anyone will try to attend.”

The expression on his face turned sour after the last sentence, “Now that junior Tingting and I are here, we were planning on staying for a while. On our way, we heard that there would be a heaven tier soul skill, so the roads are packed with people trying to get here.”

“A heaven tier soul skill!?” Bai Yunfei exclaimed. “Are there people that are willing to sell items like that!? How many primal stones will that take to buy!?”

“If you can’t use it, what use is there in keeping it?” Zhao Xiluo laughed. “I heard that the one who owns it is a traveling soul cultivator that came across it by accident. Since he can’t learn it, he thought it’d be better to sell it. Even though he’ll be getting primal stones for it, he can use those primal stones to buy something else at the auction. The last time a heaven tier soul skill appeared, another house used a low-heaven tier soul skill to bid for it.”

“Oh, that makes sense.” Bai Yunfei nodded. Still curious, he turned to Tang Xinyun, “Xinyun, can we take a look at the auction?”

“Of course.” She smiled.

“Great. Then when it’s time let’s go together.” Bai Yunfei spoke to Zhao Xiluo and Kou Tingting.

“No problem, if everyone wants to go, it makes sense to go together.”

“Then... since you two are in Mo City, why not stay at my residence for now? You’d do me the honors of playing host.” Tang Xinyun suggested after careful consideration.

Since Tang Xinyun was of the Crafting School, Kou Tingting was all too happy to accept her offer. “We are thankful for your suggestion, Xinyun. Senior Zhao, let’s go back to Xinyun’s place.”

“Alright then, if you don’t mind having us.”

.....

By the time it was noon, Bai Yunfei was all but done buying all the accessories he wanted. With nowhere left to go, Bai Yunfei and the rest returned to the Tang residence.

As usual, Tang Zhi was playing the part of ‘overseer’ of the Tang residence while his father was away. As per custom, Zhao Xiluo and Kou Tingting went to him first to pay their respects. Tang Zhi was shock when he learned their identities.

Tang Zhi hadn’t realized that Bai Yunfei would be well connected with people from even the Water School. When the two talked about their desire to attend the auction, Tang Zhi gave his personal guarantee that he’d prepare a good seat for them. After a moment’s conversation, a suitable courtyard near Tang Xinyun’s courtyard was given to the two for the time being.

The auction would take place a week after the Reunion Festival, which would take place tomorrow.

Truthfully speaking, the Reunion Festival wasn’t normally observed by soul cultivators. They weren’t like commoners in the fact that many of them were often travelers a long ways away from home. That made seeing their family especially hard. The only



reason Tang Xinyun had the desire to return home was because of her desire to see her mother. Kou Tingting on the other hand was in no hurry to return to the Crafting School in time for the Reunion Festival.

Bai Yunfei had no remaining family to speak of, so there was no need for him to observe the holiday.

This didn't stop the Tang from celebrating it. Tang Xinyun said that a grand festival would take place tomorrow night with plenty of guests coming, meaning Bai Yunfei, Zhao Xiluo, and Kou Tingting were more than welcome to take part.

That night, Bai Yunfei sat on top of his bed with a pair of amber-colored crystal earrings in his hand. The principal part of this earring was a small rhombus-shaped crystal.

When the caked dirt was wiped away and the stone was polished, a slightly bewitching luster could be seen.

Since Bai Yunfei had come across this soul armament by accident, he did not hesitate to upgrade it to +10 as quickly as possible.

Seeing +10 effects was something he'd always take joy in seeing, and this time would be no different.

After upgrading it to +10...

Equipment Grade: Mid Human

Elemental Affinity: Wood

Upgrade Level: +10

Attribute: +160 Strength

Additional Attribute: +85 Strength

Soul Compatibility: 10%

+10 Additional Effect: ....

# Chapter 310: Detoxifying Earring and Hydrotherapy

Equipment Grade: Mid Human

Elemental Affinity: Wood

Upgrade Level: +10

Attribute: +160 Strength

Additional Attribute: +85 Strength

Soul Compatibility: 10%

+10 Additional Effect: Increase poison resistance by 15%.

Upgrade Requirement: 75 Soulpoints

After this earring was upgraded, a never-before-seen effect appeared!

“Poison resistance?” Bai Yunfei’s eyes lit up, “That’s not hard to understand. I don’t know what use it’d normally have, but it could be very useful the right situations...

“It’s a shame that it’s an earring. I don’t need those...” Bai Yunfei sighed. As long as an item had a decent effect, Bai Yunfei don't care if it was a stud, but Bai Yunfei would never wear earrings clearly meant for women.

He looked at the earring a little longer, thinking of what to do with it.

It was only after he came to a conclusion that he put the earring away.

.....

The next morning, Bai Yunfei woke up as the morning sun was rising into the air. Last night’s upgrading session was the first in a very long time. He had used up all of his soulforce while he was upgrading, so he fell asleep as soon as he ran out.

There was nothing Bai Yunfei needed to do possibly because he

was a guest right now. Taking advantage of this newfound freedom, Bai Yunfei upgraded several more accessories. There weren't any soul armaments he could upgrade, but there was still a good amount of high quality items he could make use of.

If an item didn't have a good +10 additional effect, he could still try going for the +12 effect.

Furthermore, his chances of success when upgrading normal items was back to the same level as when he was a Soul Sprite. This meant that Bai Yunfei would have a much harder time upgrading the same items when his essence fireseed was fully healed.

Bai Yunfei had the luxury of not being picky, unlike when he had to find items that could increase spirit for the sake of Tang Xinyun. All sorts of accessories with all sorts of attributes could be upgraded to their limits.

As he got up from his bed, Bai Yunfei thought back to his thoughts on upgrading last night. "Without including the bonus points I get from my equipment, I should probably have around 7500 points of soulforce. I don't know how much that relates to on a scale, but it's 2000 more soulforce than when I became a Soul Ancestor. I wonder if future levels will increase in difficulty or if there'll be some sort of 'obstacle' to break before becoming a mid-stage Soul Ancestor?"

Back when he was desperate to help Tang Xinyun, Bai Yunfei knew that his soulforce was increasing with each upgrade, and since he continued to upgrade without fail during those times, he came to learn that his chances of success were back to the same rates as before. Even with his elemental fire gone, his soulforce continued to grow. He had gained some benefits from the disaster.

Bai Yunfei made sure to not overdo it with upgrading. While Xiao Binzi was able to 'protect' Bai Yunfei back in Curopia City, the same guarantee didn't apply here.

Although he didn't have elemental fire, his soulforce was still

increasing. That meant he could still train.

.....

The sound of gentle laughter outside of his room broke Bai Yunfei's train of thought. Stepping out, he saw a group of people near him. Tang Xinyun, Zhao Xiluo, Kou Tingting, and even Chu Qingxue and Zhao Mancha were there. They were all seated around a stone table as they talked about something. Two different colored stone pieces could be seen on a board placed on the table.

Go.

Thanks to the memories of the transmigrator, Bai Yunfei was able to recreate several recreational games. With time, the games became commonplace in the Crafting School with even Zi Jin, Xiao Binzi, and the other elders enjoying a game or two.

The board that Tang Xinyun and Kou Tingting were playing on seemed slightly different.

The reason why was because the game they were playing was five-in-a-row.

A far simpler but more interesting game.

Back then, Bai Yunfei used these games to keep Huangfu Rui interested. Tang Xinyun had unexpectedly taken a fancy to one of the games, so Bai Yunfei made a set for her.

Of course, Tang Xinyun knew more than just five-in-a-row by now. She was quite good at Go. She could sometimes beat Bai Yunfei, the 'creator' of the game.

When Bai Yunfei reached their table, he could hear Tang Xinyun explaining the main aspects of the game to Kou Tingting. It looked as though the two had already played a game or two with Chu Qingxue and the others listening in on the conversation with great interest.

Bai Yunfei's approach was noticed by everyone, and they turned

to greet him. In turn, Bai Yunfei greeted everyone else before sitting on the remaining stone stool.

“Yunfei, I heard from Xinyun that your arm was injured?”

Kou Tingting’s question came out of nowhere, causing Bai Yunfei to take a second to respond, “Haha,” he laughed, “I hurt myself yesterday, but it’s nothing major. It’ll heal in no time at all.”

“Yunfei, you should let Tingting take a look.” Tang Xinyun advised, “Tingting said that she could help treat your arm or at least make your recovery even faster.”

“Eh? Treat?”

“Haha, that’s right. Yunfei, let junior Kou take a look at you.” Zhao Xiluo laughed. “Junior Kou’s hydrotherapy is absolutely perfect. Even I’m nowhere near her level. As long as it’s not an unusual wound, she’ll be able to shorten the time needed to heal it with her treatment.”

“Hydrotherapy?” Bai Yunfei curiously asked. He knew that elemental water was filled with healing aspects since many water type soul skills were usually meant for healing, but Bai Yunfei had never come across any of those himself.

When Bai Yunfei rolled his sleeves up, the state of his right arm startled everyone there.

“That doesn’t look like an externally-caused wound, was it from rebound?” Zhao Xiluo inquired.

“Good eyes, Xiluo. It’s the remnants of when I used a certain soul skill. It’s not as serious as it looks, so it should heal in just a few days.”

Seeing Bai Yunfei’s right arm in such a state a second time caused Tang Xinyun to frown. “Tingting,” She said, “Please help Yunfei heal his arm...”

Inspecting the arm, Kou Tingting gave one final smile to Tang

Xinyun, “Haha, don’t worry Xinyun. Like Yunfei said, it’s not a major wound. Left by itself, his arm would heal in a few days, but let me treat it for you...”

With Bai Yunfei’s consent, Kou Tingting raised her right arm. A faint blue light emanated from the tips of her jadelike fingers before spreading through her hand to her palm. Turning it over, she pressed her hand against Bai Yunfei’s right arm. She directed the flow of elemental water around his arm. Pulsating with cadence, the elemental water slowly started to enter his skin.

The next second, Bai Yunfei could feel a pleasantly cool sensation run through his arm. It was unspeakably comfortable. Every last inch of his arm seemed to be rejoicing in joy as the elemental water energy started to assimilate into his body. The throbbing pain that had been present before started to ebb away, and even the bruised parts of his arm started to return to a normal color.

Several minutes went by without Bai Yunfei knowing before Kou Tingting finally withdrew her arm. The blue glow of light disappeared from Bai Yunfei’s skin, revealing a completely normal arm.

Slightly doubting what he was seeing, Bai Yunfei clenched his hand several times to test it out. As Bai Yunfei felt power course through his arm without any pain, he was convinced that his arm was fully back to normal.

The wound that previously required several days to heal had been fully healed within minutes all thanks to Kou Tingting!

“This... this is ‘hydrotherapy’? How... how amazing!”

# Chapter 311: Reunion Festival

---

Bai Yunfei was shocked that the wound on his arm had only taken minutes rather than days to heal. He shook his right hand again to reconfirm it had healed. “This... this is ‘hydrotherapy’? How amazing...”

“Haha, it’s only a very rudimentary treatment. Since your body was already healthy and strong, my treatment was far more effective without any problems.”

From the side, Chu Qingxue smiled at the two, “Tingting, you are far too modest. The healing techniques of the Water School are known to everyone on the continent. Aside from hydrotherapy, there aren’t many other techniques that could measure up to it. Furthermore, your own skill was very clear to see, Tingting. Like Xiluo said, your skill with it is perfect, how admirable for your age.”

“Tingting,” Tang Xinyun spoke with a grateful voice, “Thank you...”

Smiling in return, Kou Tingting said, “Xinyun, why must you be this polite? Even Yunfei hasn’t said thanked me yet. Are you thanking me for him?”

What Kou Tingting said made Tang Xinyun’s face redden while Bai Yunfei gave a small cough of embarrassment. Opting to change the topic, he said, “Ah, Xiluo and Tingting, why don’t we look around Mo City again? I’m sure there are plenty of places we haven’t been to yet!”

“Haha, yes.” Chu Qingxue nodded in agreement, “Let Xinyun take you on a tour, just be sure to be back before evening.”

Since there was nothing to do in the Tang residence, the two readily agreed to Bai Yunfei’s suggestion. Together, the four of them bade farewell to Chu Qingxue and Zhao Mancha before

leaving for the city. The plan was to visit all the sights in the city and return to the Tang before night time.

.....

Every year on the ninth day of the ninth month, the Tianhun Empire would celebrate the Reunion Festival. It was regarded as one of the empire's more ceremonious holidays, but many people would rather call it 'heartwarming.' As the name implied, the Reunion Festival was a day for workers, merchants, and other people to return to their homes and celebrate with their families.

Families that were mainly soul cultivators didn't normally regard such a 'mundane' holiday as something worth celebrating like the rest of the commoners, but the Tang chose to uphold tradition by hosting a family banquet. The majority of the house had come back to Mo City for the day, and the spacious courtyard was filled to the brim as people jubilantly laughed and chatted with one another.

Dozens of massive tables lined the courtyard. People of similar standing sat with one another. They exchanged toasts and laughed during the banquet. It seemed like a very rich merchant family was celebrating the Reunion Festival with how loud and cheerful everyone was.

Tang Xinyun had said before that every Reunion Festival was often observed with both her and her mother off in a corner. Even the 'returning' family members would ignore them due to the third mother.

However, this year was different. Instead of where they would normally be placed, Chu Qingxue was seated at the centermost table, right next to Tang Qianlei no less.

Bai Yunfei and Tang Xinyun along with Zhao Xiluo and Kou Tingting were seated at the table Tang Zhi was responsible for.

Bai Yunfei was visited by several other older members of the house, like how Tang Xinyun had to see to her second, third, and



whatever-uncle. Each member was of high status and strength, and even though they spoke to Bai Yunfei courteously, they would often bring up the Crafting School as a topic.

It was an attempt to peer into Bai Yunfei's status—though this was to be expected.

If Bai Yunfei wasn't the disciple to the previous headmaster, Zi Jin, would they ever pay attention to a young man like him?

The more important figures to the house of Tang, like Tang Xinyun's grandfather or great-grandfather, didn't come partake in the banquet. Like Zi Jin once before, they spent their days in isolation without ever peeking at the mundane world.

At last, Bai Yunfei was finally able to see Tang Xinyun's third step-mother, Hua Yueying. He felt that this woman had the heart of a snake or even a scorpion.

Unexpectedly, she looked nothing like he expected. At first impression, she was calm, graceful, and dignified to the eye, even amiable. She sat on the other side of Tang Qianlei and was speaking to Chu Qingxue without at all looking as though the two were enemies.

Her skin was snowy-white, and she wore a dress as red as fire. Her lips were a cinnabar-red and her eyes were elegantly shaped, like those admired in a phoenix. She didn't look any younger than sixteen, and her charm was loveable to anyone who saw her. If Chu Qingxue was a snow lotus herb, then Hua Yueying was a dazzling rose.

If one were to ask which woman was more captivating, everyone would definitely point to the later.

Several members from the Tang, in the same age group as Bai Yunfei, were at Bai Yunfei's table conversing with him. He didn't know if they had been instructed by their parents or if they were doing it out of their own freewill. Either way, they didn't speak or

treat Tang Xinyun badly, and they spoke to Bai Yunfei and Zhao Xiluo with great respect.

As a straightforward young man, Zhao Xiluo spoke to the group congenially, but Bai Yunfei didn't enjoy scenes such as this. He chose to eat his food and listened to Tang Xinyun and Kou Tingting talk.

There were four sons and one daughter in the direct line of ascension under Tang Qianlei. Aside from the third son who had been sent away for his studies, there was still the eldest son, Tang Jing, the second son, Tang Zhi, the third eldest, Tang Xinyun, and the youngest child, Tang Ming. Tang Ming was Hua Yueying's son, a genius child with talent that came once every hundred years in the Tang. At the tender young age of sixteen, he was already a late-stage Soul Sprite, and he was expected to become a Soul Ancestor soon.

Bai Yunfei had never seen Tang Xinyun's youngest brother even after visiting. After asking around, he learned that second grandfather had taken Tang Ming on a training trip.

The banquet wrapped up some hours after, allowing everyone in the courtyard to stretch their legs. Still continuing their conversations, many of the younger generation began to head to where the older generation was, hoping to gain their approval or even be noticed by someone such as Tang Qianlei.

When it was Bai Yunfei and Tang Xinyun's turn to reach Chu Qingxue's side, Bai Yunfei retrieved a small wooden box from his space ring and offered it up to her. "Auntie Xue, here is a gift for you. May your body recover soon and your youth remain forever!"

"A gift?" Chu Qingxue repeated in surprise. Even Tang Xinyun didn't know Bai Yunfei would give a gift, so she was shocked as well.

Bai Yunfei smiled, "It's nothing special, but I hope this gift will meet your expectations, auntie Xue."

“Child, there isn’t a need to be this polite...” Chu Qingxue ‘chastised’ him, but she took the gift gratefully, “You’ve already brought my child all the way here. This auntie doesn’t even know where to begin to thank you, so why offer a gift as well...?”

Now that the box was in her hands, she clasped the lid and slowly opened it, revealing a single amber-colored earring.

Tang Xinyun became astonished, “Yunfei, isn’t this the soul armament you bought yesterday?”

“Soul armament!?” Chu Qingxue’s eyebrows flew up on her face.

“Xinyun,” she picked up the earring, “You said this is a... soul armament!?”

Bai Yunfei smiled, “Correct, this is indeed a soul armament. It’s not too high in quality, but it has the ability to strengthen the body. If you wear this, auntie Xue, the illness you have will hopefully be alleviated by a bit.”

Only soul cultivators who’ve seen an accessory-type soul armament would know how expensive they were, but when Bai Yunfei said that the quality of the item was slightly ‘low,’ the other people near him were speechless, “No wonder he’s from the Crafting School, giving gifts as ‘casually’ as he wants.”

Since Bai Yunfei was so sincere, Chu Qingxue didn’t press the issue. She accepted the gift with a smile before making conversation with them.

The people watching the interaction, where Bai Yunfei gave his gift, slowly revealed pensive looks on their faces...

.....

“Hsssss... bang!!”

The sounds of fireworks shooting off into the night sky came to the ears of everyone afterwards. They exploded in a flurry of multi-colored lights that dazzled the eyes of everyone that saw it,

but no one knew just which household in the city set it off.

The fireworks had been a catalyst however. Shortly afterwards, fireworks from all over the city started to shoot off into the skies. They exploded in all sorts of shapes and colors, some of them exploding in ways that made auspicious words such as ‘best wishes to everyone’.

As they smiled and watched the fireworks show over the city, Bai Yunfei felt that the previously oh-so-boring banquet was getting just slightly better.

“Haha, Yunfei, look! There’s one shaped like a bird over there...” Tang Xinyun pointed out to an explosion to the left of them with great curiosity and joy.

“I see it! That fireworks artisan is really amazing if they can pull off something l....”

Bai Yunfei replied with a smile of his own. He was about to say something more when all of a sudden, something up in the skies caused his eyes to widen in shock.

Craning his neck up, he began to look up at the sky as if he couldn’t believe his eyes.

Up there in the night sky amidst all over the other fireworks was an especially strange one. It contained a series of words that weren’t even remotely happy-sounding, instead, it read....

“I am the Bandit Chief!!”

# Chapter 312: I am the Bandit Chief

---

“I am the Bandit Chief!”

The string of words created by the fireworks was the center of attention for many of the observers. Pointing up at it, many of them whispered to one another while several of the younger kids pointed and laugh as if to mock the one who set it off for taking himself to be so ‘awesome’.

“Yunfei, what’s wrong?”

Tang Xinyun asked, confused why Bai Yunfei was so surprised.

But he responded only after the fireworks faded away from sight. Still with an odd look on his face, he said, “I...Xinyun, did you see what that firework said?”

“Eh? Are you talking about the one with the strange words?” Tang Xinyun smiled, “I did. ‘Bandit chief’...the chief of all bandits. Haha, what an interesting man that person is.”

“I, er, I think I know who that person is.”

“Oh? Who is it?”

“You know this person as well.” Bai Yunfei looked back up to the sky. “If my guess is correct, that person is Jing Mingfeng.”

“Jing Mingfeng?” Tang Xinyun repeated in surprise, “It’s him? He’s here in Mo City too?”

“That’s what I think.” Bai Yunfei nodded. “How ‘arrogant’ he’s gotten. If he’s bored to the point of this, I’m sure he’s trying to find something fun to do. I’d like to see him again if that’s the case!”

“Haha, I agree...but it’s a shame he doesn’t know we’re here, so it’d be nice if we come across him sooner or later.” Tang Xinyun hadn’t a bad impression of Jing Mingfeng since she knew Bai Yunfei and him were good friends, also, she wanted to meet such

an interesting person again herself.

“That guy likes hiding his soulforce and changes his face all the time. Unless he sees us first, us finding him will be unlikely. If we’ve nothing else to do, we should take a stroll around the city and see if we can find him.” Bai Yunfei laughed.

Later that night, the banquet was now officially over. Some of the guests had matters to attend to still, so they left straight away to return to their homes. Some of the guests were just younglings with nothing to do, so they decided to find some friends and look around the city to see the sights for the next few days; of the friends they invited, Tang Zhi was one of them.

There were a few young masters that were especially charmed by Kout Tingting, but they were each politely rebuffed by her when asked.

Tang Xinyun on the other hand, had no one come ask her. Whether it was because of her status as the daughter of the Tang, or the fact that Bai Yunfei was right next to her, no one bothered to even ‘bother’ her.

Bai Yunfei himself didn’t bother to try and talk with anyone else from the Tang. It was perchance due to the fact how the Tang was treating him or Tang Xinyun, but Bai Yunfei’s opinion on them were slightly negative. They might’ve treated him with more respect than before, but even that wouldn’t be enough to make Bai Yunfei forget about what happened to him before today.

Each time Tang Xinyun spoke about her ‘home’ in the past, she’d always look quite troubled or even hurt from the memories. Bai Yunfei never forgotten about it, so he was disinclined to approach her family. Other than Chu Qingxue or Zhao Mancha, Bai Yunfei wouldn’t even bother trying to talk to the married-in families like the Hua, or even Tang Xinyun’s brother Tang Jing. He was especially displeased with how they treated and hurt Tang Xinyun in the past.

On the way back, Chu Qingxue continued to talk and smile with her daughter with the same gentle expression as usual—or at least that’s how Bai Yunfei felt about it.

They continued to be lost in their own world even when they returned to the courtyards. With how close the mother and daughter were talking, Bai Yunfei saw fit to return to his room by himself.

“Today’s affairs seemed to have changed the Tang’s opinion on Xinyun and her mother a bit....”

On top of his bed, Bai Yunfei could finally relax a bit. If Tang Xinyun and her mother could live happily at home now, this would be the best case scenario.

“But...that step mother is weird....she looked like a fussy mother for the entire banquet and treated auntie Chu like she’d treat a sister.” Bai Yunfei thought, “Xinyun wouldn’t lie though. Hua Binbai was more than willing to tell her what he thought too, so does this mean her personality today was completely fake?”

Upon reaching that final verdict, Bai Yunfei had a strange look on his face, “If that’s the case, that woman is terrifying....”

He shook his head, “No matter the case, as long as the Tang knows that Tang Xinyun has the backing of the Crafting School, they won’t treat her too badly then. I shouldn’t interfere anymore with her family and see how things will go for her now....

“As long as Xinyun’s happy with her mother, that’s fine. If someone else tries to start anything with her, I’ll deal with them.” Bai Yunfei thought back to how Hua Binbai had completely disrespected her and her mother before he dealt with him. Spending the entire day with her mother made Tang Xinyun happy and seemingly allowed her to forget about the sadness she felt from losing her essence fireseed.

“I should be able to relax for now and upgrade some accessories

for now. If I let the essence fireseed in the Cataclysmic Seal ‘reawaken’, then I’ll have to go back to those low success rates from before....”

Starting that day after the banquet, Bai Yunfei spent most of his times living in peace in the Tang residence. During the day, he’d go with Tang Xinyun and the others out to the city and enjoy the sights. At night, he’d hole himself in his room and focus on upgrading the equipment to his hearts desire.

In the following days, Bai Yunfei noticed that the amount of people in Mo City was growing by the day. The majority of them were soul cultivators that came into the city either by themselves or in groups. Some of them looked as though they belonged to a major house or school even.

These people were all here for the auction house planned by the Tang.

Seven days later after the banquet.

Under the guidance of Tang Jing, Bai Yunfei, Zhao Xiluo, and the others were lead to a place named the ‘Treasure Trove’. Upon seeing the auction house, Bai Yunfei finally realized just how grand in scale the auction would be.

Inside the Treasure Trove, the entire interior of the place was decorated similarly to how a theater would look. Rows of chairs and tables lined up the place with a large wooden podium at the very front of the place. All around the area, servants from the Tang worked and rushed left and right as they tried to accomplish their tasks.

There weren’t many people there when Bai Yunfei’s group arrived, but after they took their spots at a table near the front on the right side of the room, the place started to fill up. Servants from the Tang started to usher people to their seats, and soon enough, the entire place was lively with excitement.



Some of the guests started to speak with the ones they knew while other guests sat down quietly and waited for the auction to start. But every single guest there was without exception a very strong soul cultivator. Bai Yunfei could sense that the weakest person gathered nearby was a Soul Sprite at the very least. There were plenty of Soul Ancestors, but more importantly, there were even a few people Bai Yunfei couldn't even tell how strong they were.

This was the very first time Bai Yunfei came across such a large gathering of people of such strong strengths. He was curious most especially and measured up the area around him constantly.

“No wonder the Tang are known as one of the Five Clans. If the auction they hold can have so many people like this, I wonder just how amazing the items will be....”

## Chapter 313: A List of Prodigies

---

The area where Bai Yunfei and his group were seated at was near the very front of the theater, but since it was also in the corner, not much conversation could be heard there.

The auction house continued to fill up with more and more people, and with group of people seated, the noise levels in the place grew in degree as friends and acquaintances greeted to each other.

Bai Yunfei continued to look around the place with equally increasing curiosity. There were a few people that'd introduce themselves when they met Bai Yunfei's gaze. Some of them were the elders of so-and-so school, or young masters of the so-and-so house, but most of them were talented youths of their generation.

And after hearing Zhao Xiluo's introduction of these said people, Bai Yunfei found himself even more curious than before.

The very start of his quest to reach the Crafting School was beget with people trying to kill Bai Yunfei. Only the later half of his adventure was relatively more relaxed, but since he was traveling by himself, Bai Yunfei never found the opportunity to understand even more about the 'circles' of the soul cultivators.

Him joining the Crafting School was hardly different either. Aside from a few more simpler situations, Bai Yunfei was still very ignorant about the soul cultivators of the world.

So when Zhao Xiluo introduced every single person Bai Yunfei asked about, he felt as if he was in some sort of fantastical epic with how there were so many capable soul cultivators there were.

Just as the the auction house was halfway-through with being filled up, the entrance to the place started to grow loud with noise, earning the attention of everyone else.

Craning his neck to look towards the source, Bai Yunfei could see

two imposing figures come walking through the entrance and into the main halls. One of the two figures was Tang Jing, and the other person was a tall young man in purple robes.

Their very entrance became the focal point of the entire auction house. No sooner did they appear in the place did everyone around them try and greet them.

Smiling and greeting people as they continued on their path, Tang Jing and the other male continued on towards the direction of where Bai Yunfei's group was. When pointed to by Tang Jing, the other male looked to where Bai Yunfei was with surprise.

Before long, the two arrived to where Bai Yunfei was. "Haha, brother Bai, brother Zhao, and sister Kou, allow me to introduce you to the eldest son to Marquis Xuanyuan, Xuanyuan Jie." Tang Jing spoke as soon as they were within earshot.

"Xuanyuan Jie!" Zhao Xiluo smiled politely in pleasant surprise, "My apologies for not recognizing you here, master Xuanyuan...."

Nodding his head, Xuanyuan Jie returned the greeting, "You're too kind, brother Zhao. This one came to hear of your excellence among the new students in the Water School a while back. Even now, I can see how skilled you are myself, brother Zhao."

"Brother Xuanyuan, your words make me blush with shame! How could what little strength I have compare to you? You're one of the empire's Ten Prodigies!" Zhao Xiluo sighed, while he had some talent to say the least, there was no way he felt that he was on par with Xuanyuan Jie. The other person was a Soul Exalt and was ranked as one of the most prestigious prodigies; that meant he was a genius of his generation.

"Haha, not in the slightest. I'm ashamed to say it, but there's far more geniuses stronger than I am, they just don't like the spotlight." Xuanyuan Jie laughed modestly before turning to Kou Tingting. "And you must be the lovely daughter of senior Kou Changkong of the Crafting School, correct? How fortunate I am to

have met such a beautiful woman today. Since you and brother Zhao are here in Mo City, allow me to play the host and welcome you around the city.”

Rising up from her seat to curtsy to him, Kou Tingting smiled, “Thank you for your kindness, lord Xuanyuan, brother Zhao and I will be sure to visit another day.”

He turned to Tang Xinyun next, “Miss Tang, it’s been a long time since our last meeting. I heard you joined the Crafting School and became the disciple of the third elder there, congratulations!”

Tang Xinyun smiled, “Thank you, lord Xuanyuan, I’m happy to see you again as well.”

Only Bai Yunfei was left to greet now. Xuanyuan Jie turned to Bai Yunfei last, “And you must be brother Bai Yunfei, correct? What an amazing talent you are to have senior Zi Jin take you in as a disciple after twenty years of isolation. Looking at you, I’m sure there’ll be an upset in the top ten prodigies in the coming years....”

Despite not knowing what the ‘Empire’s Top Ten Prodigies’ was, Bai Yunfei could make an educated guess that Xuanyuan Jie was one of them and had remarkable talent. Having not a bad first impression of him, Bai Yunfei replied in an equally polite voice, “Brother Xuanyuan praises me too much. I’d never hope to even hope to stand shoulder to shoulder with brother Xuanyuan with what meager strength I have.”

“You’re still young, brother Bai. Give it a decade or two and I’m confident you’ll be known throughout the continent, haha....In the future when you become successful in the art of crafting, I hope you will not refuse me if I come with a request for a soul armament.”

“Brother Xuanyuan, what a ridiculous notion. If the time comes, there’d be no way I’d refuse your request.”

.....

After a decently long conversation with everyone, Xuanyuan Jie and Tang Jing both left the area. Reseated now, Bai Yunfei asked Tang Xinyun, “So, Xinyun, what’s with this ‘Top Ten Prodigies’?”

“At first, it was meant to be a list to see which soul cultivators did the most good deeds. But when more and more people learned about it, it became a popularity contest. Rankings are based on the strength of any upcoming soul cultivator, and the strongest ten are called the Ten Prodigies. It’s not 100% accurate, but the ones that are on the rankings are without a doubt beyond strong for their generation.” She explained.

Zhao Xiluo piped up next, “Actually, your senior Jiang Fan was once a part of that list, Yunfei. But the list changes every three year, and since Jiang Fan spent ten years in hiding to train, he fell out from the public’s eye and was replaced by another prodigy.”

“Oh? Senior Jiang Fan was once a part of that list?” Bai Yunfei asked.

He felt relieved, however. With Jiang Fan's strength, it wasn't strange at all to be on the list.

The question of Xuanyuan Jie’s identity came up after that, “Oh, Xiluo, if Xuanyuan Jie is the son of the lord mayor of Mo City, is he a student of the Heavenly Soul School then?”

“Of course,” Xiluo nodded his head, “his father, the marquis Xuanyuan Hong is a core student of the school. Xuanyuan Jie himself was carefully taught the teachings of the school since young, and if nothing goes wrong, he’ll become the lord mayor of Mo City in several decades.”

While he was answer Bai Yunfei’s question, Zhao Xiluo felt something strange and turned to the side as if realizing something. “Eh?” He spoke in surprise, “Didn’t think those two people would come here too.”

Following his gaze, Bai Yunfei turned just in time to see two

twenty-seven or twenty-eight year old males come walking over.

“Haha, Zhao Xiluo, it really was you; what a coincidence to see you here too.”

The one who spoke then was the male on the left. He had long hair that floated slightly as he walked and the eyebrows on his face were as sharp as a sword when he smiled towards Zhao Xiluo. When he saw Kou Tingting, he looked slightly surprised, “Junior Kou, you came here as well?”

Smiling, Kou Tingting replied, “Haha, senior Zhong, long time no see.”

“Hehe, one of my seniors told me before that the auctions in Mo City were always a blast to see, so junior Kou and I decided to make a detour here before heading for the Crafting School. How surprising to see brother Zhong and brother Yang here as well.” Zhao Xiluo greeted the two newcomers before turning around to introduce Bai Yunfei to them.

“Brother Bai, allow me to introduce these two. This is the junior headmaster of the Fire School, Zhong Liyan. And this is my second senior from the Metal School, Yang Lin.”

“The junior headmaster of the Fire School and a senior of the Metal School!” Bai Yunfei mentally remarked with surprise. He had no idea that these two people would have such high statuses.

Yang Lin was the one with shorter hair and rather average appearances, but his eyes had such a staunch look of determination in them that it was practically as sharp as a sword. Looking at Bai Yunfei, he started, “Brother Zhao, this is...?”

Instead of letting Zhao Xiluo introduce him, Bai Yunfei did it himself, “Bai Yunfei of the Crafting School, pleased to make your acquaintance.”

“Ah, so you’re a junior student from the Crafting School. If you’re friends of Zhao Xiluo, then you’re friends with me, Zhong

Liyan! If we become good friends in the future, I'll be sure to help you with any help you might need!" Zhong Liyan laughed cordially. Even without personally knowing Bai Yunfei, Zhong Liyan was already more than willing to call him a friend.

"...." The corners to Zhao Xiluo's lips curled upwards as if to snicker at the fact that Bai Yunfei was being called a 'junior student'. "He should be called a 'senior uncle' if anything." He thought.

Though since Bai Yunfei didn't seem to want to divulge his identity, Zhao Xiluo said nothing more himself. Moving on, he spoke, "This is Tang Xinyun, the fourth daughter of the Tang and student of the Crafting School."

"The fourth daughter of the Tang?" Yang Lan remarked, "I wasn't expecting to meet you here, miss Tang. So you've joined the Crafting School? I'm sorry to say I didn't hear about it."

"I only just the previous year," Tang Xinyun replied, "It's natural that senior Yang didn't hear about it yet."

"Haha, to join the Crafting School with all their strict standards, you're a talented one then, miss Tang. There's been plenty of students from my Fire School that tried to join the Crafting School, but they were all unfortunately disqualified before joining us." Zhong Liyan sighed, "There was actually someone with extremely high talent in elemental fire that joined us this year. He was disqualified from the Crafting School for his lack of talent in crafting, however."

As an aside almost, Zhao Xiluo spoke to Bai Yunfei, "Yunfei, Zhong Liyan is actually another one of the ten prodigies."

"Hm?" Zhong Liyan questioned, "What makes you bring that up all of a sudden?"

"It's nothing, haha. We just came across Xuanyuan Jie a while ago, but brother Bai doesn't know much about soul cultivators so I

had to give him a quick introduction.”

“I see....then, brother Zhao, please try not to mention me. I’m only at the end of the list so I’m embarrassed to even show my face in public....”

“Oh be quiet. If someone like you says that, people who didn’t even make the list like us wouldn’t even be able to show our faces to our parents, could we?”

TL Note: Untranslatable pun. Zhong Liyan talks about him losing face, but the first character meaning ‘to lose’ can also mean ‘to throw’, so Zhao Xiluo sarcastically remarks that if he’s ‘lost face’, then people like him who didn’t even make the list ‘threw’ their faces so hard, it’s all the way back home.

.....

The conversation took to their seats now that Zhong Liyan and Yang Lin joined them. Zhong Liyan and Zhao Xiluo seemed to have a fairly great friendship with one another from how they talked to one another. Yang Lin was far more quiet, but even he spoke up once in a while to contribute to the conversation.

Bai Yunfei didn’t say anything and opted to listen so that he could learn more about soul cultivators in general.

Unknowingly, the auction house was almost filled to the brim now before a single figure came walking up to the wooden podium.

It was Tang Jing.

Walking up to the front, Tang Jing waited for everyone in the audience to quiet down before bowing to them all. “Ladies and gentlemen, I am Tang Jing. Please allow me to welcome and thank you all for participating in the Tang sponsored auction today.”

He paused here to take a breath.

“We are all soul cultivators, so I’ll dispense with the dull pretext commoners are prone to say. Allow me to just say that I hope



everyone will be able to bid to their heart's content today!!

“And so I declare, let the auction, begin!”

# Chapter 314: Dragonfruit

---

In just three small lines of dialogue, Tang Jing immediately kicked off the auction.

It was befitting nonetheless. For soul cultivators, auctions didn't require all the long primers one might expect from one run by commoners. So if Tang Jing were to say anything longer for this one, the entire audience would find it extremely inappropriate.

As soon as he announced the start of the auction, Tang Jing walked off the podium and returned to his own seat.

A thirty-year-old man came up to the podium next and bowed to the audience. "Ladies and gentleman, I am Lu Fan, your host for today's auction. While I'm sure that everyone here is accustomed to how this auction works, there are a few first-timers here. So please allow me to give a refresher on the rules and regulations."

Up on the podium, Lu Fan wasn't speaking so loudly that he was screaming, but it was loud enough for the entire audience to hear him. His voice was deep but clear, and the amount of soulforce coming out from his body clearly marked him as a very strong soul cultivator.

"Please allow me to first say that the items that will be auctioned today are not from the Tang. The house of Tang are only the organizers of this auction and were only entrusted with protecting and allowing the items to be sold here today.

"There will be, of course, a reward for them.

"The currencies that'll be used for today's auction will be primal stones. Primal stones of every element are accepted provided that they are of low quality, and guests are allowed to use soul armament, soul crystals, and other items similar to them as barter. We, the house, will accept and trade in those items for primal stones.

“If the master of the auction house is willing to trade and ‘convert’ items for primal stones, there won’t be a need for the Tang to do the conversion.

“The bidding will take place as per norms; if there are no higher bids within a minute, then the item will go to the final bidder at that price.

“After the bidding is complete, you may trade in your primal stones for your item, or you may continue bidding for other items. We will wait until the auction is over for you to make the transaction if needed.”

“That will be all. Your host has nothing more to say, so...allow me to present the very first item!”

After a brief introduction of the rules, Lu Fan immediately waved his hand to signal to the people to the side of the stage. Shortly afterwards, a beautiful young woman came walking onto the podium with a expertly-crafted wooden box about half a meter squared in length.

Despite the box being closed, everyone could sense a faint red glow emanating from within the box. From that, everyone could guess that it was an item with an affinity for fire.

“The very first item is a very magical type of herb.” Lu Fan announced to the audience. Brandishing his right hand, he opened the box and retrieved the item inside.

“It’s...a three-thousand year-old dragonfruit!”

As soon as the box was opened up, a brilliant gleam of red light jumped into the sky. The farther it got away from the source, the fainter the red light became, but there was enough of it to fill the entire auction house, and the temperature in the area seemed to go up several degrees as well.

The dragonfruit was completely red and shined a brilliant shade of red. Even despite it being as big as someone’s fist, the

dragonfruit shined brightly like a ball of fire to everyone else.

“Bzz....”

No sooner did the dragonfruit appear did the entire auction house devolve into a buzz of discussion. No one imagined that the very first item to be auctioned would be such a priceless herb.

Dragonfruits were extremely rare types of magical herb ingredients. Ones that were a thousand years old in age were already considered priceless, but this one was somehow three-thousand years old!!

It'd be no exaggeration to say that the consumption of the dragonfruit would equal to a Soul Ancestor training for several years!

Back when Bai Yunfei was tryin to form a second essence fireseed, he was lucky enough to have a dragonfruit on hand. It was only a thousand-years olds, but even then, it was squandered on him. The amount of drugs used that day was used up at great speeds and without much absorption.

It was only because of Zi Jin's adamant nature to help Bai Yunfei that he was able to use the drugs since Huangfu Nan was extremely heartbroken to see all those resources used up.

The chaotic fluctuation of soulforce coming from behind Bai Yunfei startled him. Turning around, he could see Zhong Liyan's eyes lighting up in joy as he honed in onto the dragonfruit with them.

“That dragonfruit is....mine!!”

He was extremely determined to obtain it.

Up on the podium, Lu Fan could tell just how excited the audience was getting. “I presume I don't need to explain to everyone how precious this dragonfruit is.

“So now, this three-thousand year old dragonfruit will have a

starting price of a thousand primal stones. Let the bidding begin!”

“A thousand primal stones!” Bai Yunfei grew alarmed. He knew that the dragonfruit would surely net a considerable sum of money, but a starting price of a thousand was completely unexpected. It’d be a different story if the currency being used was gold pieces, but primal stones meant that this item was extremely more valuable. Low-grade primal stones like the one being used as currency right now weren’t worth much, but a thousand of them was definitely a considerable sum of money.

To further drive this point home, students of the Crafting School were only allowed an allowance of thirty low-grade primal stones per month. The only way to increase their allowance was to contribute to the school and be rewarded for it in primal stones.

There was a standardized conversation rate from between primal stones. A hundred low-grade primal stones was equivalent to a single mid-grade primal stone, and a hundred mid-grade primal stones was worth a single high-grade primal stone. But even though the amount of energy contained in a hundred high-grade primal stones was equivalent to a single top-grade primal stone, only an idiot would make the trade.

While the conversation rate seemed fair, only a few people would be willing to trade a higher quality primal stone for any number of inferior quality ones.

“A thousand one hundred!”

No sooner did Lu Fan announce the start when someone from the left called out his bid. The middle-aged man in question wore a dark-red robe and stared intently at the dragonfruit in anticipation.

“A thousand two hundred!”

From the middle, another person called out his bid.

“A thousand three hundred!”

“A thousand five hundred!”

“.....”

Under the bewildered expression of Bai Yunfei, the people of the audience started to increase the price one after another. In a short minute, the price had gone from a thousand primal stones to two thousand five hundred.

But by this point, the amount of bidders was far fewer than before. And soon enough, only the first bidder and another old man was left bidding for it.

When the old man announced his bid for two thousand five hundred, the other middle-aged man was clearly starting to hesitate as he debated whether it was worth bidding for.

On the podium, Lu Fan only gave a small smile at the bidder. He didn't urge the man, and neither did he bother to try and encourage him. The bidders weren't the main characters of the auction, so in his perspective, there wasn't a need to do anything.

After the dragonfruit was finally sold, the auction could continue onwards. The items after it were rare beyond rare, but none were as awe-shocking as the dragonfruit. It would appear that the dragonfruit was meant to be an item to help make the auction have a strong start.

Seated in his corner of the room, Bai Yunfei continued to watch each item be brought in and bidden for with excitement. Whenever someone started to bid on the items, his heart started to beat with increasing tempo.

After half the day went by, Bai Yunfei was starting to feel that these primal stones may as well be like small pebbles with how abundant they were in numbers here.

## Chapter 315: Baby Wind Squaller

---

For all the excitement he had for the auction, Bai Yunfei was only an observer and not an actual participant. The items being sold here were by no means bad, but not a single one of them caught his eye just yet. It was also worth mentioning that since Bai Yunfei hadn't realized the concept of using primal stones as currency, his own space rings had only a few of them. Ever since the elemental fire in his body vanished, Bai Yunfei had no need for them.

At one point, a low-earth tier soul armament was sold for roughly six thousand primal stones. Shocked by such a price, Bai Yunfei began to count up the soul armaments he had in his own space ring. From there, he was pleasantly surprised to realize that with the amount of soul armaments he had, he may as well be considered a 'parvenu'....

So great was his surprise did Bai Yunfei start to think that he should give the Tang some of his earth tier soul armaments. He'd be able to 'make' a profit by selling them in exchange for primal stones which could help him train later—though he wouldn't be able to sell the ones with additional effects—he'd be able to sell any of the equipment that weren't yet at the +10 level. On a second thought, the equipment that had additional effects such as just increasing attack power could be sold, since they wouldn't too inconspicuous.

Time slowly went by before it reached high noon, and then after noon shortly afterwards. Not eating lunch wasn't at all rare for soul cultivators in any case, and this auction was specifically meant to continue until five in the afternoon without a break.

When the auction house was nearing its end, Bai Yunfei could feel several of the more indifferent men in the audience start to grow lively, as if waiting for something to appear.

From there, more and more people started to move slightly in

their seats when another item was sold.

Before long, Lu Fan gave a slight cough to clear his throat. “Ladies and gentlemen! The auction is about to wrap up for the year, so as per usual, I will now announce the final and most anticipated two items we shall be auctioning off today!”

Bai Yunfei looked surprised. The auction house had kept the best items for last! These two items would presumably be the highlight of the auction and the items everyone looked forward to the most.

“The next item is a very special case. It isn’t a mineral, herb, soul armament, or soul skill....

“It’s a soulbeast!”

A wave of silence swept across the audience as soon as Lu Fan spoke.

Bai Yunfei was quiet himself—“You can buy even soulbeasts here?”

Lu Fan motioned for a lovely young woman to bring up a large box up to the podium. The box had no lid, so everyone could see the silk-laden interior where a single green ball was carefully wrapped up inside.

At a closer observation, everyone could see that it was a green-colored soulbeast!!

It looked similar to a recently borne dog due to its shape. The soulbeast was curled up in a ball and had its eyes closed so that it looked as if it was sleeping.

“This is a baby wind squaller. Just moments after it was born, a special medicine was administered so that it’d go into hibernation. As a baby, both its mind and willpower are at their very lowest; that makes making a soul contract with it extremely easy. Need I say anymore on just how valuable this wind squaller is? In just three to five years, it’ll be able to become a fifth-class soulbeast if you take care of it right! Soulbeasts that are tamed since young will



have the absolute best level of compatibility, which means it'll be even stronger than normal!"

Bai Yunfei was shocked again. He hadn't realized that the auction would actually sell young soulbeasts as well. This wind squaller was clearly a strong soulbeast, and one with the wind affinity like Xiao Bai as its name clearly indicated. But rather than an avian type soulbeast, it was a four-footed one.

Upon knowing that the next item to be auctioned was a young wind squaller, the conversation in the audience kicked up a notch. Some people had disappointment and regret on their faces, as a wind type soulbeast wasn't compatible with them, while other soul cultivators had a gleeful smile on their faces. They were clearly coveting the wind squaller.

In the right hand side of the central area, there was a young handsome man dressed in black. Excited as he looked at the young wind squaller with his gleeful eyes, the young man couldn't help but let loose an excited laugh, "Haha...a soulbeast! A young one with a wind affinity, how excellent! How truly excellent! I...I want this soulbeast!!"

Just one seat ahead of this person sat another person with hair that reached his shoulders and a face handsome and pale. Originally, this man had his hands crossed against another while he napped with his eyes shut. But when he heard the black-robed young man behind him start to laugh, his eyes blinked open to look at the case up above.

"Brother Mo, this Tang-sponsored auction house really lives up to its name! I never thought the very first day of the auction would have such an item! A baby wind squaller, hehehe...."

The one named 'brother Mo' maintained his gaze on the case for several seconds longer without a single emotion apparent on his face. "Oh, congratulations then, brother Lin."

As soon as he spoke, he closed his eyes once more as if not caring

for the events around him.

The young man named Lin didn't seem to care about his companion's reaction however and continued to stare up at the podium in anticipation to start bidding.

Right behind him was an elderly man in his sixties and white hair to show for it. This old man had a small look of concern on his face as he addressed the younger man, "Young master, are you sure you want to buy this wind squaller? If we buy it, we might potentially hurt our chances for the next item...."

But the man shook his hand as if to shut the elder up, "It's only just a few primal stones, though? Don't worry, I'll won't spend much. I want this wind squaller!"

The old man let out a sigh at this. If the young master was acting this way, there was no point in saying anything more.

.....

Lu Fan waited for the discussion to die out from the audience before he opened his mouth again. "Ladies and gentleman, we shall begin the auction for the baby wind squaller at twenty thousand primal stones. Let the bidding begin!"

"Twenty thousand!!"

Bai Yunfei's eyes bulged out wide at the price of the soulbeast. This soulbeast had a starting price that was already twenty times as big as the dragonfruit at the start of the auction!

"Twenty thousand huh....that's about two hundred mid-grade primal stones, or two high-grade ones!" Bai Yunfei calculated. To him, high-grade primal stones had a worth even he didn't know. Back at the Crafting School, brother Song Lin and the others in the internal school only used mid-grade primal stones to train. Even Jiang Fan himself was only able to use a single high-grade primal stone, but that was that he could heal from his wounds.

While a price of twenty-thousand was enough of a shocker to Bai

Yunfei, what made him even more dumbfounded was the fact that just five or six bids were immediately called out afterwards. In just a short two minutes, the price was already at forty-thousand primal stones!

The price continued to grow higher and higher while the amount of people continued to drop out. In just a short ten minutes, the price was already at forty-seven thousand primal stones.

“Fifty thousand!!”

Right at the climax when everyone thought the bidding was over, a loud but confident voice echoed across the auction.

It was the youth named Lin!

The sudden increase of three thousand more primal stones elicited a gasp from the audience as everyone turned to focus on the youth.

“That youth, he’s...Lin Dongxiao!! The junior headmaster of the Beast Taming School!!”

In no time at all, the identity of the man was leaked out for the entire audience to hear and discuss over.

“The junior headmaster of the Fire School is here, and now it’s the Beast Taming School now too?!”

“I wasn’t paying attention I guess. It’s only the first day of the auction though. I remember these people usually come out in the last two days of it. But even then, they’re never usually such high-ranking members. I’m pretty sure all these prodigies were curious to see what was going on in the auction this year....”

# Chapter 316: Junior Headmaster of the Beast Taming School

---

“He wasn’t bidding before, but now he makes a bid for fifty-thousand primal stones! No wonder he’s the junior headmaster of the Beast Taming School, he really wants that wind squaller!”

“Isn’t that pretty obvious? He’s from the Beast Taming School, the school where soulbeasts are the most important. Wanting a baby wind squaller would be pretty obvious I’d say.”

“.....”

While everyone was talking to one another, Bai Yunfei learned of Lin Dongxiao’s identity from Zhao Xiluo.

He was a junior headmaster and also one of the ten prodigies. He was even stronger than Zhong Liyan as an early-stage Soul Exalt.

“The Beast Taming School...” Bai Yunfei narrowed his eyes. He had no love for the school, especially after what happened in Curopia City.

It’d be far more accurate to say that Bai Yunfei abhorred the school.

The beast tamers from that incident were all killed by him, however. His master Zi Jin didn’t news of their death to be made public since that’d cause a public conflict with the Beast Taming School. Fortunately, Bai Yunfei had no desire to kill any beast tamer he came across. At most, he had a strong feeling of dislike for any members of the school.

“Fifty-thousand primal stones....that’s far more than the final bid for the dragonfruit!” He thought. As an aside to Zhao Xiluo, Bai Yunfei spoke, “Xiluo, if I’m thinking correctly, beast tamers use soulbeast puppets to battle for them. How’re they going to use a baby wind squaller then? Are they going to take care of it like any regular soul cultivator?”

His question was responded with a shake of the head from Zhao Xiluo, “Take care of it? Why in the world would the Beast Taming School do something ‘nice’ like that? As far as I know, the Beast Taming School has a secret technique that’ll forcefully age the soulbeast. Since newborns are very weak in willpower, they can easily erase their sentience and ‘refine’ them in a similar way you might work a soul armament. This way, the soulbeast will mature extremely fast and draw out its latent power during that time. I’d say it’d take half the time it’d normally would for this baby wind squaller to become a fifth-class soulbeast....

“Soulbeasts that are ‘raised’ this way are the easiest to control...yea, if I had to make a comparison, I’d say that it’d be similar to how your Crafting School has those ‘soulbound armaments’.”

“Stripped of their sentience and worked like a item....” Bai Yunfei stared pitifully at the curled up wind squaller in the box. Just minutely, the knot in his eyebrows tightened by a little bit.

Up on the podium, Lu Fan was currently going through the customs of asking if there was anyone else willing to make a bid. Though from how everyone was looking at him, it was obvious that no one else would be willing to make a bid.

First off, the price was already far too high.

Secondly, now that they knew the identity of the most recent bidder, who’d be willing to engage in a bidding war with him?

From where he was seated, Lin Dongxiao sat in his seat with a smug face as he waited for the bid to end.

But before Lu Fan could make the announcement, a deep voice from the rear of the right side called out to make a bid.

“Fifty-thousand and two hundred primal stones.”

It was only a measly two hundred more than the last, but the fact remained that someone was willing to fight Lin Dongxiao over the

soulbeast!

The smile on his face froze. From where a content look was once on his face, only a chillingly sharp glint of killing intent remained. His pupils had dilated to such a tremendous degree that they were now more beast-like than human as he turned towards the direction to glare at the person who'd dare try and steal his prize away.

Likewise, Bai Yunfei and his group of friends turned towards the back. From in the corner of the room, a twenty-something year old man could be seen leaning somewhat lazily backwards to stare up at the ceiling. His hands cradled his head from behind, making him look extremely sloppy and lazy like some sort of hedonistic child.

“A late-stage Soul Warrior?!”

Everyone that took notice of the young man blanched in surprise. They couldn't tell just what school or house this youth was from, but they could at least tell that he was relatively weak and had no companions around him.

A person like that was trying to fight in a battle of bids with the junior headmaster of the Beast Taming School?!

“Hmph!” An indifferent snort erupted from Lin Dongxiao's nose. While he was angry about having a competitor now, he knew better than to act out on those emotions in this place. Retrieving his glare away from the male, he looked back to Lu Fan on top of the podium, “Fifty-one thousand!”

“Fifty-one thousand and two hundred!”

No sooner did Lin Dongxiao make a new bid did the late-stage Soul Warrior make yet another lazy bid.

“You!!” This time, the anger from Lin Dongxiao was out in full force. His head whipped around to glare at the male. Already a sliver of aura was leaking out from his body as a testament to his readiness to kill the male, but still, the other man remained as

calm and lazy as ever. He didn't even seem aware of the admonishing look Lin Dongxiao was giving him, confusing everyone around him into thinking that he was either far too conceited or he had more than enough support to not worry about the fallout.

“Fifty-two thousand!!”

Lin Dongxiao's hand clenched in anger for just a brief moment before unclenching again. A plan was already formulating inside his mind to find a way to punish this reckless idiot after the auction ended.

Like the first two times, the young man trailed behind like a shadow with another bid of his own, “Fifty-two thousand and two hundred!”

“Fifty-three thousand!”

“Fifty-three thousand and two hundred!”

“Fifty-four thousand!”

“Fifty-four thousand and two hundred...”

“.....”

The following half minute went by with both sides listing off a bid in rapid-fire action. Under the dumbfounded eyes and ears of the entire audience, the price of the baby wind squaller soon reached sixty-five thousand primal stones.

There was finally a difference however. The young man was no longer bidding lazily like before. A serious look finally graced his face, and whenever he made a new bid, it was made with a slight amount of uncertainty.

At last, the price of the wind squaller reached seventy-thousand primal stones after Lin Dongxiao's turn to bid. The young man grew silent then. Half a minute went by before he let out a sigh and shook his head.

No more, it would seem.

The bid was now at a price where even the young man could no longer afford to go above.

“Hmph! Bidding against me only means in your death, brat!!” Lin Dongxiao laughed mirthfully. A glint of killing intent was passed along the other man’s direction.

The entire audience in attendance stared at the young man who was now muttering to himself. They all knew just what type of man the junior headmaster was and how vicious he could be in all his grudges.

It didn’t take much for them to predict that this ‘reckless’ young man would soon be making his departure from life soon enough.....

The silence lasted for several moments longer as everyone turned back to wait for Lu Fan. It’d be any moment now for Lu Fan to declare Lin Dongxiao as the winning bidder, but then...

“I bid an earth tier soul armament!!”

A voice called out. It was no shout, but the statement may as well been a clap of thunder in the hearts of the entire audience.

Everyone in the auction house, Lu Fan from the podium, Tang Jing from below, Xuanyuan Jie, Lin Dongxiao, and the other man that tried his best to bid against him, they all turned towards the source of the voice—

--The one that came from the corner in the front right side of the auction house.

The one who spoke was none other than....Bai Yunfei!!

Lu Fan looked inquisitively at Bai Yunfei, “My lord, might I ask you repeat yourself....?” He asked.

“I said that I would like to offer up an earth tier soul armament as a bid, does the auction not allow such an act?” Bai Yunfei smiled. “According to the rules of your auction, please have



someone brought to inspect the price of my soul armament and see if it can outbid the highest price so far.”

A silvery short-sword was brought out as he spoke.

As soon as it appeared, the eyes of everyone around him light up in surprise; they could already tell at first glance that this short-sword was by no means normal.

The shock on Lu Fan’s face was only momentarily--as expected from a seasoned host. He called a person over to where Bai Yunfei was and took the offered soul armament into his hand so that it could be sent to where Tang Jing and three other old men stood expectantly.

“Yunfei, what are you....”

Zhao Xiluo didn’t know what exactly to think. He was completely dumbfounded by what Bai Yunfei had just done.

Just several seconds before, Bai Yunfei asked him for his thoughts on just how much his earth tier soul armament was worth. Not being an expert on evaluating soul armaments, Zhao Xiluo gave a random guess of eighty-thousand primal stones at the very least.

But no sooner did he give his estimate did Bai Yunfei make a bid just two seconds later, astounding everyone around him into shock.

Bai Yunfei gave him a smile, “Haha, I thought the baby wind squaller was kind of cute, so I’d like to buy it.”

“.....”

Both Zhong Liyan and Yang Lin had a strange look on their faces as their minds tried to process the shock that Bai Yunfei just delivered. Because of Bai Yunfei’s rather low strength, they had dismissed him in their minds, and yet....

The very same person they dismissed as being weak had taken

out an earth tier soul armament as easily as nothing!

That wasn't something any crafter of the school could do on a whim.

The one that could understand what Bai Yunfei was thinking the best was perhaps only Tang Xinyun. In her eyes, Bai Yunfei was most likely harboring a grudge against the Beast Taming School, hence why he decided to try and 'steal' away the baby wind squaller.

In truth, Bai Yunfei just couldn't stand the arrogant smile on Lin Dongxiao's face. He also couldn't stomach the fact that such a young baby would be subject to such cruel treatments, so he was determined to stop the baby wind squaller from reaching Lin Dongxiao's hands.

The soul armament he took out was only a low-earth tier soul armament, but it was one of the few equipment he managed to upgrade to +10. With the additional effect being able to increase its attack power by a little more, the combined attack should be just enough for it to be evaluated as a mid-earth tier soul armament.

A buzz of discussion descended upon the auction house again as many of the soul cultivators started to point at Bai Yunfei. Some were astonished, some were confused, and some started to try and guess what faction Bai Yunfei belonged to.

A minute later, the three elders who took the short-sword for 'inspection' finally came to a conclusive price.

This soul armament, they announced, was worth eighty-three thousand primal stones!!

In truth, the price of this soul armament was given after going through the Tang's 'reasonably fair' conversation rates.

Should any other auction house make their own evaluation, the short-sword would surely be even higher....

Upon confirmation that he wanted to participate in the auction

with the soul armament, Bai Yunfei watched as the entire audience start to gasp and turn their heads towards Lin Dongxiao.

They all knew that this was a direct ‘challenge’ to him, so they were all waiting to see how he’d respond.

## Chapter 317: A Must Have!!

---

The look on Lin Dongxiao's face was all but ashen now. The anger in him was at a boiling point, and his killing intent was already flowing freely from his body. Those people that were and unfortunate enough to be around him were already starting to feel the effects of his killing intent and began to shiver in fear.

The item he was fighting for was only a baby wind squaller. A soulbeast and nothing more.

And yet, he was being challenged by a 'reckless' youth and forced to raise the price from fifty-thousand to seventy-thousand. That much was vexing in itself, and yet another problem cropped up afterwards in the shape of a late-stage Soul Warrior!

What kind of humiliation was this?!

The fact that this second person was companions with the junior headmaster of the Fire School, a senior of the Wood School and Water School, and even with someone from the Tang changed nothing in his mind. He would kill this person.

The auction house had a guarantee from the Tang that any two parties would be safe as long as they were in Mo City. No one was stupid enough to challenge one of the Five Clans in that regard. But the Tang had no way of making good on that promise outside of Mo City. As long as the party stepped a single foot outside the city borders, there'd be a bloodbath of people going after the treasure.

From behind Lin Dongxiao, the elder started to whisper to him, "Young master...."

"I know, you don't need to warn me!" Lin Dongxiao waved him off, "I know what to do!!"

Using eighty-thousand primal stones for a single baby wind squaller wasn't worth it at all. Even if it was nurtured slowly and

carefully under the hands of a normal soul cultivator or forcefully aged at the hands of a beast tamer, the price as it stood right now wasn't worth it. It also wasn't a guarantee that the wind squaller would successfully become a fifth-class soulbeast; so if Lin Dongxiao were to try and bid any more primal stones, it very well might actually harm the Beast Taming School's bids for the later auctions.

Lin Dongxiao wasn't a man that would move so easily based on his emotions. In a snap of his fingers, the anger he felt was quelled as he gave Bai Yunfei a sinister sneer before following suit with his other companion who was asleep on his chair and closed his eyes to meditate.

Lin Dongxiao actually giving up the bid left many of the spectators disappointed. But everyone of them knew that there was no way Lin Dongxiao would let this grudge lying down, so they gave Bai Yunfei a sympathetic look.

Though, there were plenty of people who were excited to see a battle take place between Lin Dongxiao and the people support Bai Yunfei.

A minute later, Lu Fan announced Bai Yunfei as the winner of the auction.

The box with the wind squaller was brought over to where Bai Yunfei was and given to Tang Xinyun to hold. She and Kou Tingting looked excitedly over the small soulbeast as it scratched itself in its sleep—a small furry animal like this one was the bane of all young woman in the world.

“Yunfei....you sure you going to be fine giving away one of your high-earth tier soul armaments? I heard that students of the Crafting School can't trade any earth tier soul armaments without permission.” Zhao Xiluo asked in concern as he watched Bai Yunfei give up the soul armament in question to one of the auction workers.

“Haha, it won’t be a problem at all.” Bai Yunfei laughed, “The rules of the school say that any soul armament crafted with the ingredients provided for by the school can’t be traded. If made outside of the school, there’s no restrictions at all.”

In other words, soul armaments that didn’t come from the school could be traded with without repercussion.

But even if such a loophole didn’t exist, the fact that he was Zi Jin’s disciple would be more than enough to let people allow Bai Yunfei to bend the rules.

“Oh, I see.”

Zhao Xiluo nodded his head in understanding. For him, the actions of Bai Yunfei didn’t really surprise him. Zhong Liyan and Yang Lin, on the other hand, was. When they heard what Bai Yunfei said about the earth tier soul armament being his own rather than from the Crafting School, they were surprised. If it wasn’t from the Crafting School, then what other backing did Bai Yunfei have other than the Crafting School?

“Ladies and gentlemen, I will now announce the final item to be auctioned today!”

When the audience finally grew quiet again, Lu Fan began to announce, “The final item to be sold today is a very special one. At first, our auction house was planning to have the baby wind squaller to be the final item, but the owner of this next item requested for it to be sold last. Furthermore, this item will not be shown today, as it will arrive tomorrow. The house of Tang guarantees that the item will not be anything less than advertised.”

Even though the item wasn’t here yet, the entire audience didn’t seem too bothered by it. Situations like this happened before due to several reasons, such as the seller wishing to first find a buyer before actually bringing it out. In this case, that was why the house of Tang gave their guarantee that the auction house would find a

buyer first before the item was delivered.

But in order to have the rules ‘bent’ like this required the item to be especially precious. Any normal item would not be enough to make an exception.

“This last treasure is rare beyond rare. For the stronger soul cultivators in the audience, this item may just very well be a miracle drug capable of boosting their strengths, but for any Soul Sprites or soul cultivators with dual affinities, this item will be priceless.”

His introduction on the item gave rise to a large number of excited murmuring.

After waiting for the murmurs to die down, Lu Fan began to speak,

“This next item will be the final item of today. It is the....

“Fireseed spirit mushroom!!”

“.....”

A wave of silence immediately took hold of the auction house for a split second before the noise levels peaked right afterwards.

“Did I hear that right? A fireseed spirit mushroom?! What a treasure...someone’s willing to sell one of those?!”

“Right? What kind of person wouldn’t use that for themselves or give it to someone else in their family? It’s a fireseed spirit mushroom for heaven’s sakes! A single stalk is enough to grant a great boon to any fire type soul cultivator, or even give someone else a great chance to be able to learn how to use elemental fire!”

“It’s only the first day of the auction, and yet they’re selling such a great item already!”

“A fireseed spirit mushroom....Lu Fan’s right. It might be a drug that’ll only help increase the strengths of most of here by a decent amount, but for everyone else, it really is a priceless treasure! I

wonder who's going to fight for this?"

"....."

A brilliant gleam of light entered Bai Yunfei's eyes. Even now, his face was trembling with emotions along with his body.

A fireseed spirit mushroom had....finally appeared!

"Yunfei...."

The slight murmuring of Tang Xinyun made its way to Bai Yunfei who turned to see her. On her face, Bai Yunfei could see a similar level of excitement, joy, and just a sliver of hesitation.

For some reason, the emotions running through his mind was immediately quelled at the sight of her face. He gave her a reassuring smile and whispered, "Haha, Xinyun, don't worry. I'll definitely buy this fireseed spirit mushroom!!"

The words he said were heard to everyone around them, causing Zhao Xiluo and the rest to look stunned. Since they didn't know the circumstances around the two, they didn't understand the situation.

"Xinyun suffered a serious wound a while ago and lost her essence fireseed. In order to reform it, we need a fireseed spirit mushroom."

Kou Tingting explained to everyone else. While surprising that Kou Tingting herself knew the predicament of Tang Xinyun, it only showed that the friendship between her and Tang Xinyun really grew in the past two days.

"Oh? Something like that could happen?" Zhao Xiluo asked, "If that's the case, why hasn't the house of Tang..."

He paused here. His understanding of the house of Tang was extremely limited, so whatever the Tang didn't purchase it themselves rather than help sell it on the auction was completely lost on him.



“Hmph!” Bai Yunfei snorted. The circumstances behind Tang Xinyun’s current condition was only told to Zhao Mancha and Chu Qingxue. Not even Tang Qianlei knew about it—not that they ever cared about her in the first place.

But that wasn’t important. The Tang might not do anything, but Bai Yunfei certainly wouldn’t let the opportunity slip away from him. This fireseed spirit mushroom....he had to have it!!

“This fireseed spirit mushroom will start at a price of sixty-thousand primal stones. Let the bidding begin!!”

Lu Fan immediately started the bidding, causing everyone in the audience to shut up straight away as they waited for the first bidder to make their move.

“A hundred-thousand!!”

Just seconds after the silence began and when several people were debating just how much money they should bid for, a loud voice made a declaration of their own bid. The price he gave out was so high that everyone else’s bid died straight away in their throat.

The very first bid increased the initial price by forty-thousand primal stones!!

Everyone immediately turned towards the source of the person who made the bid.

The person in question was the young man that had been asleep in his chair. The very same person with the last name of Mo and companion to Lin Dongxiao!!

No longer was his face calm like before. A look of utmost glee covered his entire face, and even his eyes had a strong glint of desire. Like Bai Yunfei, he just had to have this fireseed spirit mushroom!!

# Chapter 318: Bidding War

---

Throughout the entire auction, this young man was practically asleep for it all as if it didn't interest him. But when the fireseed spirit mushroom appeared, he looked just as determined to buy this item as anyone else.

The fact that he'd make a bid forty-thousand primal stones higher than the initial price was completely unexpected, though.

A hundred-thousand primal stones! Even if they were all low grade ones, that was still the same as using ten high grade primal stones! It'd take any middling school several years in order to build up their coffers for such a sum.

And so it wasn't very surprising to see that the first bid essentially silence the entire auction house. For half a minute, no one else made a bid of their own.

Plenty of people were trying to figure out who this person was. He didn't look like someone from the Top Ten Prodigies, but still, no one dared assume he was weak either.

He wasn't bothering to hide his aura, so those with exceptional senses could clearly sense that he was a Soul Exalt at the very least.

Even if the audience were willing to ignore his status, the price he called out was already more than enough to cause everyone else to lament and give up by itself.

At last, when fifty seconds went by, someone from in front of the podium called out their bid.

“One hundred and ten thousand!”

The one who spoke was an old man dressed in purple. Zhao Xiluo said before that this man was the elder to a major school of some sort. Though the school wasn't one of the top ten schools on the continent, it was still considered a top-notch school. Even the old man's price wasn't unreasonable, as it drove up the price by a good

ten thousand.

The light in everyone's eyes gleamed brightly--at last, there was a challenger! Turning their heads back to the first bidder, everyone waited for his reaction.

The young man in question smiled. With only a glance at the elder who was bidding against him now, the young man waited two seconds before making a nonchalant bid.

“A hundred and fifty thousand!”

A price jump of forty-thousand primal stones!!

The look on the elder's face hardened for a moment as he casted a sharp look at the young man. When he saw the smile on the young man's face along with a nod, the light in the old man's eyes flickered for several moments as if debating between his options.

Then, he shook his head and said no more.

The other figures who were also debating if they should compete for the fireseed spirit mushroom gave the young man a look too. One by one, they all decided to give up on the idea.

Even after calling out a second price of a hundred and fifty thousand primal stones, the expression on the young man's face didn't change in the slightest. It was as if such a sum didn't matter to him at all. If he could do such a thing as that, everyone else couldn't help but look at him in a more respectful light.

Once more, the auction house grew silent.

This time, no one could possibly fight the first man on this--was what everyone was thinking.

But....

“I bid two high-earth tier soul armaments!!”

A voice declared with such determination that it alarmed everyone; including the young man who found his own smile frozen to the spot.

“It’s...it’s him again!!”

Thought everyone again as they swung their heads towards Bai Yunfei.

Ignoring the stares of everyone else, Bai Yunfei took out the two soul armaments he had in mind and waited for the worker to come running to him when asked for.

“Lord Bai, if I may ask what you wish for?” The man asked. He was a servant under the Tang, so he knew who Bai Yunfei was.

“Haha, If I can bother you to have those two soul armaments evaluated by the seniors behind you, that’d be nice.” Bai Yunfei smiled before handing a seven inch dagger and a purple and black colored claw type soul armament to him.

The dagger’s stats:

Equipment Grade: Low Earth

Elemental Affinity: Metal

Upgrade Level: +10

Attack: 700

Additional Attack: 360

Soul Compatibility: 10%

+10 Additional Effect: Increase attack by 200.

Upgrade Requirement: 96 Soulpoints

The claw’s stats:

Equipment Grade: Mid Earth

Elemental Affinity: Lightning

Upgrade Level: +9

Attack: 950

Additional Attack: 350

Soul Compatibility: 9%

Upgrade Requirement: 105 Soulpoints

These two items were among one of the four soul armaments he got from the two beast tamers and man from the Soul Refining

School back in Curopia City. Claw type soul armaments weren't weapons Bai Yunfei was prone to use, so he didn't bother to upgrade it to +10 just in case he wanted to trade it. If an abnormal additional effect were to appear, trading the soul armament would be a very unwise move.

“Yunfei....”

A hesitant voice spoke out to Bai Yunfei again. Turning his head to look at Tang Xinyun, he smiled, “Don't worry, Xinyun. This isn't much to me, really. What's important right now is getting that fireseed spirit mushroom.”

And so he handed the two soul armaments over to the auction workers so that the three evaluators in the back could make a judgement.

.....

“It's him again! That brat....I've never seen him before! Elder Wei, do you know him?” Lin Dongxiao turned his shocked eyes away from Bai Yunfei and towards the elder behind him.

Like Lin Dongxiao, the elder was surprised as well. His eyes lingered on Bai Yunfei for a moment before he closed his eyes and shook his head.

“Hm, is he some sort of kid pretending to be a weakling?” Lin Dongxiao laughed. “Brother Mo, seems like he's fighting you now! He fought me for the wind squaller, and now you for the fireseed spirit mushroom. Though weak, I'm sure his family or school is beyond strong, what do you think?”

The man with the last name of Mo continued to stare at the three old men evaluating the two soul armaments for some time. “I must have that fireseed spirit mushroom. If someone else wants to fight for it, then we'll fight for it like how the auction house wants us to. Let's see how much those two soul armaments are worth first.”

“You're still planning on bidding?!” Lin Dongxiao exclaimed at

first. “Wow! We’re both junior headmasters, so why are you that much richer than I am? Just trying to bid for that wind squaller was enough to make the elder behind me annoyed, how...how annoying!”

.....

Minutes later, the three old men finally came to a conclusion. The two soul armaments Bai Yunfei was offering up was worth a grand total of a hundred and sixty-five thousand primal stones!

The confirmation of their prices stunned the entire auction house. Everyone turned to look at Bai Yunfei with great confusion; although he wasn’t very strong, he was able to bring out three earth tier soul armaments without a moment’s doubt.

This was an act that was enough for many people to start planning on the best way to try and make friends with him.

The rest of the auction house turned their heads back to the other man to see how he’d respond.

He didn’t fail to disappoint. As soon as Lu Fan announced the value of the two soul armaments, the young man could be seen with a smile on his face.

Without hesitation, he immediately spoke out, “Two hundred thousand!”

“Bzz....” Another furious discussion exploded into being as everyone started to talk to one another. The auction today was far too stimulating for their tastes--some of the audience were starting to doubt their own reality.

This time, the crowd wasn’t sure that the young man would win the bid and turned their heads back towards Bai Yunfei.

From the other side of the auction house, Bai Yunfei was surprised to see his competitor make yet another bid without hesitation. Thinking about the situation for a second, Bai Yunfei beckoned for the worker holding onto both soul armaments back

towards him.

When he stored the soul armaments away, everyone in the audience grew disappointed as they thought that Bai Yunfei was giving up.

Everyone thought that he would've pulled out another high-earth tier soul armament!

But then, the very next words Bai Yunfei spoke brought the entire audience house into a frenzy!

No sooner did Bai Yunfei store away the two soul armaments did his hand move again to take out an orange-lit broadsword from within his space ring. With it in hand, he deposited it onto the tray of the worker in front of him.

“I bid a low-heaven tier soul armament!”

# Chapter 319: Shocking Everyone

---

“I bid a low-heaven tier soul armament!”

Those eight words were like a blast of thunder to the ears of the entire audience. Besieged by waves of emotion, their hearts and minds were in utter turmoil now.

“Did...did I hear that right? What’d he say?”

“He...he...he just said he’s bidding a low-heaven tier soul armament!”

“But...but how? Does he really have one?”

“.....”

The entire auction house was split between two reactions. One group were convinced that they misheard, and the other group was confident that Bai Yunfei was wrong. A heaven tier soul armament for a fireseed spirit mushroom? That wasn’t worth it at all.

This was a heaven tier soul armament they were talking about!

A good majority of the crowd were tongue-tied while the minority was relatively more calm in their reactions. Their expression had only shifted slightly when Bai Yunfei brought out the sword, but rather than concentrating on the sword itself, they were starting to evaluate Bai Yunfei himself.

Finally, a clear amount of hesitation was visible on the lips of the man’s smile. Turning his head, he sent a curious glance over to where Bai Yunfei was.

The broadsword’s stats:

Equipment Grade: Mid Earth

Elemental Affinity: Earth

Upgrade Level: +10

Attack: 1100

Additional Attack: 600



Soul Compatibility: 10%

+10 Additional Effect: Increase attack by an additional 350.

Upgrade Requirement: 115 Soulpoints

Like the other two soul armaments, this broadsword came from the spoils of war from Curopia City. It was also the best item he got, and the +10 additional effect wasn't conspicuous at all with how it could only increase attack. But at the same time, because it could increase attack, the sword was already beyond the 2000 attack range and could be considered as a low-heaven tier soul armament.

Though he used two earth tier soul armaments, Bai Yunfei could've used some slightly more inferior soul armament to do the job and exchange them for the same amount of primal stones since they were basically a dime a dozen for him. But the fact that the other man was willing to bid three times now was a clear indication that he was extremely determined to buy the fireseed spirit mushroom as well. The other man was basically spending primal stones like dirt on the ground. And with how he was slowly increasing the price each time, the man would surely find a time when he could go no further.

Though the broadsword didn't hold much value to him, it was still a heaven tier soul armament. As it were, several of his other high-earth tier soul armaments were comparable in level to it, so trading it for a fireseed spirit mushroom shouldn't be a problem. If that really wasn't enough, then he'd just throw in the two high-earth tier soul armaments. And if even that wasn't enough, he still had more soul armaments in his pile.

As long as he could get the fireseed spirit mushroom, using up all of his soul armaments for it wouldn't be too bad of a deal.

"Yunfei, don't....how can you use a heaven tier soul armament for this..."

The later half to Tang Xinyun's words were slightly rushed as she

tried to stop Bai Yunfei, but he shook his head with a smile, “Don’t worry, Xinyun. I’ll definitely get that fireseed spirit mushroom for you.”

Just the sight of her was enough to make the hardened look in Bai Yunfei’s eyes soften, “I said it before, if I ever see an opportunity to help you regain your essence fireseed, I’ll latch on and won’t let go!”

While Tang Xinyun tried to figure out what to say, Bai Yunfei’s hand grabbed hold of her slightly cold hands, “I know what you want to say, but remember my answer from before. It’s worth it!”

It’s worth it!

They were only three words, but those three words brought a shiver to Tang Xinyun’s body. Feeling the heat from Bai Yunfei’s hand travel through her own, Tang Xinyun didn’t feel as shy or as frenetic as before whenever he did one of these ‘courageous’ actions. Instead, she felt a feeling of warmth. A warmth that enveloped and tugged at her heart with a sensation of happiness like never before.

Left with nothing other to say to him other than a ‘yes’, her head looked back down to the ground, though her left hand remained where it was in the warmth of Bai Yunfei’s hand.

Zhao Xiluo and Kou Tingting stared at Bai Yunfei as if he had grown a second head. In time, a light went off in their heads before a knowing smile grew on both of their faces.

Although Bai Yunfei’s actions seemed rather preposterous, the entire group couldn’t help but feel admiration for him--Zhong Liyan and Yang Lin most especially. The two of them were without a doubt admiring Bai Yunfei during their strange looks as well.

Bai Yunfei hadn’t even blinked an eye before he agreed to trade a heaven tier soul armament for a fireseed spirit mushroom. Using two high-earth tier soul armaments was already a bad trade for the

item, but the fact that he was doing so so that Tang Xinyun could reform her essence fireseed? Neither Zhong Liyan or Yang Lin had the same amount of drive as Bai Yunfei between the two of them.

As things were right now, Bai Yunfei was at the center of attention for the entire auction house. Though many were unable to hear what Bai Yunfei was saying, the more sharp sighted fellows could infer what was going on and began to re-evaluate the situation. The ones who could tell who Tang Xinyun was turned to look at Tang Jing and started to guess that Bai Yunfei had to have some sort of relationship with the Tang.

Even Tang Jing himself was staring at Bai Yunfei and Tang Xinyun in shock. A light of understanding soon hit him, and afterwards, Tang Jing began to think hard about something.

“Haha, so it was for a single woman....” The man with the last name of Mo smirked in amusement, “Who knew that this guy would be a lovestruck idiot....”

“What...what kind of person is this brat! Is his head even fully there? Who’d trade a heaven tier soul armament for a fireseed spirit mushroom? They might be extremely rare, but only to those that could use it! A bid of a hundred and fifty thousand primal stones was already pushing the limits, but that brat....” Lin Dongxiao muttered as he stared at Bai Yunfei. His face was twisted up with all sorts of emotions, but rather than admiration like everyone else, Lin Dongxiao was feeling that Bai Yunfei was an idiot.

Turning his head back to his companion, he smiled, “Haha, brother Mo. What...do you plan to do now?”

The young man narrowed his eyes in thought to think. When he was about to say something, a worker from the auction house hurried up to reach Lu Fan. He began to whisper into Lu Fan’s ears, and before long, Lu Fan himself straightened his back to make an announcement to the audience, “Ladies and gentlemen!

The owner of the fireseed spirit mushroom has decided to accept a low-heaven tier soul armament, so that concludes the bid!”

That was the expected answer. Who wouldn't take such a deal? A low-heaven tier soul armament for a fireseed spirit mushroom; a bargain like that would make anyone laugh themselves awake if they were dreaming.

Bai Yunfei let out a sigh of relief at Lu Fan's announcement, but Zhong Liyan and the others were still looking at him strangely.

To waste a low-heaven tier soul armament for a fireseed spirit mushroom and be happy about it...what a wastrel!

“You can reform your essence fireseed now, Xinyun.” Bai Yunfei's hand clutched tightly to her own hand in elation.

“Yes!” Tang Xinyun replied. Like Bai Yunfei, she was excited to see the results, but unlike Bai Yunfei, she realized the looks everyone was giving them. Her face grew red as she took her hand back from Bai Yunfei's. Fiddling with the hems of her robes, Tang Xinyun tried her best to look away from Bai Yunfei while Kou Tingting started to give her a teasing laugh.

With the fireseed spirit mushroom sold, the auction for today was finally over. After Lu Fan's announcement, the entire audience looked to one another and began to talk about today's events.

The primary focus of conversation had been the two final items of the day. Both of them had been bought by Bai Yunfei, so that left everyone guessing just who he was.

A mysterious young man that participated in an auction by bidding with soul armaments, that was a feat everyone was startled by.

Bai Yunfei took the broadsword back with him, since the fireseed spirit mushroom wasn't here yet, there was no point in giving the broadsword away yet.

Soon, a twenty-seven or twenty-eight year old man walked up to Bai Yunfei. “Lord Bai, I am Wu Gang. The fireseed spirit mushroom is from my house of Wu. My father has instructed me to make your acquaintance, lord Bai.”

“Oh? So when will the fireseed spirit mushroom arrive? I wish to make the transaction as quickly as possible.” Bai Yunfei nodded before getting to the crux of the problem.

“Please be at ease, lord Bai. An escort will bringing the fireseed spirit mushroom into Mo City tomorrow afternoon.”

“Very well then. As long as I get the fireseed spirit mushroom, I’ll be happy to give you the heaven tier soul armament.”

His words gave Wu Gang comfort. He and his family were actually far more impatient than Bai Yunfei. In fact, many of them wanted nothing more than for the fireseed spirit mushroom to arrive in Mo City so that they could get the heaven tier soul armament already.

More than half the audience was gone already, so Bai Yunfei and Wu Gang exchanged several more lines with each other before walking with one another out the building.

“One moment if you will, my friend.”

Right as the group reached the exit of the auction house, a single person called out from Bai Yunfei.

Pausing in his footsteps, Bai Yunfei turned around in surprise.

The one who called him was the young man with the last name of Mo!

## Chapter 320: Mo Ni

---

There was a total of three people that greeted Bai Yunfei's group. The first was the one with the last name of Mo, and the other two was Lin Dongxiao, the junior headmaster of the Beast Taming School and the elder with the last name of Wei.

“Haha, Zhong Liyan, Yang Lin, and Zhao Xiluo, I never thought to see you all gathered here today....Ah, sister Tingting, you're here too! It's been a long time, you've gotten prettier since the last time...”

Lin Dongxiao was already greeting Zhong Liyan and the others before he was in front of them. His greeting seemed to distress Kou Tingting, as her eyebrows knitted together when she heard him speak. Clearly, this was a sign of her not liking this speaker; but rather than say anything, she chose to stay quiet and nod her head due to her polite nature.

“We were only just seeing the sights, unlike you, brother Lin. You're here on business for your school, I take it? How formidable you are, brother Lin. Even though we've the confidence of our school's elders, we cannot compare to you.” Zhong Liyan greeted him politely.

By the side, Yang Lin and Zhao Xiluo spoke out to him in greeting as well, but theirs were far more simplistic. Lin Dongxiao didn't seem to even notice their greetings, however.

After all the greetings were made, the young man with the last name of Mo saluted Bai Yunfei, “I am Mo Ni, by what name may I call you by, sire?”

“Mo Ni? As in the same two characters used to mean ‘bosom buddies’?” Bai Yunfei just had to ask.

“Haha, those same two characters.” Mo Ni smiled. It was a handsome smile that corresponded well with his similarly

handsome face. Surely, if any daughter from a rich or noble family were to see his smile, they would be immediately smitten.

There was however, no change in expression from Tang Xinyun or Kou Tingting. In fact, neither of the two spared him a glance even.

Bai Yunfei didn't have a bad impression of Mo Ni. The two of them might've fought over the fireseed spirit mushroom, but the look on Mo Ni's face didn't look at all bitter about it, unlike Lin Dongxiao during the auction.

So, Bai Yunfei replied, "Bai Yunfei."

A gleam of light flickered across Mo Ni's eyes as he cross-referenced the name with every single thing he knew. Upon coming up nothing, Mo Ni gave Bai Yunfei one look before looking to Tang Xinyun next. "Brother Bai, I presume you're trading a heaven tier soul armament for a fireseed spirit mushroom for the sake of forming an essence fireseed for miss Tang?"

At first, Bai Yunfei was alarmed that Mo Ni guessed what the fireseed spirit mushroom was for, but when he really thought about it, the guess wasn't all too strange.

"Haha, you're indeed correct, lord Mo. That is its purpose."

Mo Ni shook his head as if to praise Bai Yunfei, "The fact that you're able to do this much for a beautiful woman is awe-inspiring, brother Bai! The house of Tang would surely have a great son-in-law with you..."

"Uh...." Bai Yunfei coughed in embarrassment while Tang Xinyun's face grew red behind him. She wanted to say something, but what exactly wasn't known to her.

"Haha, you praise me too much, lord Mo. I was only doing what I felt was right." Bai Yunfei tried to laugh it off.

He actually wanted to say that it wasn't a bad trade-off. But to say that here would sound like he was bragging, so he decided against

it.

“Haha, well, I just wanted to get to know brother Bai today. I’ve still several other matters to take care of, so I hope that we’ll meet again in better circumstances, brother Bai.”

“May we meet again!” Bai Yunfei nodded.

Mo Ni and the other two soon left the auction house, leaving Bai Yunfei and his group behind. Bai Yunfei was confused by the interaction, however; was he trying to make friends with him?

“Brother Zhong, who is this Mo Ni? I’ve never heard of him before, have you? If he’s with Lin Dongxiao, is he perhaps a new prodigy from the Beast Taming School?” Zhao Xiluo commented as he watched the three men leave the auction house.

The other man shook his head in reply, “I don’t know either, but he’s probably not from the Beast Taming School....I think the Mo comes from the house of Mo from the the Western Frontier Province to the farthest place west of the continent.”

“The house of Mo from the Western Frontier Province?” Zhao Xiluo repeated, “That family has kept to itself in its corner and rarely makes friends with anyone else in the empire. If that Mo Ni is from the house of Mo, him being a prodigy isn’t too strange then. But....since when did the Mo and the Beast Taming School have any relationship with one another?”

Zhong Liyan shrugged, “How should I know? Take a look yourself when you’ve the chance.”

They were outside now. The group was getting ready to walk onto the main streets as a single figure in black approached them from behind. He moved off to the side as if trying to get around the group and leave as though he was in a hurry.

He pushed against Bai Yunfei as he slid past him, but before the figure could get too far away, Bai Yunfei’s hand snapped up to grab hold of his wrist.



Twisting the man's wrist, Bai Yunfei wrenched it upwards, causing the arm to jerk up and unclench, revealing a single space ring that was previously clutched in it.

"What's the meaning of this?" Bai Yunfei asked the man in black.

When everyone gave him a look, they were startled to realize that the man was the very same lazy youth who tried to bid against Lin Dongxiao for the baby wind squaller.

"Hehe, Ol'Bai, you've gotten a lot better after a year!"

Despite being caught by Bai Yunfei, the young man didn't seem to be flustered at all. If anything, there was a smile on his face, and what he said had surprised Bai Yunfei himself.

Bai Yunfei didn't recognize the face, but the voice and the nickname was more than enough to allow a smirk to crawl onto his face.

"Jing Mingfeng?"

Bai Yunfei and Tang Xinyun asked in conjunction.

Their conjoined reactions earned a look of surprise from the young man at last. "Wow, Ol'Bai, when did you and her have such coordination like that?"

It really was Jing Mingfeng!

Loosening his hand, Bai Yunfei let Jing Mingfeng go. "Haha, it really is you, you idiot. I knew you were in Mo City, but I didn't think I'd run into you here of all places. Why is your...."

He pointed a finger at his face as if to ask, "Why are you using a different face?"

Shaking the numbness off in his left arm, Jing Mingfeng laughed, "Hehe, when traveling in this world, safety is very important....I hafta say, Ol'Bai, you've gotten a lot stronger. Did a lot of training, did you? And....a way to hide your strength? Wow, you're really good at that, how'd you manage that? I'd say it's just as good as my

family's.....almost.”

“Er....it’s a little complicated to say, I’ll tell you about it later.” Bai Yunfei waved his hand before turning to introduce him to everyone else. “This is my friend, Jing Mingfeng.”

He introduced the latter to everyone except for Zhao Xiluo, who met him back in Gaoyi City; only that during that time, Jing Mingfeng had a different face so Zhao Xiluo didn’t recognise him now.

From the Treasure Trove, the group split into three. Zhao Xiluo said that he wanted to reminisce with Zhong Liyan and Yang Lin, so the three left together. Tang Xinyun and Kou Tingting wanted to bring the baby wind squaller back to the house of Tang, so the two left with one another.

That left Bai Yunfei and Jing Mingfeng who brought him to a bar so that they could talk over a bottle of wine.

The two soon arrived at a bar. Upon sitting down at a table, the two of them ordered several plates of food and drink and began to talk to each other about their travels.

“And after that, I joined the Crafting School and became the disciple of the previous headmaster.”

A very concise summary of his travels after Gaoyi City was explained to Jing Mingfeng. Of course, the process on how he became Zi Jin’s disciple was chosen selectively and watered down so that it made him look a lot more modest.

“Tsk tsk tsk....” Even despite being given such a short and simple summary, Jing Mingfeng still found reason to click his tongue in amazement. “What a journey! Ol’Bai, not only did you join the Crafting School, you became someone’s personal student! The disciple of headmaster Zi Jin no less. I can’t even find the words to describe your situation....”

“Haha, what about you? What’ve you been doing lately?” Bai

Yunfei sipped a cup of tea. The amount of talking he did was taxing on the tongue, so his drinking was a hint for Jing Mingfeng to start talking about himself.

“I...well, I’ve been wandering wherever I wanted.” Jing Mingfeng shrugged. “I played around in Gaoyi City for a month before heading for Fortucis City. After that, I went to....”

For approximately twenty minutes, Jing Mingfeng gushed over the places he wandered to and spoke stories that left even Bai Yunfei wide-eyed. The stories he told in these minutes alone could fill up an entire manual about traveling!

He waited for Jing Mingfeng to finish speaking before he spoke up next, “Haha, I bet then you ‘earned’ a lot after an entire year of traveling?”

Knowing exactly what Bai Yunfei was hinting at, Jing Mingfeng smirked, “Well of course....don’t you underestimate me. Stealing what’s in front of me isn’t the only thing I know. The continent is huge, and the adventures are endless. My luck isn’t bad either. I only have one or two grand experiences, but the bounty I got were great. I also managed to become a lot stronger as well....”

“Oh?” Bai Yunfei asked, “I know that you’re hiding your strength to be that of a late-stage Soul Warrior. What’s your current strength like right now?”

“My current strength?” Jing Mingfeng smiled.

His eyes narrowed just slightly as he started to concentrate. A faint but powerful bluish-green light began to appear and glow around his person like a candle.

He looked then to the gobsmacked Bai Yunfei, “Hehe, how ‘bout it? Ol’ Bai, how does it compare to you?”

# Chapter 321: A Reunion With Jing Mingfeng!

---

“Late-stage Soul Sprite! And...you’re on the verge of breaking through!!”

Upon sensing Jing Mingfeng’s current level of strength, Bai Yunfei was incredibly shocked. Just a year ago, Jing Mingfeng was only an early-stage Soul Sprite. But now, he was on the verge of making the breakthrough!! A rate of training like that was utterly shocking to hear about.

Pleased as punch at the reaction of Bai Yunfei, Jing Mingfeng smiled, “How ‘bout it? Ol’Bai, I managed to get a lot stronger after almost dying. I only just need a single step more to become a Soul Ancestor, and I’m confident that I’ll be able to do it!”

The absolute pride he had in himself caused Bai Yunfei to calm down immediately. “Haha, it’s really surprising. You’ve must have picked that up during one of your adventures, eh?”

“Of course, you can say it’s quite shocking, really.” Jing Mingfeng snorted. “But lets not talk about that for now. Ol’Bai, how strong are you now? And how are you hiding your strength, I can’t even sense any elements inside your body?”

Bai Yunfei shook his head with a sigh, “I’m not hiding my strength at all. What you’re sensing is correct.”

“Eh? What do you mean by that?”

“What I mean is that there isn’t any elemental fire in my body at all. Not even my essence fireseed is in me....”

“What?!” Jing Mingfeng exclaimed, “Ol’Bai, are you messing with me? What happened?”

“Well, about several months ago....”

Without hiding any details of the story, Bai Yunfei recounted the events of what happened outside of Curopia City to Jing Mingfeng.

“You...you’re telling me you used your essence fireseed as a price to use this ‘lifebound armament’ to kill two Soul Ancestors and a Soul Exalt?!”

Jing Mingfeng’s eyes were as large as dinner plates. He simply couldn’t believe his ears on what he was hearing, and he was clearly looking at Bai Yunfei in a state of absolute befuddlement.

It took Jing Mingfeng several minutes and a long drawn-out breath before he was able to speak again. “Ol’ Bai, I really don’t even know what to say to you...Killing people beyond your level feels like it’s to be expected from you now. In the past, you could kill people just a little bit stronger than you, but now, you’re skipping levels entirely....that’s a little....”

“Haha, it’s all because of my lifebound armament, that’s all.” Bai Yunfei laughed, “I’m just very lucky. I was in a special situation, so I was able to kill that person.”

“A kill is a kill, what do you mean by being ‘lucky’? Even luck is a type of strength. Either way, talk about depressing! I wanted to catch up to you, but then you’re already a Soul Ancestor....” Jing Mingfeng bemoaned for a moment before asking the next question on his mind, “Then what are you going to do now? Can your essence fireseed be restored?”

“Yea, I’m having my essence fireseed heal in my lifebound armament. It should recover soon enough.”

Jing Mingfeng let out a sigh of relief, “Well, that’s good then....what exactly is this ‘lifebound armament’ of yours? I’ve never heard of such a thing before. Can I see it?”

“Er....” Bai Yunfei frowned; he felt a little embarrassed confessing to Jing Mingfeng that his lifebound armament was the brick they used before.

“It’s...not very convenient to show you right now, I’ll let you see it later.”

“Alright then.” Jing Mingfeng nodded in misunderstanding. To his knowledge, it wasn’t a good idea to show the lifebound armament with Bai Yunfei’s essence fireseed inside, so he didn’t ask again to see it.

“Oh, one more thing.” He segued with a mirthful smirk, “So, Ol’ Bai....not only did you join the Crafting School with Xinyun, you brought her home as well? Tell me, when did you get so chummy with her??”

“....” Finding it hard to look at Jing Mingfeng straight in the face, Bai Yunfei tried to explain, “There’s....there’s nothing going on between Xinyun and I....”

“Ah shut up, who’s going to believe that? Not me, obviously.” Jing Mingfeng snorted, “I could see how lovey-dovey you two were getting in the auction house. And that fireseed spirit mushroom, weren’t you buying it for her? You said it before yourself, she’s in that state now because she saved you. With so much going on between the two of you, are you really going to try and say there’s nothing between you and her?”

“I....” Though he tried as hard as he could to think of an explanation, nothing came up for him to say.

But knowing that Jing Mingfeng was on the verge of teasing him again, Bai Yunfei quickly changed the topic, “Anyways, what are you doing in the auction? I heard that to even participate, you’d need the approval of the Tang....”

A pleased smile replaced the mocking smile on Jing Mingfeng’s face, “Hehe, I’m an important client, of course I’d be able to take part.”

“Client?” Bai Yunfei asked, “You’re telling me you’ve something to sell?”

“Course. Let me tell you, my items aren’t your ordinary stuff. Just today, three of the items sold were from me! And I’ve still

even more precious stuff to dish out!”

“That many? Were they ‘spoils’ from your adventure too?”

“Hehe, most of them. But there’s some that I worked hard to get too.”

“I see now, no wonder you were able to amass so many primal stones to bid for that wind squaller.”

Jing Mingfeng’s eyes brightened at the mention of the wind squaller, “Ol’ Bai, you bought that baby wind squaller probably because you didn’t want to see someone from the Beast Taming School get it, right? What do you plan to do with it? Why don’t you form a soul contract with it? It’s a wind type, so it’ll suit you well since you’re a fire type....”

The look of longing on his face was far too much for Bai Yunfei to endure, “You want it?” He laughed.

“Well....hehe, I can trade you something nice for it. If you want primal stones, wait until the stuff I gave to the Tang to sell. I’ll give you your primal stones then...” Jing Mingfeng rubbed his hands in slight expectation.

It would appear that Jing Mingfeng really wanted the baby wind squaller.

For a while, Bai Yunfei just stared at Jing Mingfeng to the point where Jing Mingfeng felt slightly scared, but then;

“No problems then, the wind squaller is yours!”

“Really?!” Jing Mingfeng cried out, “Haha, you’re definitely a brother of mine! But, I don’t have anything that could compare to your high-earth tier soul armament.

“So how about this then, I’ve plenty of good stuff, they’re not as rare as your stuff, but feel free and take some. What type of soul armament would you like, or maybe you’d like a soul skill!”

Though surprised to hear that Jing Mingfeng had plenty of

treasure, Bai Yunfei shook his head to refuse them all. “I want the....Soul Concealment Art!”

“.....”

The look on Jing Mingfeng’s face froze completely still. The smile on his face abated somewhat as he furrowed his eyebrows, “Ol’ Bai, I...I can’t promise you that. I may want the wind squaller, but....I can’t trade you the Soul Concealment Art for it.”

Thinking about it a little more, Jing Mingfeng sighed again. “Ol’ Bai, I’ll be honest with you. The family rules about ‘letting no outsiders know’ don’t really mean much to me anymore. But still. The Soul Concealment Art is completely different than the Face Changing Technique I gave you before. It’s my biggest crutch. It’s not that I can’t give it to you, but....”

His voice trailed off here, but Bai Yunfei knew what he was going to say.

While the two were good friends, they weren’t so good of friends that he’d be willing to divulge the secrets of his family to him.

Nodding, Bai Yunfei replied, “I know what you’re saying, but you didn’t let me finish. Aside from the wind squaller, I’ll happily give you a few other things for it!”



# Chapter 322: Trading for the Soul

## Concealment Art

---

Mentioning the Soul Concealment Art wasn't something Bai Yunfei had only thought up on the spot. Since the two of them were in Mo City, Bai Yunfei knew it'd only be a matter of time before he met with Jing Mingfeng again, so he had that plan thought up. Jing Mingfeng's ability to completely hide his presence and aura was something Bai Yunfei himself coveted. The last time, he got the Face Changing Technique, but now that he had his fill of it, it was time for the next thing. So of course, he'd aim for the Soul Concealment Art.

As such, Bai Yunfei had already an assortment of considerably expensive items ready to be traded. The baby wind squaller was nothing more than another gambling chip on the table.

In his original plan of action, Bai Yunfei was prepared to find another time to slowly make negotiations with Jing Mingfeng. But since Jing Mingfeng mentioned that he wanted the wind squaller, it'd be better to make the deal now rather than later.

"Oh? What other things? Show it to me and I'll see if it's worth trading the Soul Concealment Art." The 'incentive' Bai Yunfei mentioned was more than enough to pique Jing Mingfeng's interest.

Smiling, Bai Yunfei began to take out several items from his soul ring. The first was a black-jeweled pendant, a black and silver ring, two similar-shaped blue bracelets, and even a small black stud earring.

A bright glint of interest sparked to life in Jing Mingfeng's eyes as he stared at the objects, "Ol'Bai, don't tell me these accessories are...."

"They are. These are some of the things I got after joining the

Crafting School. I'll let you choose from here, all of them are special soul armaments that can increase your speed." Bai Yunfei deposited the six items onto the table for Jing Mingfeng to look at. "Their effects are a lot stronger than the ones you're wearing now!"

From the start of when he got the Equipment Upgrade Technique, Bai Yunfei kept these speed-increasing accessories. They were the best he ever got, so the fact that he was willing to trade them now was a sign of his good faith. The ring and bracelet were both +11, and the black pendant and stud earring were +12!

It'd be a waste to talk about the +11 equipment, so here are the two +12 equipment stats.

Pendant:

Equipment Grade: High

Elemental Affinity: None

Upgrade Level: +12

Additional Attribute: +130 Agility

Soul Compatibility: 25%

+10 Additional Effect: Incrase agility by 60.

+12 Additional Effect: Increase movement speed by 15%.

Upgrade Requirement: 62 Soulpoints

.....

Black Studded Earring:

Equipment Grade: High

Elemental Affinity: None

Upgrade Level: +12

Additional Attribute: +135 Agility

Soul Compatibility: 25%

+10 Additional Effect: Increase movement speed by 4%.

+12 Additional Effect: By using soulforce, increase movement and attacking speed by 30% for a total of 30 seconds.

Cooldown of 50 seconds.

.....

Of the two +12 accessories, the pendant's effects were the most common, but the effects of the +12 studded earrings required active thought in order to make use of its effect to increase movement and attacking speed by 30%. This was without a doubt a great trump card to have in a pinch.

It was with impatience that Jing Mingfeng took off the accessories he was wearing to put on the newer ones. With them worn, his eyes began to glow brightly as he took notice of the substantial change happening in his body with glee.

He put on the ring, bracelet, and pendants as swift as swift, but the studded earrings required two seconds of additional observation before he put it on with no shame at all.

He looked pleased with the cool and mysterious earrings, as he turned and looked at his two ears in a mirror in admiration. The pain from making the holes for the earring was practically negligible for soul cultivators due to their higher pain tolerance.

After recollecting himself Jing Mingfeng's figure suddenly phased into motion. In no time, he reappeared several meters away besides the door. In another flash of movement, he looped around the room before returning to his seat.

Bai Yunfei could sense a faint trace of elemental wind, but even then, he was completely surprised by Jing Mingfeng's speed. It was very clear to see that he was using some sort of movement type soul skill.

He waited for Jing Mingfeng to settle back down before he asked, "Well? How is it?"

Jing Mingfeng stroked the ring on his right hand with a pleased smile, "Not bad. It's like you said; they're a lot better than the previous ones...Ol'Bai, how'd you come across such powerful soul

armament like these? You may be a part of the Crafting School, but these aren't your everyday stuff. You've only joined the Crafting School a while ago, so how'd you get so many?"

"Haha, outsiders wouldn't understand the internal workings of the Craftin School. Don't you forget, I'm not your 'average' crafter." Bai Yunfei smiled in a way to remind Jing Mingfeng that he was the disciple of the headmaster, meaning that having powerful soul armaments was only natural.

"Oh, I see...." Jing Mingfeng nodded in understanding. He didn't know much about the Crafting School other than what he had heard, so what Bai Yunfei said didn't really invoke much thought from him. It wasn't important in any case, so he found no need to press the issue any more.

"There's one more thing I should tell you." Bai Yunfei pointed a finger at the studded earring on Jing Mingfeng's ear, "There's more to the earring than that meets the eye. It's a very special soul armament. If you push your soulforce into it and think about increasing your speed, you'll notice something special..."

"Eh?" Jing Mingfeng spoke, "What do you mean?"

"Do now, ask later."

"Fine, fine."

Somewhat confused by this set of instructions, Jing Mingfeng touched at the earring. Doing as Bai Yunfei said, he pushed his soulforce towards the earring. As soon as the very notion of 'speeding up' occurred to him, the next sensation that came to him stunned him.

A brilliant gleam of light entered his eyes, and in the next second, his entire body disappeared into a blur as he ran around the room.

It was with reluctance that Jing Mingfeng returned to his seat. Touching the earring, he couldn't help but ask, "Ol'Bai, what...what's going on? Why was I suddenly...."

“Haha, didn’t I tell you it’s a very special soul armament?” Bai Yunfei laughed, “Don’t bother asking why it has such an effect, I can’t explain it to you. All you need to know is that this earring can increase your attacking and moving speed by thirty percent for about thirty seconds. When time’s up, your speed will return back to normal. You’ll have to wait fifty seconds before being able to use it again.”

Jing Mingfeng was even more shocked by Bai Yunfei’s explanation. This was the first he ever heard about such a soul armament; which wasn’t too surprising since he didn’t know much about them.

Thirty seconds soon went by when Jing Mingfeng felt a change occur in his body. When he tried to activate the effects of the earring, he felt nothing change inside, just like Bai Yunfei said. Trying as he might, it was only when fifty seconds passed when he realized the effect was working again.

Now, he truly believed in what Bai Yunfei was saying about the effects.

“Tsk tsk, this earring has a really special usage. I’d call it amazing, really.” Jing Mingfeng declared as he tried to get over his shock. “But this soul armament is probably worth far more than what a high-earth tier soul armament could fetch for. It’s definitely worth a lot to me, but Ol’ Bai, trading this for the Soul Concealment Art is still a little....”

“I know. I didn’t say that I’d be giving you only those soul armaments.” Bai Yunfei waved his hand, “There’s still more. Take a look at....this!”

Without further ado, Bai Yunfei shook his right hand to take out one....no--two soul armaments for Jing Mingfeng!

The Crescent Moon Blades!!

Equipment Grade: Low Earth

Elemental Affinity: Wind

Set Equipment: Left

Upgrade Level: +10

Attack: 630

Additional Attack: 327

Set Effect 1: Freely manipulate the [Right] piece if within 100 meters.

Set Effect 2: If combined with the other piece, increase the equipment grade to Mid Earth with an attack of 998 and an additional attack of 411.

Soul Compatibility: 10%

+10 Additional Effect: When attacking, there is a 10% chance to conjure a single blade of wind.

If the [Left] and [Right] pieces are together, increase this chance to 15% to summon three blades of wind.

Upgrade Requirement: 83 Soulpoints

(Since the left and right pieces are identical, the right piece's stats will be omitted.)

Letting Jing Mingfeng's eyes rest upon the two new blades in front of him, Bai Yunfei began to explain the usage and effects of the sword. Tossing one of the swords out at random, Bai Yunfei was inadvertently able to get two blades of wind to fly out, cutting one of the nearby stools in half. If not for Jing Mingfeng's quick-witted thinking to parry the other blade of wind, it would've cut straight through the wall.

"Haha, amazing! Absolutely amazing! These two blades are really amazing!" Jing Mingfeng gloated with glee as he held both swords in his hands.

The Crescent Moon Blades were originally low-earth tier, but the two of them combined elevated their levels to mid-earth tier.

And under Bai Yunfei's upgrading, the two swords could be treated as a high-earth tier soul armament when combined!

Seeing how Jing Mingfeng was so pleased with the swords, Bai Yunfei smiled as he prepared himself to give the final two kickers.

"Aside from that, I'll be more than happy to use one of the

Crafting School's secret techniques to refine any soul armament you give me. I will guarantee you that I won't destroy them. I'll improve their efficiency by half over and possibly grant them effects like what that earring can do!!”

“Lastly, I'll promise you that as long as I've the power to, I'll be sure to craft a heaven tier soul armament for you!!”

“.....”

For a while, Jing Mingfeng said nothing. He was absolutely shocked by what Bai Yunfei was offering.

But soon after, the lights in his head turned back on. Giving it some thought, Jing Mingfeng gritted his teeth to say, “You've a deal!”

## Chapter 323: The 'Blackwind' Dagger (First)

---

It was only after a good moment to think that Jing Mingfeng finally agreed to trade.

A baby wind squaller, several speed-increasing accessories, and two blades that he wasn't even expecting. Just these three things were enough to convince him, but Bai Yunfei sweetened the deal with two more clauses.

Improving the might of his current soul armaments by a half!! He had no doubts that Bai Yunfei could deliver on what he said.

If he said he could do it, then he could do it.

Besides, the Blackwind Dagger he was using was already strong, but if it were to be improved by half over...why, that left Jing Mingfeng absolutely giddy at the thought!

But what left him completely unwilling to refuse was the final part to the deal—a very own heaven tier soul armament of his own!

Likewise, Jing Mingfeng didn't doubt that Bai Yunfei couldn't do this. Bai Yunfei's future was practically unlimited, so making himself known under the entire continent was only a matter of time. So if he could get a heaven tier soul armament...that'd be great!

A heaven tier soul armament!

Jing Mingfeng knew that if he were to have one of those, his strength would increase by at least twofold!

With each new chip Bai Yunfei threw onto the table, Jing Mingfeng wasn't willing to decline at all since his strength would increase with each chip.

.....

Jing Mingfeng's answer elicited a secret sigh of relief from Bai



Yunfei. If what he offered still wasn't enough for the Soul Concealment Art wasn't enough, nothing would.

After playing around with the Crescent Moon Blade, Jing Mingfeng stored them away into his space ring and took out a small black dagger.

Halfway through tossing the dagger, Jing Mingfeng started to warn Bai Yunfei, "Ol'Bai, that's my best soul armament, so take it easy when you refine it. Don't you dare break it!"

Bai Yunfei couldn't help but smile at Jing Mingfeng's worried expression, "Don't worry. If I say it's no problem, then it's no problem. I'll be sure to improve it to your liking!"

He smiled as he reached his hand up to grab the dagger, but as soon as it touched his hand, the notification that popped up for it stunned him.

Equipment Grade: Low Heaven

Elemental Affinity: Wind, Darkness

Attack: 2300

Equipment Effect: After a successful strike, inflict a curse onto the foe and drop all attributes by 5% for a duration of one minute.

Effect cannot be stacked.

Upgrade Requirement: 140 Soulpoints

This dagger was a heaven tier soul armament!! And one with an effect!

Even Bai Yunfei's Ardent Sun Glove didn't have an equipment effect like this dagger. Even after becoming Zi Jin's disciple, none of the heaven tier soul armaments he saw had an effect, but that was due to the rarity of soul armaments in the first place. They couldn't exactly give soul armaments of that level as gifts to every disciple.

Staring strangely at Bai Yunfei, Jing Mingfeng couldn't help but ask, "What's wrong, ol'Bai?"

“Eh? Oh, it’s nothing.”

Came the reply. Quelling the raging emotions in his mind, Bai Yunfei looked over at the dagger in his hand again for a second look. “Hey, Mingfeng, never would’ve thought you’d get your hands on a heaven tier soul armament. I’m at a loss for words really...”

Jing Mingfeng was surprised at his response, but then he sighed, “Well, it’s no wonder you’re from the Crafting School if you can see the grade of my Blackwind Dagger. Haha, this is my most precious treasure, if you can improve the power of it, then I’ll thank you as much as you want for it!”

The fact that he was so willing to hand over his heaven tier soul armament without a moment’s hesitation was just a testament to how much he trusted Bai Yunfei.

“Ah, no worries, I’ll do what I said I’d do.” Bai Yunfei nodded as he put away the dagger. He promised that he’d upgrade the attack of the dagger by half over, but in terms of overall ‘might’, increasing that by a half over wasn’t too hard.

Even an increase of a hundred points would be quite the substantial increase.

With the dagger put away, Bai Yunfei was surprised to see a scroll tossed over to him by Jing Mingfeng. Taking a look at it, he was surprised to see the writing on the gray parchment.

“This...”

“Weren’t you interested in it? As per usual, I’ll give you an entire night to look it over, alright? Just give it back to me by tomorrow morning.”

.....

By the time Bai Yunfei and Jing Mingfeng returned to the Tang residence, the streets were already lit with lanterns to ward off the coming night. Since Jing Mingfeng was a ‘client’ of the auction

house, Tang Jing was of course acquainted with him. What Tang Jing didn't expect to see was that Jing Mingfeng was actually friends with Bai Yunfei as well. At his request, Tang Jing had the closest courtyard to where Bai Yunfei was arranged for Jing Mingfeng.

The two of them walked into Bai Yunfei's courtyard only to see Tang Xinyun and Kou Tingting already there. Both women were seated at the table as if discussing something.

"Oh, Yunfei, you're back. We were just planning on looking for you." Tang Xinyun's face lit up when she saw Bai Yunfei step into the courtyard.

Jing Mingfeng smiled, "Haha, is thinking about Ol'Bai all you do after all this time, Xinyun?"

Noticing that Tang Xinyun's face was starting to redden, Bai Yunfei smiled, "Don't listen to his nonsense, Xinyun. What were you talking about?"

"Oh, Tingting and I wanted to wake up the wind squaller, but we didn't want to do it without your approval, so we were planning to go find you and ask." Tang Xinyun pointed at the small box on the table where the baby wind squaller laid dormant inside.

Jing Mingfeng's eyes brightened at the mention of the baby wind squaller. Honing in on the box, he looked almost like a starving wolf staring lecherously at a beautiful woman with saliva dripping out from his mouth.

An internal sweatdrop rolled down Bai Yunfei's head as he watched Jing Mingfeng's reaction. "Well, since I gave you it already, go ahead and wake it up. Find a way to make a soul contract with it, if you fail, that's not my problem."

He turned to Tang Xinyun next to explain the situation, "I've given the baby wind squaller to Jing Mingfeng. It's his now."

"What do you mean you gave it to me? Didn't we trade treasures

for it?” Jing Mingfeng grumbled unhappily at his explanation. Striding for the table, Jing Mingfeng took the box with the wind squaller and turned his head back to Bai Yunfei, “Ol’ Bai, what do I need to do to wake it up? Can’t be easy as calling it, right?”

“Haha, well, you can try that if you want.” Bai Yunfei laughed. “There’s a small bottle in the box, let the wind squaller sniff the medicine inside and it’ll wake up.”

“Oh, I see! Found it!”

.....

Gingerly holding the small wind squaller in his hands, Jing Mingfeng waited for it to slowly shake its head and open its eyes. By now, everyone else in the courtyard were gathered around the table to take a closer look at it.

The little creature now had its eyes wide open. Its eyes were misty from just waking up and were without clear focus. In time, it was able to register Jing Mingfeng who was right in front of him, but rather than looking fearfully at him, the wind squaller looked favorably onto him and licked his cheek with its tiny tongue.

Everything was going in accordance to what Lu Fan said back in the auction house. The soulbeast had gone straight into hibernation after it was born, but it’d imprint onto the very first person it’d see. Since that was Jing Mingfeng, the very first instincts of the wind squaller was to look at him as if he was family.

The wind squaller was standing by itself on the ground now, but it was shaky in its posture as if not yet strong enough to fully supports its own weight. In a worried panic, Jing Mingfeng held onto the soulbeast with arms filled with a greenish light.

The elemental wind coming from him seemed to invigorate the soulbeast to a certain degree. Looking at him with an even more affectionate expression than before, the wind squaller was now

moving excitedly up against Jing Mingfeng while licking at his wrist.

Joy and excitement shone the most prominently in Jing Mingfeng's eyes. While maintaining his hold on the soulbeast with his left hand, his right hand moved to grab a chunk of beef from his space ring.

These were prepared for in advance and in large numbers so that it could serve as a 'welcoming gift' of sorts for the wind squaller.

The aroma of food was clearly enticing to the soulbeast. Looking innocently at Jing Mingfeng for two whole seconds with a twitching nose, the wind squaller then took the chunk of beef into its mouth and swallowed it whole.

Even newly born soulbeasts could eat a bit of meat so that they'd be able to learn to capture prey on their own later on.

It took three chunks of beef for the small soulbeast to finally eat its fill. With a satisfied snort, it turned around onto the ground to look at Jing Mingfeng like a baby to their parent.

With how the wind squaller was treating him, Jing Mingfeng had a look of 'parental love' on his face; causing Bai Yunfei to have the urge to facepalm at the sight.

But when Jing Mingfeng moved to stroke the head of the wind squaller, something completely unexpected happened then....

## Chapter 324: An Unexpected Twist? (Second)

---

But when Jing Mingfeng moved to stroke the head of the wind squaller, something completely unexpected happened then....

Right at the very moment when Jing Mingfeng's hand touched upon the wind squaller's head, the soulbeast let loose a happy cry before its entire body began to glow a bright green light!!

“Whoosh!”

Under the amazed eyes of everyone there, a strong gust of elemental wind rolled through the area. As quickly as it appeared, the elemental wind began to form a tornado—with Jing Mingfeng at its center!

“This...this is....” Realizing that the elemental wind was borne from the soulbeast's soulforce, Bai Yunfei snapped out from his shock very quickly. “Jing Mingfeng!” He cried out to his friend, “What are you doing standing around! This is the sign of a soul contract! Focus and make the soul contract!!”

This very same situation happened once before with Tang Xinyun and the quickshade bird before. Bai Yunfei himself had a ‘half-experience’ of a soul contract before back in Gaoyi City, so he was somewhat familiar with the process. Everything that was happening right now pointed exactly towards the sign of a soul contract ready to be signed between soulbeast and soul cultivator!!

Being no sluggard, Jing Mingfeng was quick to digest what Bai Yunfei said and snapped out from his thoughts. Honing his mind onto the task at hand, Jing Mingfeng stared at the wind squaller in front of him and allowed for the elemental wind around them to envelop him.

.....

The happenings that were going on in this courtyard was now

attracting the attention of several others. Chu Qingxue and Zhao Mancha were the first to come hurrying out from their rooms while Tang Jing came rushing into the courtyard a moment later, only to have Bai Yunfei explain the whole story to him.

Time slowly ticked by under the watch of everyone in the courtyard. Nearly half an hour had gone past when the previously calm ball of light started to expand outwards in size. A great deal of soulforce could be felt spilling forth to form waves of energy, and in an instant, the typhoon of elemental wind around the center was absorbed into Jing Mingfeng's body.

The amount of soulforce that exploded out from Jing Mingfeng was already starting to abate away so that only a calm remained, but everyone in the courtyard could tell from it Jing Mingfeng's strength now.

He was an early-stage Soul Ancestor now!!

Somehow in this moment, a breakthrough was achieved for him to go from a late-stage Soul Sprite to a Soul Ancestor!!

"Whew...." A drawn out sigh escaped from Jing Mingfeng's lips. Now that all of the elemental wind was absorbed into him, the typhoon in the courtyard was gone.

He looked at his fist first in excitement before looking back to the now-sleeping wind squaller in his chest with glee.

"Hahaha! Who knew it'd be this easy to form a soul contract? I, Jing Mingfeng, am now a person with a soulbeast! Haha, sweet!!"

The sight of Jing Mingfeng like this was enough to make Bai Yunfei speechless; the soul contract had been initiated far too easily—what soul contract only required three pieces of meat to be fed for one to happen?!

Would he have to try out this method himself if he ever wanted to make a soul contract with a soulbeast??

.....

With a sigh to top off his feelings, Jing Mingfeng allowed everyone to congratulate him and make small talk before deciding to call it a day there. It was getting late, and he wanted to return to his own room to rest.

With Bai Yunfei back in his own room, the first thing he did was take out Jing Mingfeng’s ‘Blackwind’ Dagger. Though he failed in upgrading it several times, he was able to bring it to +10 in given time.

Equipment Grade: Low Heaven  
Elemental Affinity: Wind, Darkness  
Upgrade Level: +10  
Attack: 2300  
Additional Attack: 1200  
Equipment Effect: After a successful strike, inflict a curse onto the foe and drop all attributes by 5% for a duration of one minute.  
Effect cannot be stacked.  
Soul Compatibility: 10%  
+10 Additional Effect: With each successive strike, inflict a 3% speed decrease on the enemy for a total of one minute.  
May stack up to ten times.  
Upgrade Requirement: 140 Soulpoints

Weighing the dagger in his hand, Bai Yunfei thought to himself, “Another effect I’ve never seen before, it can slow someone down after a strike? It’s a bit similar to some of the other effects, but it has the effect of a ‘darkness type’ too...

“But this doesn’t require a clear cut to be made for activation, the effect would trigger even if it hits another weapon! That means if the effect stacks all ten times, the enemy will lose up to 30% of their speed!!”

Memories of Hong Yin’s upgraded Bloodhowl Fang surged back to mind:

+10 Additional Effect: When attacking, there is a 30% chance to inflict 'Intimidation',



forcing the opponent's overall attributes to drop 20% for 10 seconds.

Compared to the Bloodhowl Fang, the Blackwind Dagger held an advantage in its ability to be activated without fail and in its time duration. The Bloodhowl Fang had the advantage on how its effect was greater in scale despite it having only a chance to activate.

The way Jing Mingfeng fought wasn't unknown to Bai Yunfei.

Jing Mingfeng favored sneak attacks and making use of his superior speed to overcome his foes. The effect on the Blackwind Dagger essentially made the enemy slower, which indirectly made Jing Mingfeng even faster. As such, its effect was very suitable to his fighting style.

Looking over the Blackwind Dagger for only a moment longer, Bai Yunfei put the dagger away. He was prepared to hold onto it for a little longer since his excuse of the Crafting School's 'secret refining method' was said to require more than one day to pull off successfully.

Ever since he became a student of the Crafting School and disciple of the previous headmaster, Bai Yunfei had gained a very convenient excuse for upgrading. It could 'trick' any outsider should he need it, making Bai Yunfei's secret a lot easier to keep secret.

Taking out the scroll with the Soul Concealment Art, Bai Yunfei began to study the inner contents of it without distraction. What was important wasn't understanding the concepts, but memorizing them. Comprehension of what he memorized would come later.

And so, the night went on without any further incident.

Morning came soon with the sun rising up from beyond the horizon. Pushing open the doors of his room, Bai Yunfei strode outside only to discover everyone else was already awake.

Tang Xinyun, Kou Tingting, and even Jing Mingfeng were all

gathered there in the courtyards.

“Xinyun, why are you all....”

“Haha, we only just came out ourselves.” Kou Tingting laughed, “Xinyun knows that you’d want to give her the fireseed spirit mushroom as soon as possible, so we decided to wake up early for it. Heehee, you’re just giving her the mushroom, so why does it look like you’re even more impatient than she is?”

Rather than grace her mocking question with an answer, Bai Yunfei gave two short embarrassed coughs before looking over to Jing Mingfeng.

As if to respond to him, Jing Mingfeng brought his hands up in a defensive manner, “I’m not here to wait for you. I just want my stuff back. Ol’ Bai, if you didn’t manage to memorize it all last night, that’s not my problem, hehe....”

“You could at least be polite about it....” Bai Yunfei chuckled before tossing a scroll over to Jing Mingfeng, “So? Where’s your wind squaller? How do you feel now after the soul contract?”

“Hehe, I feel great actually. I’ve never felt so powerful before...Xiao Feng is asleep right now. Just this morning though, I realized that it’s a lot bigger than yesterday, and a lot stronger too! Seeing how strong its getting, I wonder when it’ll become a fifth-class soulbeast, haha!!”

“Xiao Feng....is that the name you gave it? Sounds like a name you would have....” Bai Yunfei muttered, though he was surprised to hear that the wind squaller was already improving in strength so quickly. Was it because of the fact that it was at its weakest yesterday, and then the soul contract with Jing Mingfeng influenced its growth?

TL Note: Feng is the word for wind, which is in both the wind squaller and Jing Mingfeng’s name.

The four continued to converse for a moment longer as they

walked out from the courtyard. Zhao Xiluo hadn't returned since yesterday, so he was probably with Zhong Liyan and Yang Lin somewhere else still.

As the auction house said yesterday, the men from the house of Wu would transport the fireseed spirit mushroom to the inn where the Wu were staying in as soon as it reached Mo City, and then it'd be transported to the house of Tang where Bai Yunfei was. But since Bai Yunfei and the others were feeling a bit impatient, they all decided to head straight for the inn to wait.

Laughing and chatting as they went, the group walked at a brisk pace that got them at the inn where the Wu were staying in.

But before they could get close to the inn, a group of people came rushing out from the inn with such haste that they nearly slammed into Bai Yunfei as they passed each other.

And at the very head of the group was the one who met with Bai Yunfei before, Wu Gang.

Noticing the man, Bai Yunfei called out to him in confusion, "Brother Wu, what's the matter?"

From the worried look on Wu Gang's face, a feeling of dread was starting to well up in Bai Yunfei's stomach....

## Chapter 325: Friends?! (Third)

---

“Lord Bai?! What brings you here?” Wu Gang froze still as soon as he saw Bai Yunfei.

“You look worried, brother Wu, are you heading somewhere?” The concern on Bai Yunfei’s face grew with each second spent looking at the worried look on Wu Gang’s face. “Did....did something happen to the fireseed spirit mushroom?!”

“How did you know?!”

His confirmation caused a stormy look to settle on Bai Yunfei’s face, “What happened?!”

Wu Gang hesitated for only a moment before he relented to answer, “Lord Bai....the fireseed spirit mushroom was...was stolen by someone before it arrived in Mo City!!”

“What?!” He roared in anger before realizing now wasn’t the time to be getting angry, “When? Where? And what’s going on now?!”

Cutting straight to the chase, Wu Gang answered, “We only just received notice from our men who was transporting the fireseed spirit mushroom. A battle’s taking place right now with my father being nearby. I was on my way to ask for assistance from the Tang. The battle is....just five hundred meters away from Mt. Rubble to the south of the city!”

“How strong are the enemies?”

“That isn’t known so far....but there’s a middle-stage Soul Sprite supporting our men, so I assume there’s someone of equivalent strength in the opposing side....”

In other words, the difference in strength between both sides wasn’t too vast.....

The gears in Bai Yunfei’s mind turned furiously as he thought

about his options. “Xinyun,” he turned his head to her, “you and the others should stay here and wait for me. I’ll be back with the fireseed spirit mushroom!!”

His words were accompanied with a twist of his right hand and a flash of green light as the Tempest Sword came to being in front of him. Jumping onto the blade, Bai Yunfei was about to set off when he felt the back of the sword dip slightly from the weight of another—

—It was Jing Mingfeng.

A jovial slap on the shoulder was given to Bai Yunfei, “Haha, you really think I’d miss out on some action like this? You can’t even use any elemental fire right now, so don’t try playing the hero. Allow me and my new strength help you out this time!”

Gratitude surged into Bai Yunfei’s mind, but he said nothing and only nodded in response. With a final look to Tang Xinyun to reassure her, both he and Jing Mingfeng flew off towards the south on the sword in a blast of green light.

Prior to his departure, all Tang Xinyun could say to him when he looked at her was whisper a quiet “Be careful”. Nothing else was said as she clutched at the hems of her robes, but when Bai Yunfei disappeared off into the distance, a look of concern started to show in her eyes.

.....

Since it was the very first time Jing Mingfeng ever rode a flying sword, he found the winds coursing past his ears rather ridiculous at first, but it didn’t take long for him to adapt. Now that he had a solid foothold on the sword, he could spend the rest of his time looking left and right while screaming out in joy.

“Ol’ Bai, you really have the best stuff! Haha, a soul armament that can fly! Even the weakest ones are as rare as a heaven tier soul armament. There’s plenty of treasures in the Crafting School if

you have one!”

Bai Yunfei was nervous about the fireseed mushroom, but Jing Mingfeng’s excitement was contagious to even him, “Haha, we’re about to battle and probably kill people, how can you be so relaxed?”

“Oh stow it. You should know how strong the enemies are by now, shouldn’t you? At best, they’ve three Soul Ancestors. Let me be totally honest, I’m not afraid of any of them. And you! You may as well be the wolf wearing the sheep’s skin. I’ve heard from your very own mouth that you killed even a Soul Exalt before, so who cares for one or two Soul Ancestors? There’s also the people from the Wu, so as long as the enemies don’t run away, wouldn’t capturing them be a pretty easy task?”

“Haha, are you that confident that they don’t have any other strong people in hiding?”

“Well...it’s not impossible, but it doesn’t really matter. If we can’t handle it, we run. I’ve faith in my speed, and you’ve your flying sword, what danger is there?”

“That’s a good analysis, but I hope it won’t be as you say it might....”

Looking to the front, Bai Yunfei thought, “No matter who stole the fireseed spirit mushroom, I’ll kill them all without mercy!”

The Tempest Sword was originally a very fast traveling sword, but under Bai Yunfei’s control, it was traveling at even greater speeds than usual. Shrieking through the air for dozens of minutes, Bai Yunfei and Jing Mingfeng soon spotted a small group of people rushing in the same direction they were on the ground below. The person leading this group was a man in his middling ages and looked similar to Wu Gang; presumably Wu Gang’s father.

Though they were spotted a while before, the Tempest Sword

was moving faster than they were, so the group was soon left behind without Bai Yunfei looking behind or slowing down.

“Brother-in-law, wasn’t that....”

A purple-robed man near the front of the group spoke out from down on the ground. He was the cousin of Wu Gang, Wu Jian. He was a late-stage Soul Sprite, and the one he called brother-in-law was Wu Gang’s father, Wu Peng, a late-stage Soul Ancestor.

Looking up as he maintained his current pacing, Wu Peng spoke, “Indeed, that is our ‘client’ for the fireseed spirit mushroom, Bai Yunfei....It’s no wonder he’s a student of the Crafting School if he has a flying soul armament. They should arrive at the scene faster than we will....

“We should hurry up. Aside from getting the fireseed spirit mushroom, we can’t allow anything to happen to Bai Yunfei lest we suffer the inevitable wrath of the Crafting School!!”

Not only was Wu Peng a client of the Tang, they were also the ones who were in possession of the fireseed spirit mushroom, so them knowing about Bai Yunfei wasn’t all too strange.

With a command to the rest of the people with him, Wu Peng had the entire group run even faster in a blur of golden light to charge ahead and leaving behind their weaker members.

.....

Jing Mingfeng traveled to Mo City from this direction once before, so he was knowledgeable about the area to a certain degree. Under Bai Yunfei’s current speed and thirty minutes of traveling, Jing Mingfeng was able to tell him that there’d be a certain forest of strange stone trees, and that the ‘Mt. Rubble’ Wu Gang mentioned before would be at the peak of the forest.

As they drew close to the mountain, Bai Yunfei could distinctly hear the sounds of battle explode here and there on it.

He let out a sigh of relief—if the battle was still ongoing, that

meant the fireseed spirit mushroom wasn't yet completely stolen.

Urging the Tempest Sword forward in a burst of green light, Bai Yunfei and Jing Mingfeng soon found themselves in the airspace near the battlefield.

Hopping down to the ground a kilometer away, the two hid themselves behind the foliage and suppressed their auras to almost undetectable levels.

A kilometer away from them, a group of five or six people could be seen. At the sight of these people, Bai Yunfei's eyes narrowed slightly while he brought out the Ardent Sun Glove onto his right hand. In a flurry of red light, the nearby elemental fire in the air began to gather around his hand, and in just a single moment or two, a two-meter long fireball was floating above his palm!!

This was the long-ranged effect of the Ardent Sun Glove where he could use a fireball to attack his enemies. It didn't require any control over elemental fire to do; just a single thought to activate the effect.

Without even a word from Bai Yunfei, he brandished his finger forward to send the fireball flying!

“Boom!!!”

Like a meteorite descending from the skies, the fireball impacted against the ground with such force that the ensuing dust cloud took on the form of a mushroom. The earth quaked tremendously with the nearby mountain side starting to have its loose stones cascade downwards.

But more importantly, there was a ten-meter long crater from where it struck on the battlefield!!

Not a single one of the fighters there were too slow to get away from the fireball. Leaping to the edge of the impact radius, they all looked towards Bai Yunfei who was coming back down from the skies in his approach.



Putting away his Tempest Sword, Bai Yunfei stepped down onto an empty patch of ground to the north of the crater. Because of the crater, he was on the other side of the other five combatants.

Looking at the five wary individuals, Bai Yunfei was surprised to see that he recognized someone from the five.

“You guys?” He spoke to two figures on his left.

## Chapter 326: Instant Death? (Fourth)

---

Not once did Bai Yunfei ever expect to see the two people in front of him right now.

It was only a while ago that Bai Yunfei first met the two: the Flying Dagger brothers, Han Chong and Han Lin!

When no answer was heard, Bai Yunfei's eyes narrowed together with a chillingly-cold glare. "What? Are you two trying to take away my fireseed spirit mushroom?!"

Finally, the two brothers snapped back to awareness. "This is a misunderstanding, brother Bai!" Han Chong brought his hands up to defend himself, "The two of us mean no harm! We were requested for this mission and were only lending assistance!"

"Young hero, are you reinforcements from Mo City?" The other man wearing an orange robe right next to Han Chong spoke out. "I am Wu Cheng, the one responsible for transporting the fireseed spirit mushroom. The Flying Dagger brothers are the help I requested; the ones who want to steal the fireseed spirit mushroom are those two over there!"

Rather than to mince words, Wu Cheng explained the situation concisely to Bai Yunfei. His entire face was an unhealthy shade of pale and his left arm was hung uselessly by his side.

"Oh?" Lightening up, Bai Yunfei nodded in response to Wu Gang before turning to the two black-robed people to his right.

The both of them looked not only to be in the same age-group, but also had the same facial appearances of each other; meaning that they were brothers.

And from their auras, Bai Yunfei could sense that the one on the right was a mid-stage Soul Ancestor and the other a late-stage Soul Ancestor!

Both men had dark looks on their faces, and the mid-stage Soul

Ancestor had a huge trail of blood dripping down his left arm while the other wasn't injured in the slightest.

Han Chong and Han Lin looked to be in a considerably better shape than the other two, as their clothes were tattered and Han Lin had a huge wound on the left side of his hip. Though the blood was clotted, the wound itself was still quite heavy.

While Bai Yunfei was looking at the two enemies, they themselves were rapidly thinking of their next course of action. Lü Fang (the late-stage Soul Ancestor) eyed Bai Yunfei for a split-second longer before suddenly shouting, "Run!!"

His feet pushed against the ground as he spoke. Kicking up a large dust storm with his energy-infused feet, the man ran off to where Lü Yuan (The mid-stage Soul Ancestor) was while the dust storm blocked Bai Yunfei's vision.

The two brothers clearly noticed that the fight wasn't in their favor, so it'd be best to flee instead.

"Trying to run?!" Before Bai Yunfei could even do anything, Han Chong spoke out first. A rush of wind flew out with a swing of his hand, blowing away the dust storm and restoring visibility to their group. At the same time, two green streaks of light shot out from his right hand to chase after the two fleeing persons!

Hitting the two Lü brothers was easier said than done, however. Though the flying daggers flew fast and true, they only managed to fly past the two.

Narrowing his eyes, Han Chong snorted lightly before he bent all five fingers and pulled his hand back violently.

As if responding to his hand gestures, the two flying daggers turned around mid-flight to strike at the two brothers from the front!

This time, the two men were forced to move perpendicular to their original direction despite having dodged the flying daggers

successfully.

Han Chong and Han Lin glanced at each other to acknowledge the sight in front of them and chased after the two together.

In Lü Fang's hand was a single ox-tail sword with chain ringlets on its back side. His brother, Lü Yuan, favored a dagger that glittered red at times, but it looked equally dangerous to his brother's weapon. Combined with their coordinated teamwork, the Lü brothers were able to gain the upper hand over the Han brothers in a few quick exchanges.

Fortunately, the Han weren't trying so much to win against the Lü than to make sure that they wouldn't escape, so the Han brothers made use of diversionary tactics to stall for time.

"Where is the fireseed spirit mushroom?" Instead of participating in the battle, Bai Yunfei first asked Wu Cheng about the whereabouts of the item.

"It's...." Wu Cheng's face dropped several shades of color as he motioned at his severely injured left arm. "I'm ashamed to say that the space ring it was stored in was....taken by them.

"They came so fast and killed all the other escorting members so quickly. If not for the Flying Dagger brothers, my life would've been forfeit already...."

It was then that Bai Yunfei noticed the mangled mess that was Wu Cheng's left hand. The ring finger was bent at a very strange and terrifying angle; clearly, it was broken.

"Well then...." The urge to kill began to surge in Bai Yunfei's eyes, "If that's the case, then killing them won't be a problem...."

"Young hero, you're..." Bai Yunfei's words were strange to Wu Cheng; he could 'see' that Bai Yunfei was only a late-stage Soul Warrior, so Wu Cheng absolutely couldn't see just how Bai Yunfei would be able to partake in a battle where everyone was a Soul Ancestor.

“Bang!”

Before he could finish his sentence however, Wu Cheng was interrupted by Bai Yunfei’s explosive forward push to enter the fray!

He had no elemental power to be felt from his body, but the speed at which he was traveling at was astounding. Like an arrow shot from a bow, his feet was practically gliding and his entire body left phantom images behind as he charged straight into the battlefield.

His right hand shook once to take something out, and with a swing of his hand, a ray of purple light streaked for Lü Yuan on the right side.

The Lightning Bolt Dagger!!

The schematics to make two of the more peculiar flying daggers in the manual were simple enough for Bai Yunfei to craft back in the Crafting School. One of the ones he made was the Lightning Bolt Dagger, but he wasn’t sure how to use it yet. Back when he exchanged the part of the manual with Han Chong, Bai Yunfei learned how to throw the Lightning Bolt Dagger.

But right now, he was fully capable of making use of the daggers at a level of familiarity equal to that of Han Chong and Han Lin!

There was an advantage Bai Yunfei had over the Han brothers. His flying dagger was crafted and made far superior to theirs since it was....upgraded!

Equipment Grade: Mid Human

Elemental Affinity: Thunder

Upgrade Level: +10

Attack: 360

Additional Attack: 170

Soul Compatibility: 10%

+10 Additional Effect: Upon hitting the target, there is a 50% chance to paralyze them

for 2 seconds. During this time, attack and movement speed decreases by 10% and reaction speed decreases by 5%.

Upgrade Requirement: 75 Soulpoints

Due to the high requirements and specialized design of it, the grade of the Lightning Bolt Dagger wasn't too high. But after it reached +10, the attack of the dagger was comparable to a low-earth tier soul armament.

The flying dagger was the first to reach Lü Yuan. Barely managing to block the flying dagger with his dagger, Lü Yuan's eyes filled up with anger as he glared at Bai Yunfei. Turning around to get away from Han Lin, Lü Yuan began to gather a large amount of elemental fire in his dagger before stabbing out at Bai Yunfei!

A blade of fire about a meter long shot out from his dagger towards Bai Yunfei with a speed that was strangely going at the same speed as Bai Yunfei's Lightning Bolt Dagger!!

The brilliance that was his counter attack had Lü Yuan in complete confidence that he'd win. Should even an early-stage Soul Ancestor fight him here, this attack of his would still be very hard for them to endure!

But Bai Yunfei had no intentions of dodging from this attack.

The Cataclysmic Seal came into being with a shake of his right hand, and in the next second, its defensive effect materialized a barrier over Bai Yunfei's body.

“Bang!!”

The fire struck the barrier, but Bai Yunfei wasn't harmed in the slightest. Not even his forward speeds was impacted in the least, and so soon enough, he was right in front of Lü Yuan!

His right hand stretched out with a brilliant blaze of fire as the Fire-tipped Spear appeared. Stabbing forward with the weapon,

the spear blew up elemental fire!

Threefold Stab!!

The pupils in Lü Yuan's eyes contracted in fear as he tried to comprehend just how Bai Yunfei was able to defend himself from the attack. It proved to be a bad time to be thinking such thoughts, however, as the Fire-tipped Spear was already on the verge of stabbing through his chest.

Having no time to dodge left nor right, all Lü Yuan could do was grit his teeth and slam his feet against the ground to propel himself backwards while bringing his dagger up to defend himself.

“Clank!!”

The Fire-tipped Spear stabbed into the dagger, but in the next second...

“Booom!!!!”

The +10 Additional Effect of the Fire-tipped Spear had activated!!

## Chapter 327: Instant Death (First)

---

The Threefold Stab had barely enough time to touch the dagger when the additional effect of the Fire-tipped Spear activated!

A blast of elemental fire and dust blew through the area as the Fire-tipped Spear rendered the dagger into dust. Like a ragdoll, Lü Yuan was tossed away from the explosion with a mangled and charred chest.

Fortunately, fire-type soul cultivators like him had a degree of resistance to fire-based attacks. Furthermore, he was lucky enough to jump back at the final moment to offset the power from the explosion.

If not for those two factors, he would've died a fiery death despite being a mid-stage Soul Ancestor.

Resistant or not, the damage was still severe enough for blood to spray out of his mouth. Glassy-eyed, Lü Yuan tried his best to stabilize himself. He gathered elemental fire in his chest to protect himself from any more damage.

He raised his head to glare at Bai Yunfei, but what he saw caused his face to drop several shades of color—

Right in front of him was the Fire-tipped Spear; three of them, in fact!!

The +12 effect of the Fire-tipped Spear, the Doppelganger!!

The Bai Yunfei on the very right clenched the spear tightly, and with a short thrust, it moved to strike Lü Yuan's throat!

Fury flooded Lü Yuan's eyes. Completely disregarding the wound on his chest, his left hand flew up to grab at the shaft of the spear, bringing its owner to a stop!

"This one isn't the fake!!" Lü Yuan's eyes lit up with joy. Soulfence began to burst from his body along with a tremendous



flow of elemental fire. Turning into a blaze, the elemental fire surrounded his right hand. He extended his fingers so that his hand took on a knife shape. His entire right arm felt as though it was a single sword that was on fire.

“Die!!” Lü Yuan howled as he stabbed at Bai Yunfei’s chest with his arm.

“Tzzk!”

His arm streaked across Bai Yunfei’s chest, eliciting a spark of joy in Lü Yuan’s eye.

“Eh?”

Though he could clearly see that his arm had gone through his enemy’s chest, he didn’t feel as though there was any ‘substance’ behind the attack.

It didn’t even feel like he stabbed through a person!

“But how...?” Startled, Lü Yuan’s eyes widened in shock. His pupils were straining so hard to understand the sight in front of him that it seemed as though they’d break away from his eyes.

While he was in his stupor, one of the other doppelgangers was already poised to strike in between his eyebrows!

Even more inconceivable was the fact that despite the spear being a definite death should it hit... it disappeared into thin air as soon as it touched his skin!

Without any sign or warning, both spear and owner had disappeared!

While that was happening, Lü Yuan felt his hand grow lighter all of a sudden. The spear he had been holding onto was gone along with the ‘Bai Yunfei’ he had just stabbed through the chest.

“But... what...?”

No matter how much he tried, Lü Yuan simply couldn’t understand nor comprehend the sight in front of him.

He could clearly feel blood from the cut the spear he had grabbed had made. There was also a small trickle of blood from where the spear had poked him on the forehead. That alone was enough to tell him that the spears had been ‘real.’

But... the spear that was ‘real’ was no longer ‘real’ nor there. What in the world was going on?!

“Watch out!!”

A shout from Lü Fang snapped Lü Yuan from his shock. Shaking his head, Lü Yuan was immediately made aware of yet another flaming spear that threatened to stab him straight through!

This spear was no illusion this time; this was the true strike!

The doppelgangers were meant to be used as a diversionary tactic, and they had worked.

After the confusion wrought by the doppelgangers, Bai Yunfei took the opportunity to pierce Lü Yuan with his spear!

With Lü Fang’s warning, Lü Yuan was given an opportunity to save his own life by throwing himself to the side to dodge.

“Tzzk!”

The life-threatening moment had passed, but not without injury. The Fire-tipped Spear managed to stab into Lü Fang’s right shoulder all the way to the bone, but it wasn’t a fatal wound.

However, would he be able to evade death so easily again?

The answer...

No!!

A single stab of the spear wouldn’t be enough for a sure kill. Eyes flashing in recognition of that fact, Bai Yunfei’s right hand relinquished its hold on the spear.

He clenched his right hand and a great fire rose up from his upper right arm. It formed into a-meter-long blade of fire!

In sync with the Fire-tipped Spear, Bai Yunfei moved forward to slash at Lü Yuan!!

“Swish!”

Decapitated from the rest of its body, a single head flew into the air before succumbing to the fire. It disintegrated into ashes...

“Thump!!”

The now headless body came to a crash on the ground. With a spear still embedded in its shoulder, Lü Yuan’s body gave several twitches before finally coming to a rest...

“.....”

“.....”

Silence descended upon the area.

Even Han Chong and Lü Fang paused their fight with the latter blankly looking at the corpse of his brother. Before this, he had been charging toward Han Chong, but this new development saw him come to a stop as he slowly turned toward Bai Yunfei.

To Bai Yunfei’s side was Han Lin.

Han Lin’s right hand was frozen in place next to his waist. He had been preparing to support Bai Yunfei with a flying dagger or two, but instead of doing as he had intended, the dagger he had primed to throw had fallen to the ground. Though, he hadn’t noticed due to his amazement.

An instant death!!

Not even half a minute had gone by since Bai Yunfei had started his barrage on Lü Yuan!

There was no hesitation. Only a series of attacks one after another, and just like that, a mid-stage Soul Ancestor had been killed on the spot!!

.....

While everyone else was staring at Bai Yunfei in shock, he was already walking over to Lü Yuan's corpse. Stooping down, Bai Yunfei grabbed hold of Lü Yuan's hand and ripped off the space ring.

"It's not here..." Bai Yunfei muttered in annoyance as he inspected the inner contents of the ring.

"Is it on you, then?" Eyes swung to Lü Fang.

That look was more than enough to snap Lü Fang out of his stupor. Now wasn't the time to be thinking about the situation.

Now was the time to run away!

He was scared. A late-stage Soul Ancestor he might be, but even he didn't know why he felt such destitute terror in regard to this late-stage Soul Warrior. However, this terror was enough to drain any semblance of fighting spirit away. The only thought he had was to flee—to flee as fast and as far away as possible.

The Lü brothers trump card—a unison soul skill that could endanger even a Soul Exalt—would remain unused.

Without Lü Yuan's head on his body, what possible way was there to use the unison skill!?

"Pah!"

The sight of Lü Fang fleeing made Bai Yunfei feel a wrathful indignation. With eyes that stalked the fleeing Lü Fang, Bai Yunfei retrieved the Cataclysmic Seal from its storage and pointed a finger.

A light as red as fire trailed behind the brick as it whisked through the sky like a comet. It shot after Lü Fang at least twice as quickly as he was traveling!!

Noticing that something was amiss, Lü Fang looked back. His eyes widened in surprise at what he saw. Soon after terror flooded his eyes when the Cataclysmic Seal registered in them. Clenching

his teeth, he pivoted around so that his front was now facing the Cataclysmic Seal. He was effectively traveling slower than before.

Free of the sword he had brandished in his hands earlier, Lü Fang began to form a series of complicated hand seals before finishing the last seal with a heavy stomp on the ground and a loud shout!

Like a storm, soulforce burst from within Lü Fang's body along with a rich concentration of elemental earth. The soulforce traveled down his foot and into the ground, and when Lü Fang stepped back, the earth where he once was began to churn and shake before a three-meter-wide, one-meter-thick wall erected itself to stop the Cataclysmic Seal!!

Though this earthen wall had been erected, Lü Fang didn't stop his hand gestures. Four more steps were taken and four more walls were made!

“Boom!!”

The Cataclysmic Seal smashed into the first wall by the time the fifth and final wall was constructed. An explosive quake rocked the area before the Cataclysmic Seal smashed through the second, then the third...

The walls looked to be sturdy and immovable, as a wall of earth should. However, in front of the Cataclysmic Seal, they were torn apart like rice paper. The Cataclysmic Seal didn't show any signs of slowing for even a second!!

Any blood that might've remained on Lü Fang's face drained once the fourth wall was demolished. Rather than continuing to run away, Lü Fang began to form another set of hand seals. The elemental earth in him started to become even thicker as it covered his body.

Like the last time, his foot came up and then smashed back down onto the ground.

Instead of a wall, a-meter-wide crevice formed in the ground!

The fifth and final wall came crumbling down as the Cataclysmic Seal sped through it with Bits of earth flying in every direction. At that moment, Lü Fang threw caution to the wind and leaped into the crevice.

As soon as he did, the earth above him quaked slightly before coming together as if it hadn't separated in the first place!

.....

The area above ground was completely silent now. Lü Fang was nowhere to be seen, and his 'underground' technique made no sounds nor left any signs of movement.

"An underground escape..." A flash of cold light snaked across Bai Yunfei's eyes as a sneer formed on his lips. "You want to escape? And with the fireseed spirit mushroom... do you really think you can?"

"The fireseed spirit mushroom is mine, I'll kill anyone that tries to steal it!"

## Chapter 328: Double Kill!! (Second)

---

What Lü Fang had used was clearly a very stealthy type of soul skill that relied heavily on elemental earth to hide himself away underground without being noticed.

Not only was he undetectable to the naked eye, but his soulforce had been masked as well. It was as if he had disappeared into the earth and had become one with it. Even Han Chong—the strongest person there at the moment—was unable to detect Lü Fang's whereabouts.

Without his essence fireseed, Bai Yunfei was unable to sense him either.

How could Bai Yunfei possibly stop Lü Fang from getting away with the fireseed spirit mushroom?

The answer was he didn't have to know where the enemy was!

Just three seconds after Lü Fang disappeared, Bai Yunfei's eyes scanned the area in front of him as if calculating a solution.

His middle and index finger closed together as he pointed at the Cataclysmic Seal with his wrist facing up. Flicking his fingers up, Bai Yunfei watched as the Cataclysmic Seal followed his command. It flew a kilometer up into the air with a single 'swish.'

What happened next was a terrifying memory that Han Chong, Wu Cheng, and the others would never forget...

For a moment, the Cataclysmic Seal was basked in a dazzling glow of red light.

Then, it happened.

Like a sponge soaking up seawater, the Cataclysmic Seal began to explode in size!

In two short moments, the small brick went from a mere ten inches to a behemoth of eight hundred meters!!

Though they weren't directly under the Cataclysmic Seal, Wu Cheng and the others found their heads craning up. They felt like the brunt of the entire world was collapsing down on them.

“Die!!”

With that final utterance, Bai Yunfei's right hand flew down, commanding the brick!!

“Boom!!”

Under the stunned eyes of everyone there, the Cataclysmic Seal smashed into the earth. Like a tremendous meteorite burning with energy, the Cataclysmic Seal slammed down into the vast earth in front of them!!

The earth tremored violently and the mountains quaked so much that landslides began to occur on many of the mountains.

Even though it seemed like the entire world was echoing with such awful cries, Han Chong and the others could distinctly hear a brief cry of abject terror in the distance...

The Cataclysmic Seal's body was completely embedded in the ground, but Bai Yunfei's eyes were still shining bright. The Cataclysmic Seal was his lifebound armament, so he could sense whatever minute changes happened underneath the armament.

Rather than lift the Cataclysmic Seal up, Bai Yunfei shrunk the weapon back to its normal size above a spot just three hundred meters away from Bai Yunfei. When it reached five meters in length, a flash of orange light surrounded the armament so that it resembled that of a spherical ball of light. Diving into the ground, the Cataclysmic Seal resurfaced moments later, pushing up a ball of dirt and sand!

This ball felt like a container. When it resurfaced and was pushed toward Bai Yunfei, the outermost layer began to fall apart.

When the entire outermost layer was gone, Han Chong and the others were startled to see that within this sphere... was a badly



mangled corpse!!

It was Lü Fang!!

“Bang!”

A flash of fire sparked to life from Bai Yunfei’s Ardent Sun Glove. At his command, the fire swelled up in size before spreading to Lü Fang’s corpse. Within moments, the corpse had been rendered into nothing but ashes!

Two blackened space rings were spat out of the fire and landed in Bai Yunfei’s hand.

Searching through the inner contents with his soulsense, Bai Yunfei was pleased with the results. “Found it!” He remarked in joy.

His right hand flickered as he brought out a red palm-sized object—the fireseed spirit mushroom!

“Whew...” Bai Yunfei sighed in relief. “I finally found it...”

Before anything else could happen, Bai Yunfei stored it into his Violet Soul Ring.

Pain and dizziness stabbed through his head a moment later; a sign of a soulforce exhaustion.

The Violet Soul Ring flickered with a gentle light as the stockpiled two-thousand soulpoints in it were transferred to Bai Yunfei’s body. As soon as they were transferred, Bai Yunfei’s dizziness disappeared, leaving him in a normal condition.

Searching briefly through the other soul ring, Bai Yunfei found nothing of importance. With his task accomplished, Bai Yunfei walked back to Wu Cheng. He handed him the soul ring that used to contain the fireseed spirit mushroom.

.....

Across from Bai Yunfei: Han Chong, Han Lin, and Wu Cheng were all still in dazes of shock. The three of them were still in

shock even as Bai Yunfei stood next to them.

“What... what kind of joke is this!? Can a late-stage Soul Ancestor die just like that!? The second death was even faster than the first!! Bai Yunfei didn’t even move a foot!”

Either Han Chong was in a dream, he was going blind, or some kind of strong illusion had been cast on him. Either of the three were very plausible to Han Chong. He simply couldn’t make heads or tails of the events that had transpired a minute ago.

Bai Yunfei continued to walk to where Wu Cheng was. He handed the second space ring to him. “Uncle Wu, this space ring must be yours, yes? I saw some medicine inside it. You should heal your arm right now.”

“Eh?”

“Oh! Yes, yes... I, er...” Wu Cheng finally snapped back to awareness. Still somewhat numb in the head, he took the space ring from Bai Yunfei with a frightful look. He was afraid to say anything more. He decided to do as Bai Yunfei ‘recommended,’ so he started to treat his own arm.

Both Han Lin and Han Chong had come back to reality by this point. Glancing at one another, the two of them nodded before walking toward Bai Yunfei somewhat hesitantly.

“Well... bro... brother Bai, we meet again I see...”

Han Chong saluted Bai Yunfei with a polite greeting, though a queer expression remained on his face still.

“Haha, I didn’t expect to reunite with you two here. I’d like to thank you two for stalling the enemies for me. Whatever the Wu has offered as a reward, I’d like to double it!” Bai Yunfei nodded in return to the two brothers. Since the two brothers had managed to stall the two Soul Ancestors long enough for Bai Yunfei to take back the fireseed spirit mushroom, Bai Yunfei knew that a proper reward was needed.

“You’re too kind, brother Bai. Had we known that it was your item that we were protecting, we wouldn’t have asked for a reward to begin with! What rewards are necessary between friends?” Han Chong modestly replied.

After weighing the value of a reward versus Bai Yunfei’s friendship, Han Chong decided that friendship with him was far better.

Still treating his arm a few steps away, Wu Cheng suddenly said, “Lo—lord Bai...”

“Ah!!”

Another voice interrupted him. Though it was extremely low in volume, the ears of everyone here were more than capable of detecting where the sound had come from.

“Who is it!?”

The expression on Han Chong’s face hardened while his hand moved to grab a flying dagger. He was prepared to fire it.

# Chapter 329: The Mushroom is Back, But Now What?! (Third)

---

“Hold on, brother Han. He’s a brother of mine.”

The calm voice of Bai Yunfei stopped Han Chong from doing anything more. Turning his head in surprise, he saw a smile appear on Bai Yunfei’s face.

Turning back to where the source of the earlier sound had come from, Han Chong could see a young man with a straw hat on his head walk out of the thickets. Upon seeing him, the throwing dagger in Han Chong’s hand was returned to storage.

“Mingfeng, what happened?”

He nodded at the man being dragged by Jing Mingfeng. No movement or sound was coming from the man, meaning that he was dead.

Tossing the corpse off to the side, Jing Mingfeng said, “Found him trying to spy on you guys. Thought I’d just break a leg or two and take him alive, but the guy went and killed himself before I could stop him.”

Jing Mingfeng had originally planned to hide some distance away to watch the fight. If Bai Yunfei couldn’t fight or couldn’t catch up to the two enemies, Jing Mingfeng would show up to save the day.

However, Bai Yunfei’s quick kill of the two left him so speechless that he almost lost the spy. Thankfully, the spy was only a mid-stage Soul Sprite. He was captured without any further trouble, but Jing Mingfeng hadn’t expected him to commit suicide.

Bai Yunfei’s eyes narrowed together as he pondered the conundrum of who the enemies were. “Any clues on him?” He nodded at the corpse.

“He had come prepared. I didn’t find any clues at all.” Jing

Mingfeng frowned.

The question could only be set aside for now after not arriving at an answer. If Bai Yunfei had to guess, these enemies had likely heard about the fireseed spirit mushroom via some sort of secret channel and had planned this robbery beforehand. It wasn't uncommon, at the very least, but who they were didn't matter any more.

He had taken the fireseed spirit mushroom, so all that was left to do was to give it to Tang Xinyun and help her reform her essence fireseed so they could return to the Crafting School. Not much else needed to be done.

What came after was a series of questions for Wu Cheng. Bai Yunfei learned that the robbery attempt was made when Wu Cheng and the others were traveling down Mt. Rubble. Without any prior warning, the seven soldiers that were accompanying Wu Cheng were killed, and Wu Cheng found himself alone.

It didn't take long for him to be hurt by the two Soul Ancestors and the space ring stolen in his carelessness.

When it seemed as though all hope was lost, the hired help from the Wu, Han Chong and Han Lin, arrived just in time to save him. They were unable to kill the two Soul Ancestors, but their combined effort was more than enough to stall the robbers long enough for further assistance to arrive. However, no one had expected that help to be Bai Yunfei.

Wu Cheng was opening and closing his mouth. There was clearly something he wanted to say, but had no idea how to approach the matter.

"Uncle Wu, you must want to talk about the fireseed spirit mushroom, correct?" Bai Yunfei smiled, "I forgot to mention. I'm the one who bought it at the auction. Since I was afraid of something happening to it, I came here first. The Wu should be sending some men here that can confirm what I have said to you."

A sigh of relief escaped from Wu Cheng's mouth before he uttered his thanks. Bai Yunfei looked like a late-stage Soul Warrior, but there was absolutely no way that he'd treat Bai Yunfei with anything but respect now.

Perhaps Bai Yunfei was the young prodigy of a major school or family, or perhaps he was hiding his strength somehow.

Either way, Wu Cheng was under the belief that Bai Yunfei could very well be a Soul Exalt at the very least...

"Aren't you getting a little too ridiculous, Ol'Bai? Those two were Soul Ancestors, a mid-stage and a late-stage, yet you killed them that easily!?" Jing Mingfeng stared incredulously at the crater left behind by the Cataclysmic Seal.

Eyeing Bai Yunfei as he walked around to pick up the Lightning Bolt Dagger that had been thrown around earlier, Jing Mingfeng continued, "But wow... this has to be what you called your 'lifebound armament,' eh? It's really something else. Can't say I've ever heard of a soul armament that can change shape, but I've never seen something like this either.

"Ridiculous, that's what it is. No wonder you're a disciple of the Crafting School!

"Ugh, I lose again! Compared to you, can I even really say I got stronger!

"Actually, that lifebound armament of yours looks familiar, wonder why? Feels like I've seen it somewhere before..."

Upon mentioning 'lifebound armament' and 'Crafting School disciple,' Han Chong's ears perked up attentively. He didn't know what the former term meant, but the latter term was more than obvious for him.

So, Bai Yunfei was the disciple to someone from the Crafting School!! No wonder he had that many soul armaments and that much power...

A question still remained, who was his elder?

The question would find no answer. Two relatively strong bursts of soulforce came toward them from the north. Shortly afterward, a gold figure and a violet figure came running toward them. The figures turned out to be Wu Peng and Wu Jian. Behind the two of them were their relatively slower group of men.

“Big brother, Wu Jian, you’re here!” Wu Cheng moved swiftly to them.

Though Wu Peng was able to witness a good deal of the situation from afar, he wasn’t able to verify his doubts. When he saw that Wu Cheng and even Bai Yunfei were both safe and sound, he let out a sigh of relief.

The enemies were nowhere to be seen, and doubt to arose in his mind.

Did the enemies escape with the fireseed spirit mushroom?

The nod and smile Bai Yunfei gave him told him otherwise. Wu Peng relaxed again in relief. He answered Bai Yunfei with a polite greeting before moving toward them, but when he made a single step forward, he noticed the giant crater off to the side. Craning his neck toward Wu Cheng, he asked, “What happened? Where are the others?”

“Aside from me,” Wu Cheng’s face darkened in color, “everyone else is dead. The enemy was... just far too strong. We had no chance of surviving their ambush...”

“...” Wu Peng said nothing in response. The ones who were accompanying Wu Cheng were all competent fighters in their own right and were a sizeable force for the Wu. As such, their deaths brought plenty of anger to Wu Peng.

“Do we know who they were?” Wu Peng softly growled.

“They had no identifying marks,” Wu Cheng shook his head, “I was unable to tell who they work for.”

“How many were there? Where did they run off to?”

“There were two Soul Ancestors. One was a mid-stage, the other was a late-stage, but they’re bot—”

“They’re both dead by my hand.” Bai Yunfei interjected. “Uncle, the ones who stole the fireseed spirit mushroom are dead already. I have no idea if they’re enemies of your family or something else, but the fireseed spirit mushroom is in my hands. For the sake of avoiding any more complications, let’s conclude this deal here. Here is the heaven tier soul armament.”

He took a golden blade from his space ring without any further words and handed it to Wu Peng.

“This...” What Bai Yunfei had said left Wu Peng unable to say anything. What was it he just said?

The two enemies Wu Cheng had been fighting had been killed by him!?

“But... but Wu Cheng said that there was a mid-stage and a late-stage Soul Ancestor!!”

He glanced to Wu Cheng first, looking for confirmation. When his glance was returned with a nod, Wu Peng’s lips pursed together to quell his shock. Accepting the golden sword into his hands, he managed to force a smile to his face, “Well... lord Bai, then as you say, I would like to sincerely apologize for this troublesome matter today...”

“No need. Now that our deal is finished, I’ll leave the rest to you to take care of.” Bai Yunfei waved his hand, reluctant to get any more involved in this matter.

“Brother Han,” he turned to Han Chong on the right, “I’m in a bit of a hurry to get back to Mo City, so I’ll be going first. Here’s a token of my appreciation....”

Thinking about what to give the two brothers, Bai Yunfei shook his hand, taking out a short dagger. It was the very same dagger he



had offered up in the auction house with enough attack to be a high-earth tier soul armament.

“I’ll give you this high-earth tier soul armament as thanks for helping protect the fireseed spirit mushroom. Will that be enough?” Bai Yunfei lifted the dagger to Han Chong. Though the two brothers were experts at using throwing daggers, a short dagger like this would come in handy for close-ranged combat.

“I...” Han Chong’s ears found it extremely hard to believe what they were hearing. Looking at the high earth tier soul armament in Bai Yunfei’s hands, Han Chong said, “Brother Bai, what do you mean by this? Safeguarding the fireseed spirit mushroom is something we’re supposed to do. How could we ask for another reward? I... I cannot accept this.”

Bai Yunfei laughed. He tossed the dagger to Han Chong, “I said it before, this fireseed spirit mushroom is extremely important to me. You did me a great favor by helping me, so if I don’t thank you, I’d feel guilty. Take it, brother Han, and if you have the time, come to Mo City and ask for me at the house of Tang. I’ve a few questions about the flying daggers, so I hope you will be able to take the time to teach me...”

Taking a second look at the dagger in his hands, Han Chong hesitated one second more while listening to what Bai Yunfei said. He finally nodded his head. “In that case... I won’t be refusing this. Please expect me in the future, brother Bai.”

“Very well. Then... if nothing else needs to be done, I’ll be heading back. Until next time, brothers!”

Bai Yunfei nodded to everyone in farewell before taking the Tempest Sword out from his ring. Hopping onto it, he waited for Jing Mingfeng to climb aboard before shooting off through the sky back to Mo City.

.....

Since the fireseed spirit mushroom was back in his hands, Bai Yunfei saw no reason to travel at a breakneck speed like before. When he thought about going back and helping Tang Xinyun recover her essence fireseed, Bai Yunfei's entire body felt extremely light.

Jing Mingfeng could be heard letting out a sigh. Thinking it to be quite strange, Bai Yunfei asked, "Hey, what's with the sigh?"

"Er... I just felt like that battle was really unsatisfying. I wanted to show off. You know, I was looking forward to making a flashy entrance! But... but you went ahead and finished it off in two to three minutes while I caught a small-fry. It's unsatisfying, I tell you..." Jing Mingfeng shook his head sadly.

"....."

About fifty minutes later, Mo City was finally coming into view. Bai Yunfei found himself speeding up unintentionally, heading to the inn from before.

The inn where Tang Xinyun was waiting.

"Chirp!!"

Suddenly, Bai Yunfei could hear the anxious cry of a bird up in the sky, causing the expression on his face to harden.

"That's Xiao Bai! Something bad happened!!"

Alarmed, Bai Yunfei urged his Tempest Sword in the direction of the cry.

# Chapter 330: Xinyun Was Kidnapped!

---

In front of the gates to a luxurious inn in Mo City—

What was once a busy street bustling with people was now a chaotic turmoil of scattered objects and people. Stalls and their wares were strewn about haphazardly, and bystanders were ducking behind the closest shelter they could find, whether that be in a shop or a nearby street corner. However, no matter where they were every one of them was filled with fright that didn't seem like it'd leave them any time soon.

“Chirp!!”

Came the cry of Xiao Bai as it tried to ascend to the sky. Its left wing was bent at an unnatural angle, but it didn't seem to notice. A sliver of blood was also coming out of its beak, indicating that it had sustained some sort of internal injury.

“Xiao Bai, don't go! You can't catch up! Let me heal your wounds!”

This time, Kou Tingting's voice could be heard calling out as she tried to grab ahold of Xiao Bai with her left hand. Her right hand was glowing bright with a bright blue color as she pressed it to Xiao Bai's belly where two puncture wounds could be seen!

Kou Tingting was trying her best to stop tears from trailing down her face. She firmly bit her lower lip with her teeth and forced her soulforce to heal the practically life-threatening wounds on Xiao Bai.

Not too far away on the right, against the walls of the inn sat an individual splattered with blood as he tried to heal his wounds. This person was Wu Gang.

.....

“Whoosh... whoosh!”

From the sky came two bright-green lights. In moments, they landed on the streets and disappeared upon contact. They soon reappeared revealing the figures of Bai Yunfei and Jing Mingfeng.

Noticing the wounds on Xiao Bai, Bai Yunfei's eyes dilated in shock. Scanning his surroundings anxiously, he asked the girl healing Xiao Bai, "Tingting, what happened? Where's Xinyun!?"

"Ah! Yunfei, you're back!" Kou Tingting exclaimed in relieved joy at the sound of Bai Yunfei's voice. She rose from the ground, but then when she remembered that Xiao Bai still needed to be healed and sat back down. "Yunfei," she tilted her head instead, "Xinyun... Xinyun was kidnapped!"

"What!?" Bai Yunfei exclaimed. In no time at all, he was right beside Kou Tingting with his hand gripping her left wrist, "What do you mean kidnapped!? Who, and where!?"

"Ah! It... it hurts! Let go, Yunfei..."

Realizing what he was doing after her pained yelp, Bai Yunfei released her wrist with an apologetic look, "Sorry, Tingting. I didn't mean to... but please, tell me. What happened?"

"Well..." Kou Tingting spoke as she healed Xiao Bai's wound, "After you left, Xinyun and I waited for you here, but then a person came out of nowhere and kidnapped Xinyun without a word. He... he was strong, maybe an early-stage Soul Exalt. We weren't a match for him. Xiao Bai was nearly killed protecting Xinyun, and the Wu were helpless to stop him.

"I... I think he knows who I am, so he didn't hurt me too badly. I'm sorry, Yunfei... I'm not suited to fighting, so I wasn't able to help Xinyun..."

"Don't say that now. Don't blame yourself." Bai Yunfei comforted her, "As long as you're okay, that's good. Do you know who that person was?"

The apologetic look on her face increased, "I... I don't know..."

“He’s Ta Shan the ‘Stone Asura’!”

A voice called out to Bai Yunfei from the side. Bai Yunfei turned his head and saw a heavily injured Wu Gang. Wu Gang’s face was still dreadfully white, and his footsteps were uneven as he forced himself to walk toward Bai Yunfei.

“Brot... brother Bai... I’m sorry,” he apologized, “I wasn’t able to protect miss Tang...”

When he had come across Bai Yunfei here, he had been on his way to request assistance from the Tang. After Bai Yunfei and Jing Mingfeng left, he was left alone with Tang Xinyun and Kou Tingting, and thus, he had been unable to leave. Furthermore, manners dictated that he stayed around to protect the two, but the man that came was just far too strong. He was left with wounds all over when he tried protecting Tang Xinyun.

“There’s no need to apologize, brother Wu. I know you tried your best.” Bai Yunfei replied, “Who did you say the kidnapper was?”

“If I’m not wrong, he’s the criminal that the government has a warrant for, Ta Shan the ‘Stone Asura’!” Wu Gang spoke without mincing his words. “He’s a very well-known soul cultivator in the Forest Pass Province. An early-stage Soul Exalt with the earth affinity, and he loves to kill. People say he once killed an entire clan over a disagreement or say he kills people for their treasures. He’s an unredeemable criminal, but a strong one. He always evades capture and commits acts of crime wherever he goes. I never thought that he’d end up in Mo City or that he would try to kidnap miss Tang...”

Bai Yunfei’s heart skipped a beat, and his face grew unsightly for a moment as he listened to these new developments. Managing to turn his head, Bai Yunfei asked Kou Tingting, “Tingting, where did they go, and how long has it been?”

“The... the east. I think it’s been about half an hour by now...” Kou Tingting pointed to the east blankly before realizing what Bai

Yunfei was about to do, “Ah! Yunfei, don’t tell me you’re going to go after them!? You can’t! He’s a Soul Exalt. You’re no match for him! Brother Wu already sent someone to notify the Tang. I’m sure they’ll send someone to help. You sho—”

“Bzzz...”

Before she could even finish what she was saying, Bai Yunfei had declined to listen to her plan. The Tempest Sword reappeared once again, and as soon as he stepped on it, he took off in a flash.

“Chirp!!”

Xiao Bai chose that time to cry out loud in an anxious chirp. While it didn’t try to fly up with Bai Yunfei, Xiao Bai pointed its beak in a completely different direction than to the east.

“Eh?” Bai Yunfei uttered in surprise. Comparing this direction to what Kou Tingting had said before, he asked, “Xiao Bai, you’re saying Xinyun isn’t to the east, but to the... the north!?”

“Chirp!” Xiao Bai answered affirmatively with a nod of its head.

Thanks to the soul contract between it and Tang Xinyun, Xiao Bai could tell where she was at any time.

That meant that Ta Shan had turned a different direction after getting away.

Nodding his thanks to Xiao Bai, Bai Yunfei said, “Don’t worry. I’ll make sure I’ll bring Xinyun back safe and sound!”

As he was about to take off, Bai Yunfei felt the space behind the Tempest Sword dip slightly. Turning, he saw Jing Mingfeng stepping onto the sword.

“Less talking, more moving. I’m going for sure. A second pair of hands never hurts, so get to it!” Jing Mingfeng slapped Bai Yunfei on the shoulder before he could even say anything.

Reluctance flashed across Bai Yunfei’s eyes. This ordeal wasn’t as simple as getting back the fireseed spirit mushroom; the enemy

they faced now was an early-stage Soul Exalt and there might very well be more than one enemy.

The fact that Jing Mingfeng was willing to face such risks with Bai Yunfei was enough to fill him with gratitude and friendship.

Turning to the north, Bai Yunfei's eyes narrowed frostily. Pressing down on the sword, he commanded it to fly off into the sky.

.....

A single streak of green light could be seen trailing across the clear sky like a shooting star. Though many people saw the streak, the sight was only for a moment before it disappeared into a small line.

Within this green light, Bai Yunfei was steering the sword with an extremely serious expression on his face. The cold wind cut into his body like a knife. It whistled past his ears like the screams of a banshee, but he didn't seem to notice. Ten minutes had already passed since he and Jing Mingfeng had started their journey, but no words had been exchanged. Disjointed in his thoughts, Bai Yunfei tried to think of a way to best deal with this situation.

It was then a small spark of light entered his eyes as though he had come to a conclusion. Shaking his right hand, a small black dagger appeared in it. It was Jing Mingfeng's Blackwind Dagger!

Shifting perpendicular to how he had been standing, Bai Yunfei handed the dagger to Jing Mingfeng.

"Eh? Ol'Bai, this is..." Jing Mingfeng muttered to him as he took the dagger, but before he could say anything more, what Bai Yunfei did next caused him to cry out in alarm, "What are you doing!?"

As soon as Bai Yunfei handed him the Blackwind Dagger, his right hand shook again to take out another object.

This object was...

# Chapter 331: Forming an Essence Fireseed Again!

---

The one who had kidnapped Tang Xinyun was an early-stage Soul Exalt at the very least. Bai Yunfei wasn't confident that he could guarantee a victory against such an infamous criminal from the Forest Pass Province since his own strength was still lacking.

Thought true that Bai Yunfei once defeated a late-stage Soul Exalt with his Cataclysmic Seal, the Cataclysmic Seal had been many times stronger during the battle outside of Curopia City.

His fireseed essence was gone. He could only rely on his upgraded equipment and an above-average soulforce to fight Soul Ancestors.

Against a Soul Exalt, these two factors simply weren't enough.

The original plan was to wait a few days before giving the Blackwind Dagger back to Jing Mingfeng, but with the situation they way it was now, to do otherwise would be foolhardy. Giving him back the dagger wouldn't amount to much either; what he really needed to do was increase his own strength. That meant... regaining the ability to control elemental fire!!

When he gave back the dagger to Jing Mingfeng, the other object he took out was the... fireseed spirit mushroom!!

"Yunfei, what are you planning!?" Jing Mingfeng repeated in alarm.

Staring at the fireseed spirit mushroom in his hand, the look in Bai Yunfei's eyes darkened with hesitation for two seconds before determination replaced it, "I have to... reform my essence fireseed!!"

With no further hesitation, Bai Yunfei stuffed the mushroom into his mouth!!

"You've gone crazy, Yunfei! When has the fireseed spirit



mushroom ever had a use like that!?” Taken aback by the ‘stupidity’ of Bai Yunfei’s actions, Jing Mingfeng moved to stop him, but it was too late.

With the fireseed spirit mushroom in his mouth, Bai Yunfei made quick work of it by swallowing it. It turns into a warm flame as it passed through his mouth, the mushroom dropped down into his stomach, but the overall temperature of his body had increased. A wisp of fire spiralled up from his stomach, and in no time, a scorching flame was running rampant through his body!

“Ugh!”

An intense jolt of pain ran through Bai Yunfei’s body, causing him to let out an involuntary gasp of pain. Even the Tempest Sword started to sway slightly before Bai Yunfei regained control of it.

His fists were clenched, and his teeth were grit together in pain. His eyebrows were wrinkled, and his eyes were extremely bloodshot from all the pain he was feeling.

The fireseed spirit mushroom was a sort of panacea for trying to form an essence fireseed, but in regards to how it could be used like this, one would have to remember back to Jade Willow City when Bai Yunfei first formed his essence fireseed.

While it remained true that he has managed to form one, it was only because Hong Yin was playing the part of conductor and You Qingfeng was constantly bringing out medicines that could help Bai Yunfei.

The medicines weren’t meant to bolster the fireseed spirit mushroom’s effects. In fact, they were there to decrease its harmful side effects! What other side effects could there possibly be besides the excruciating pain of being burned all throughout the body and even soul!?

Bai Yunfei knew what the medicines were for, but he had none

on hand. Even if he did, there was no time to try and synthesize the best combination right now. What mattered most right now was speed! He needed that essence fireseed formed here and now!!

“Bang!!”

The first appearance of uncontrollable fire came from Bai Yunfei’s right fist first, then his right arm, then his left arm...

In a matter of seconds, his entire body was aflame. It was covered in a fire that didn’t seem to burn his hair or his clothes. Instead, it stuck strangely to his body, almost like it was trying to penetrate his skin except something seemed to be blocking it.

The sudden appearance of these flames startled Jing Mingfeng. He nearly fell off the Tempest Sword after taking a frightened step back. Somehow, he managed to create a small gap between Bai Yunfei and him. Not knowing what else to do, Jing Mingfeng surrounded himself in a bubble of elemental wind to stop the flames from touching him.

It was pointless to say anything more about what was going on in Bai Yunfei’s body. With his face contorted in pain, with his teeth clamped down so hard they were drawing blood from his lips, and with his bloodshot eyes, Bai Yunfei seemed as though he was nearing the brink of insanity.

“Who cares... about this pain? I went through this pain in the Crafting School, yet I failed.

“But!”

“I’ll do it this time. I’ll succeed!”

His final thoughts were spat out in an odd mixture of encouragement and an oath to himself. The next words he yelled were shouted at the sky, “Fireseed essence!” he roared, “Form dammit! Form!!!!”

“Boom!”

Fire began to burst from his body with such power that the surrounding elements in the world began to tremble. All of the elemental fire in the world began to gather and materialize into view before being sucked into a bubble around the Tempest Sword, keeping up with its flight.

From far away, spectators that looked up would be terrified to see a giant fireball streaking through the sky.

Within this spherical ball of fire stood an extremely sweaty Jing Mingfeng. He stood on the very end of the sword with his Blackwind Dagger held tight in his hands. Still within the safety of his bubble of elemental wind, he stared frightfully at Bai Yunfei. Somehow, the bubble protecting him was blocking the elemental fire from touching him. However, the target of the flames wasn't him, so Jing Mingfeng wasn't in any immediate danger.

What shocked Jing Mingfeng the most was the mystery of what was going on with Bai Yunfei's body rather than the extremely hot ball of elemental fire around him...

From the very start, Bai Yunfei's aura had been increasing nonstop. At the beginning, he was a late-stage Soul Warrior, but then the flames in his body propelled his strength through the levels of an early-stage Soul Sprite, to a mid-stage, and then a late-stage before petering slightly in speed. From there, he reached the level of an early-stage Soul Ancestor, but... his strength was still rising!!

"Is... is this how strong Ol'Bai really is? That's crazy..." A hand rose up to swipe the sweat off his face in shock. "He was a mid-stage Soul Sprite the last time we met. What in the world did he pick up since then!? Compared to him, my treasures of war aren't even worth a pebble..."

Jing Mingfeng couldn't exactly see what was going on with Bai Yunfei. However, he could see a hazy silhouette that stood tall but loose while elemental fire surged into his body.

Jing Mingfeng could tell that Bai Yunfei's aura was growing stronger with each wisp of elemental fire that traveled into his body.

Ten minutes passed in this fashion before Jing Mingfeng felt a tremble from within the flames. That tremble triggered the start of the flames doubling their speed into Bai Yunfei's body. Within seconds, every wisp of elemental fire had disappeared from sight.

Without any elemental fire in sight, the air around the two men and the sword returned to its normal, tranquil state.

The only difference was with the outer appearance of Bai Yunfei. A red light, barely discernable to the naked eye, stuck to Bai Yunfei's body like a shell. It moved with his body no matter which way he moved, and with each movement, the strength of his being could be felt...

A mid-stage Soul Ancestor!!

.....

Like the air around him, Bai Yunfei was back to normal. The blood that had been visible in his eyes earlier was gone, and even though he suffered such tremendous pain earlier, Bai Yunfei felt at ease with himself.

His right hand came up. Looking at it, he gave a tentative clench of the fist, feeling the familiar surge of elemental fire in his body. As it slowly circulated around his body, a pleased look began to creep into Bai Yunfei's eyes.

"At last, I'm finally a mid-stage Soul Ancestor... the amount of soulforce I had was already enough to become one a long time ago..."

Seeing nothing else out of the ordinary after a rough inspection, Bai Yunfei nodded his head in satisfaction. There was no need to continue thinking about this.

Looking forward, he thought, "Right now, I need to look for

Xinyun!”

He closed his eyes in concentration. The red light that surrounded his body flickered once before pulsing out.

Not only was he using his soulforce to scan the area, he was also using the entirety of his strength.

Right behind him, Jing Mingfeng opened his mouth to say something now that everything was back to normal, but he chose against it. Closing his mouth, he stood silently where he was on the sword and tried not to disturb Bai Yunfei.

Back in Mo City, Xiao Bai had indicated that the person who had kidnapped Tang Xinyun changed direction from the east to the north. There weren't any guarantees that the kidnapper wouldn't change direction again or continue running in a straight line.

Bai Yunfei wasn't trying to sense for the enemy. The only thing he could do to find Tang Xinyun was to find one thing...

The Yun's Soul Ring!!

The ring that he painstakingly upgraded to +13. It wasn't at a level where it was a soulbound armament, but his soul compatibility was at forty percent; this left him with a very rudimentary connection to the ring.

While there was a connection, Bai Yunfei had never tested it before ever since he had left the Crafting School, so he wasn't quite sure how far apart he could be from the ring and still sense it.

To sense for something that wasn't a soulbound armament, Bai Yunfei would need to be able to use his soulsense. Without his essence fireseed, Bai Yunfei hadn't been capable of using his soulsense, that was one of the major reasons for eating the fireseed spirit mushroom.

While he concentrated on divining the connection and finding the 'aura' of the ring, the Tempest Sword continue to fly.

“Where is it! Where is it! Hurry up!!” For five whole minutes, Bai Yunfei was beside himself in panic as he tried to make the connection.

Several minutes later, Bai Yunfei’s eyes flew open in joy,

“Found it!!”

## Chapter 332: The Stone Asura

---

At the edge of a very dense part of the forest, a series of rushing footsteps could be heard startling the nearby animals. Soon, the thickets were brushed away to reveal a large man swiftly running into a clearing.

This orange-robed man stood two meters tall with four equally muscled limbs. His head was clean-shaven, and his face wore over a dozen scars. The most intimidating one was a large cut from his left eye down to his chin.

The expression on his face made him look like a sinister person even with how fast he was running.

More importantly, there was a single figure in white draped over his shoulder.

It was Tang Xinyun.

By extension, this meant that this bulky man was the one Wu Gang had called the 'Stone Asura,' Ta Shan.

On top of his shoulder, Both of Tang Xinyun's arms had been tied behind her back. Helpless in captivity, Tang Xinyun tried her best to struggle, but to no avail.

Not only was Ta Shan a large man, he was also very fast. His feet looked as though the wind was carrying him, and with each step, the ground beneath him seemed to echo with his footsteps. His feet weren't stomping down with much force, yet there was enough weight to leave behind a series of unusually deep footprints

"Almost there now, just need to hand this woman off to the junior headmaster and the job is done..." Ta Shan's eyes stared up at a nearby mountain. "I guess I should thank the Tang and their auction house. Who knew kidnapping someone in Mo City would be so easy? Even the eyes of the officials were too busy to keep track of things. Did they really think no one would attempt a

kidnapping at this time?

“Hehe... what a beautiful finish to this job. I wonder if I can get a bit more for that? Maybe some medicines or a secret technique that’ll help me become a mid-stage Soul Exalt!” The thought of finishing this job so beautifully left Ta Shan hopeful of a wonderful reward, which added a jump to his step.

“It’s little wonder how the junior headmaster got his title if he can afford to touch a daughter of the Tang. Does he like her? Is she just a toy, or a slave to play around with?”

“Who’s there!?” Snapping out of his thoughts, Ta Shan came to a sudden stop as his eyes honed in on a mound to his right. “It’s no use hiding, I can sense you! Come on out or else!”

Even as he spoke, an orange light was emanating from his body while his right foot menacingly dug half an inch into the ground.

“Hiss... it’s little wonder you’re a Soul Exalt with sensitivity like that.” An eery voice piped up in response to Ta Shan before a skinny-looking figure with a pointed head appeared. Two squinty eyes stared at the larger man with a gloomy look, “You were too slow, Ta Shan. Due to your slowness, the junior headmaster has sent me out to find you...”

“Hidden Snake, it’s you!” Ta Shan’s eyebrows knit together in annoyance, “Who’re you calling slow? I haven’t took a break ever since I kidnapped this woman. I did change routes several times to shake off the pursuers from the Tang, but that didn’t take up any time at all; did you want me to waste my energy to try to skywalk!?”

Annoyance came easy to Ta Shan when Hidden Snake was involved. The man loved to hide his aura to nearly undetectable levels, and even though Hidden Snake was only an early-stage Soul Ancestor, he had been fortunate enough to gain favor with the junior headmaster first.



The way Hidden Snake was talking to him and the way he was using the junior headmaster as a means of pressure made Ta Shan angry enough to rip off his head off...

“Hiss... did the Tang’s men find you?” Hidden Snake rasped; he enjoyed adding the ‘hiss’ to the beginning of his words like a snake would —perhaps the reason for his current epithet.

“Pah, what do you think? You see anyone chasing me right now?” Annoyed, Ta Shan spat out his next few words.

“Hiss... that’s good then. Let’s get going and hand this woman to the jun—” Halfway through his words, Hidden Snake whirled around with eyes wide-open, staring behind Ta Shan, “Hiss!! Ta Shan! You said no one was following you? Then what is this!?”

“Eh?” Turning around at the same time as Hidden Snake, Ta Shan’s eyes narrowed when he saw a single streak of green light coming toward them from several kilometers away!

“A flying soul armament!!” Ta Shan exclaimed; he hadn’t thought that someone would’ve chased him all the way here.

“Hiss! Ta Shan, you brought back trouble, so you deal with it!” Hidden Snake squinted. He sounded annoyed, but at the same time, it looked as if he was happy that Ta Shan would have to deal with this trouble.

As fast as he spoke, Hidden Snake began to retreat into the shadows.

“No need to tell me twice! Of course I’ll deal with this!” Ta Shan snorted. Tossing Tang Xinyun to Hidden Snake, he started for the flying object, “You take the woman to the junior headmaster. I’ll come after I deal with them!”

Upon catching Tang Xinyun, a lecherous look crawled across Hidden Snake’s face. Since she was to be the junior headmaster’s toy, Hidden Snake didn’t dare try to ‘enjoy’ the prize before he did, so he took her under the shoulder and hid in a small mound.

That left Ta Shan to stand in place. His eyes stared down the flying sword, several hundred meters away.

When he saw one rider on it, Ta Shan's lips curled in a sinister smile, and his entire frame prepared for a fight.

His right hand came up to reveal a yellow iron rod about a meter long. Blazing with an orange light, the strength radiating from the weapon was visible to the naked eye.

"Ha!" Grunting, Ta Shan stabbed his rod into the ground, transmitting a great amount of elemental earth from his arm to the rod and from the rod into the earth. As soon as the elemental earth made contact with the ground, it started to vibrate and shake, like it was trying to pull the surroundings onto the rod. After several moments, the iron rod was nearly fully encapsulated by the earth before it turned into a substance as hard as rock!!

By the time Ta Shan pulled the rod from the ground, it was no longer just a rod; instead, it was a sword with stone as the blade!

Clasping the hilt of the rock sword, Ta Shan stared at the incoming people with a bloodthirsty expression. The muscles in his right hand rapidly began to expand and contract, and with a mighty push against the ground, he launched himself into the air like an orange bullet that was headed to strike down the incoming green light!

"Bang!"

A halo of red light came forth from the green light as Ta Shan approached. From the red light came a shining red spear that stabbed at Ta Shan's giant blade!

As big as it was, the sword had no real 'tip' or 'edge' to speak of, so it was powerless to stop the spear from stabbing straight through it!

Frowning at the sight, Ta Shan was prepared to 'slap' the spear when, out of the corner of his eyes, something caused him to start

in fright.

An orange platform formed right underneath his feet, and with no hesitation, Ta Shan leaped back in retreat!

“Boom!!!!”

A wave of elemental fire exploded out of the spear when it hit his sword. Though the explosion hadn't severely hurt Ta Shan, the concussive shock had numbed his sword-hand. His weapon had nearly detached from his grasp due to the force, but with several retreating steps, Ta Shan was able to regain both his footing and keep ahold of his weapon. He stared strangely at the person who had attacked him.

“What a soul armament!” Eyes flickering with interest, Ta Shan stared first at the half-broken stone sword of his before looking up at the man holding the spear. “But the owner is quite weak, haha! A mid-stage Soul Ancestor!? If you're going to come at me with strength like that, prepare to feel what death is like!!”

Pushing against the ground as he spoke, Ta Shan's body flew like a speeding bullet while his soul armament dragged against the ground below. Twinkling with orange light as it did, Ta Shan reformed the sword before bringing it up to swing down onto his enemy!

The person wielding the spear against Ta Shan was naturally Bai Yunfei.

By sensing the presence of the Yun's Soul Ring and making use of the speed of the Tempest Sword, Bai Yunfei was able to catch up to Tang Xinyun's kidnapper. When he first arrived, Bai Yunfei had originally planned to skip by Ta Shan to save Tang Xinyun, but that wouldn't be possible. Thus, he now chose to fight.

Jing Mingfeng was nowhere to be found. It seemed that he already jumped off the Tempest Sword. No one knew where he was hiding now.

“He’s fast!” Bai Yunfei thought in surprise after witnessing Ta Shan’s the reaction speed. Bai Yunfei made use of the Wave Treading Steps to move off to the side to dodge since his enemy was moving quicker and quicker.

The sword nearly grazed Bai Yunfei’s body on its way down, but before Bai Yunfei could take advantage of the missed strike, he realized that something was amiss and hastily pulled out the Cataclysmic Seal. As soon as the brick appeared, he activated the +12 effect so that a barrier appeared about three inches away from his body.

Before the giant sword could hit the ground, the trajectory of the blade turned at a sharp right angle to slash into Bai Yunfei’s body!

The sword looked incredibly heavy, but in Ta Shan’s hands, it seemed no different than someone wielding air!

Even more incredible was the fact that when the sword changed trajectory, an orange glow of light filled the top of the sword before the stone jutted out to form a ‘point’!

No longer did it seem apt to call this weapon a sword, perhaps the fang of a giant wolf would make more sense!

“Bang!!”

There was a loud bang when the weapon made contact with Bai Yunfei’s barrier. Despite barrier’s protection, Bai Yunfei was sent flying several meters through the air before his Fire-tipped Spear stabbed into the ground to anchor his body.

Petering to an eventual stop, the unharmed Bai Yunfei was surprised to see a sign of a dent in the orange barrier around him!!

“He’s... he’s strong!! Is this what it means to be a Soul Exalt?” Bai Yunfei thought to himself as he looked at the damage on the barrier. As he inspected the damage, a pained expression started to appear on his face.

“If the enemy is this strong, will... will I be able to win?”

# Chapter 333: Battling a Soul Exalt

---

Bai Yunfei wasn't the only one surprised; Ta Shan was even more surprised!

Ta Shan clearly felt his sword 'hit' something, but Bai Yunfei looked completely unharmed from that collision!

"Impossible! How did he take on that strike!"

Incredulous, Ta Shan began to inspect Bai Yunfei. As Ta Shan's eyes observed him, he soon noticed the floating Cataclysmic Seal right next to Bai Yunfei, "That soul armament! It isn't a defensive item. It seems to be an extremely rare item that can make energy barriers, a strong barrier in fact!"

"Hehe... it's no wonder you came after me yourself; you've all these strong soul armaments with you, but do you think you can rely on those to win against someone who's a higher level than you!?" Ta Shan barked in laughter.

He despised those who relied on soul armaments like Bai Yunfei, but that didn't mean he would underestimate them. For a moment, his entire body glowed bright with an orange light, and the next second, the ground around him began to climb up his body. Surprised, Bai Yunfei could only watch in silence for the next three seconds as a 'stone man' began to take form in front of him.

It was a defensive type soul skill, Terra Armor!

Ta Shan was already a tall and bulky man in his own right, but as soon as the Terra Armor fully encapsulated him, he grew to a height of three meters. He was like a veritable mountain in stature. Only his blood-thirsty eyes could be seen within the armor. The giant stone sword had 'fused' into his hand.

Now that this 'transformation' was complete, Ta Shan saw no reason to speak any more. Pushing off against the ground, Ta Shan

shot straight for Bai Yunfei with the momentum of a war chariot!

This was the first time Bai Yunfei had ever seen a soul cultivator fight with a ‘get-up’ like this. Assuming that Ta Shan wouldn’t be able to move as quickly as an earth-type soul cultivator, Bai Yunfei prepared to use the Wave Treading Steps to move out of the way and exploit any holes in Ta Shan’s defenses. However, he had miscalculated one thing.

He was up against a Soul Exalt of all people!

“Fast!!” The thought of attacking Ta Shan immediately bled away from Bai Yunfei’s mind since... the supposed ‘cumbersome’ Ta Shan was coming at him at a breakneck speed!

Of all the elements in the world, earth was thought to be one of the slowest, but the explosiveness of a Soul Exalt’s strength was beyond what Bai Yunfei could account for.

When the giant rock sword was practically upon him, all Bai Yunfei could do was activate his barrier and hope for the best.

“Bang!!”

Like before, the barrier remained upright and in one piece, but the blow was still hefty enough to worry Bai Yunfei. Bai Yunfei was unable to stop himself as he took a single step back. He then grit his teeth and stabbed out with his spear.

Soul Exalts generally enjoyed using the powers of elements to attack their enemies head-on. As such, Ta Shan was an aberration to Soul Exalts since he enjoyed close quarters combat where he could crush his enemies into a pulp. Each swing of his mighty sword required practically no exertion, and even Bai Yunfei’s Fire-tipped Spear would be powerless against it.

There was still a sliver of fear, of the explosion the spear might bring, so Ta Shan was reluctant to clash tips with his sword. No matter how much confidence he had in his armor, he wasn’t willing to task that big of a risk.

Bai Yunfei tried his best to take the upper hand for several exchanges, but every move he made was fruitless. Every move Ta Shan made in response seemed like they were made in casual jest. There were no holes in his defense. After several exchanges, Bai Yunfei felt as though Ta Shan was playing with him rather than fighting him!!

“As I thought... even though I’ve regained my strength, I still can’t fight against a person as strong as him?” Defending himself against two mighty strikes, Bai Yunfei sighed in slight vexation.

“What if...” A flash of inspiration ran through Bai Yunfei’s eyes, “What if I used my ‘special’ technique!?”

Parrying another blow with his spear, Bai Yunfei spun the spear around his waist to transfer it to his left hand. Jumping up as he did so, he leaped three meters up to where Ta Shan’s head was!

Leaping into the air meant that Bai Yunfei wouldn’t be able to move out of the way or put enough force behind any strike he made; this meant that Bai Yunfei had left himself wide open!

“You’re going to die!!” Ta Shan barked in laughter.

As he prepared to swing his sword, Ta Shan saw a brilliant gleam of light appear when Bai Yunfei raised his right arm. The next second, a nearly two-meter-long blade of fire appeared above over the same arm!

Thanks to the effects of gravity, Bai Yunfei was starting his descent back to the ground when the Flame Winged Dagger appeared. Borrowing the momentum of his fall, Bai Yunfei turned his body so that the Flame Winged Dagger would slice down on Ta Shan’s head!

“What soul skill is this!?” Ta Shan exclaimed; this move was simply far too sudden for him to expect.

Due to its unexpectedness, Ta Shan had to forego his attack. He raised his left hand to shield the weakest part of his body—his eyes.

“Bang!!”

The Flame Winged Dagger exploded upon contact with the coarse arm of Ta Shan, leaving a wave of fire to pour over his body afterwards. While the fire surged over his body, Ta Shan waved his other arm so to blow open a crack in the fire.

He was unharmed by the fire, but the Flame Winged Dagger left a darkened mark on his armor. This mark was by no means a wound to worry about.

Despite not doing a thing against Ta Shan, the Flame Winged Dagger had accomplished its task of robbing Ta Shan of his eyesight for a moment.

By the time Ta Shan lowered his arm, he was greeted with the sight of Bai Yunfei’s spear stabbing into his chestplate!

This time, he was unable to defend himself. Eyes dilating in shock, Ta Shan’s mind was shouting that he should try to evade as fast as possible. Even though he had faith in his armor, he still shouldn’t take this blow!

A strange sight occurred when Ta Shan’s right hand twitched. From the very back of his stone armor, cracks appeared on the surface like ripples of water before a single figure ‘broke’ from it in retreat; that figure was Ta Shan!

Somehow managing to eject himself from his armor, Ta Shan was able retreat and leave behind the shell as a shield!

“Boom!!”

The events that happened after that went as Ta Shan expected.

As soon as he fully detached from his stone armor, the spear stabbed into it. With an ear-piercing explosion, the Fire-tipped Spear exploded at the tip and blew apart his entire armor!

“That spear is definitely strange! I can’t be hit by it!!” Retreating to a safe spot a hundred meters away, Ta Shan shook away the



lingering fear from his head. As he looked at Bai Yunfei, the light in his eyes was no longer as playful as before.

“Tsk! Then let’s try this!” Foregoing the idea of close quarters combat, Ta Shan changed his fang-shaped stone sword into a more spherical bat-shaped weapon. Priming the weapon behind him, the muscles on Ta Shan’s arms bulged in a mighty display of strength before he swung the weapon!

Swinging in a half-circle, the soul armament flickered orange in color as several stone spikes detached from the soul armament and flew toward Bai Yunfei like arrows!

There were roughly a hundred of these stone spikes. They covered a huge area. As they flew, several spikes trailed behind the others in hopes of striking down Bai Yunfei. Left with barely any room to dodge, all Bai Yunfei could do was have the Cataclysmic Seal summon another barrier for him to hide behind.

“Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!!” Slamming against the barrier with a rhythmic staccato, the stone spikes were stopped stone-cold. They were reduced to nothing more than sand and dirt.

The barrage continued for three whole seconds. During that time, Bai Yunfei came to a startling discovery—the barrier was starting to tremble!

With each successful spike it defended against, the barrier would weaken in color by a smidgen, and Bai Yunfei could feel his soulforce slipping into the Cataclysmic Seal as it tried to replenish the barrier’s strength.

At last, the barrage came to an end with the barrier at about half the intensity as before.

Bai Yunfei let out a sigh of relief. Taking notice of the cloud of dust around him, Bai Yunfei was startled to see a black figure come running through the cloud and swing a giant sword down toward his head!!

“Bang!!”

Visible to the horrified eyes of Bai Yunfei, the giant stone sword of Ta Shan slammed squarely into the barrier. It broke through what was once thought to be an invincible barrier!!

This orange-flashing sword of Ta Shan still possessed enough strength to come smashing down on Bai Yunfei’s head!

## Chapter 334: Pushed Back? Time to Counterstrike! (First)

---

The Terra Armor had already been fully reformed on Ta Shan's body by the time he was in front of Bai Yunfei. Taking on the form of a giant sword, the soul armament of Ta Shan took advantage of the breaking of the barrier to deliver yet another strike! With the downward momentum, the sword was already dangerously close to smashing into Bai Yunfei's head!

“Bang!!”

A snarl erupted from Ta Shan's lips as his sword swung into Bai Yunfei's head. The sword paused momentarily on Bai Yunfei's before continuing to smash through Bai Yunfei's body, creating a crater in the ground below.

But, Bai Yunfei's body had... faded away!?

“But how!?” The satisfied feeling of a kill was replaced with shock as the sight in front of him registered in his eyes. He was in disbelief. His sword had clearly smashed through Bai Yunfei. It had torn him apart with elemental earth, yet no flesh nor blood could be seen.

Bai Yunfei had disappeared without a trace!!

The sensation of ‘hitting’ flesh was real, but at the same time, the ‘flesh’ wasn't real!

In the middle of Ta Shan's confusion, two identical spears came flying out of the dust cloud from the left and the right, attempting to stab at his throat and heart!

These... these were the doppelgangers!!

Seconds ago, when Ta Shan's sword was nearly upon him, Bai Yunfei had activated the +12 effect of the Fire-tipped Spear to summon a doppelganger in his place. From there, he launched his

counterattack!

Rather than being surprised by this odd ‘trickery’, Ta Shan was more than aware of what was happening in front of him. Two spears were coming at him, that much was for certain, but he wouldn’t be caught off guard just yet. Snorting at the attempt, Ta Shan’s left leg pushed off the ground as he leaped back. He was moving his giant sword up for a horizontal swing.

His retreat served more than just one purpose. Not only did he want to create some distance between him and the spears, the elemental earth he transmitted into the ground manifested into the form of a spike. Launching out of the ground, this roughly arm-thick spike flew with blinding speed toward Bai Yunfei’s stomach!

“Pft!!” One grunt of pain later, Bai Yunfei’s body was lifted into the air with the spike stabbing out from his back!

Then, his figure quickly dissolved into air just like the first—a doppelganger!

Two seconds hadn’t even transpired since the activation of the doppelgangers, but the two of them had already been dispelled by the tyrannical power of Ta Shan!

With the last of the doppelgangers dispelled, that left the Bai Yunfei on the right. He was the real one! Bai Yunfei was in trouble now since he hadn’t expected Ta Shan to defeat his doppelgangers so quickly; his chance of a surprise attack was completely ruined. Ta Shan’s sword was rapidly coming at him again!

“Damn it all!” Bai Yunfei couldn’t help but scream in his mind. He had no other choice but to abandon his attack, but there wasn’t enough time for the Cataclysmic Seal to erect another barrier. Bai Yunfei could only maneuver his spear in front of him to stop Ta Shan’s sword from swinging into him.

“Bang!” Bending almost circular at the shaft, the Fire-tipped

Spear was ripped from Bai Yunfei's hands. It was sent flying away!

“Hahaha! I'd like to see you fight without that red spear now!!” Ta Shan howled in laughter. Without giving Bai Yunfei the chance to even process what had happened, he moved forward to strike again!

“Tsk!” Forcing himself upright, Bai Yunfei glared at Ta Shan in annoyance for a moment before barking out loud, “Cataclysmic Seal, go!!”

Spinning in response, the Cataclysmic Seal next to Bai Yunfei lit up with a fiery red light before flying at Ta Shan. On the way, the brick expanded ten times its normal size to stop Ta Shan's advance!

“It can change shape!” Eyes widening in surprise, Ta Shan's flickered with light before his entire body disappeared!

No.

He didn't disappear.

What had happened was that he had leaped several meters into the sky. The Cataclysmic Seal was left below. Right as it was flying right underneath him, Ta Shan made use of the brick to propel himself toward Bai Yunfei!

This time, Bai Yunfei finally found himself at a loss for what to do. By using the Wave Treading Steps, he was able to dodge the first strike. Before he could relax, a second sword strike was already coming toward his midriff!

Unable to do anything, Bai Yunfei tried his best to move out of the way as much as he could with his arms up, but to no avail. The flat edge of the sword clipped into his side and sent him flying with a bang.

Ta Shan continued to chase after him!

Bloodlust was filling Ta Shan's eyes once again. He was getting

back into the rhythm of things. He enjoyed the sensation of the fight. Each slash, punch, or kick had been delivered swiftly to Bai Yunfei with elemental earth to further enhance the destructive force of his blows. If not for the quick-moving Wave Treading Steps and the occasional use of the Cataclysmic Seal as a shield, Bai Yunfei would've lost his life many times.

Most of the time, Bai Yunfei had no choice but to use his arms to defend himself. If not for the bracers, Bai Yunfei would've lost all use of his arms.

No matter how much anyone looked at this situation right now... it felt like Bai Yunfei would eventually lose to Ta Shan. He would be reduced to paste sooner or later.

Would Bai Yunfei really let himself succumb to such an ending without a fight?

.....

“Bang!”

Ta Shan's sword was parried once again by Bai Yunfei's arms. The force of the blow sent shivers through Bai Yunfei's body, but instead of looking worried, his eyes suddenly lit up in excitement!

On the other side, Ta Shan had felt a stronger-than-normal amount of rebound when his sword was parried by Bai Yunfei's left arm. A slight crackling sound came from Ta Shan's right hand along with a slight grunt.

The +10 additional effect of the Returner Bracer, activated!!

Returner Bracer stats:

- Equipment Grade: Middle Earth
- Elemental Affinity: Earth
- Upgrade Level: +10
- Defense: 890
- Additional Defense: 478
- Soul Compatibility: 10%

+10 Additional Effect: There is a 15% chance to reflect 30% of the damage dealt when defending. The amount of damage reflected cannot exceed the total amount of defense of the equipment and cannot reflect long-ranged attacks.

Upgrade Requirement: 100 Soulpoints

Reflecting thirty percent of the damage meant reflecting it back at the damage dealer. By extension, this meant reflecting damage to where Ta Shan had no defenses!

It caused a strain on Bai Yunfei's body to reflect the damage. Gritting his teeth as the pain traveled around his arms, Bai Yunfei's feet pressed several centimeters into the ground as he pushed off to widen the distance between him and Ta Shan. The muscles in Bai Yunfei's right hand bulged slightly as he clenched it. In response to his gathering of strength, the Ardent Sun Glove in his hand began to flicker with wisps of fire. With all preparations done, Bai Yunfei lashed out with a vicious right punch at Ta Shan!

Eighty-one Fold Fist Force!

“Bang!!”

There was a muffled thud as fist met man. Even as a three meter tall behemoth, Ta Shan was lifted nearly half a meter off the ground from Bai Yunfei's punch! A series of cracking sounds could be heard as the elemental fire from Bai Yunfei's punch made its way into Ta Shan's armor. Spiralling the way a spiderweb would, the cracks soon became so widespread over Ta Shan's right arm that the armor in that area disintegrated! Even the stone sword he was holding had been dropped from his hand because of the force!

“Boom!!”

The heavy frame of Ta Shan smashed back into the ground. Dropping to his knees, there was a deep crack running through Ta Shan's armor.

Bai Yunfei didn't move after that one punch. Instead, his left

hand clutched at his right wrist. His palm faced Ta Shan. Gathering at the center of his open palm was a large amount of eye-piercingly red light...

“Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh...”

Under the bewildered eyes of Ta Shan, a series of fist-sized fireballs launched from Bai Yunfei’s palm to surround him in a widespread attack!



## Chapter 335: The Overusage of a Technique and Despair! (Second)

---

The fireballs whizzed through the air as they traveled. The fireballs Bai Yunfei had shot looked similar to Ta Shan's stone spike attack from earlier.

The only difference was that the one who was attacking and the one who was defending was reversed.

Ta Shan was kneeling on the ground with his right palm propping up his body. A small crack could be seen running through his right arm with blood streaming from it. With a grunt of pain, Ta Shan made his elemental earth staunch the bleeding as it flowed into the ground. The ground coiled up his arm, fully reforming the Terra Armor.

Now that all that was done, he could focus on the incoming barrage.

Narrowing his eyes, Ta Shan didn't look as though he would be moving from his spot. Slapping his hand against the ground, his palm transmitted some soulforce into it. The soulforce erected a dirt wall three meters tall, ten meters wide, and one meter thick!

Bai Yunfei had seen this move before some time ago by Lü Fang, but the wall Lü Fang had made wasn't nearly as strong as Ta Shan.

“Booom!!!”

The fireballs impacted the dirt wall in a series of mini-explosions. With each fireball that hit the wall, a cloud of dirt flew up, robbing the area of visibility.

Not discouraged by the failure of his first attempt, Bai Yunfei launched a second round of fireballs to attack the wall.

Once again, the sound of fireballs striking the wall could be heard. The sounds had been loud enough to startle even the birds

in the faraway trees.

Once this second hundred fireball barrage was over, Bai Yunfei's hands flew forward, throwing the items in them. A blue ray and a violet ray of light streaked through the cloud of dust before the area could resituate itself. As the two rays of light disappeared into the dust, Bai Yunfei's eyes continued to stare warily at them.

.....

“Bang!!”

Following the wave of orange light that assaulted the area, the cloud of dirt began to blow this way and that. When visibility was restored, the very first thing one would notice was that the wall Ta Shan had erected earlier was nowhere to be seen. All that was left was the base of the wall with him standing where it used to be. Both his arms were crossed over another in an ‘X’ formation to safeguard his head and face. He looked as immobile as a stone statue, and he glowed bright orange due to his cracked Terra Armor.

The armor looked dilapidated, and two handles of violet and blue could be seen stabbed into the parts protecting his arms. They were the Flying Bolt Dagger and Glacial Pricker.

However, he wasn't the most conspicuous part of the scene. Three meters ahead of him—where the base of the wall was—were fragments of the wall.

It was precisely these fragments that were the most conspicuous because they were floating in the air!

A cloud of orange light covered each and every fragment so that they were suspended in the air like water droplets. Big or small, the amount of individual pieces surely had to be well over a thousand.

If one were to look closely, one would be able to tell that a change was occurring in the fragments. The fragments were slowly

thinning out in front and widening in the back while they remained suspended in the air. They then shined a bright orange in color, undergoing some sort of hardening process...

“Hmph!”

Things were already at a standstill by this point. The dust cloud had settled onto the ground. The air was calm, but that was when Ta Shan made his move.

His arms gradually lowered to reveal his eyes. As shocked and angry as he was, a vicious light emanated from behind those two emotions as he harrumphed. As if obeying an order, the one thousand plus fragments spun frantically, aiming at Bai Yunfei. They then shot toward him as if had been fired from a thousand invisible bows!

“Dammit, even that didn’t work!!”

Clenching his fists in anger, Bai Yunfei observed the objects coming at him with equally angry eyes. Flicking a finger up from his right hand, Bai Yunfei ordered, “Cataclysmic Seal!”

“Bzz...” Obeying his summons with a vibrational buzz, the Cataclysmic Seal flew at him as though it had been aided by a strong gale. Crossing the distance between it and him in practically the blink of an eye, the Cataclysmic Seal started to grow exponentially in size. By the time it flew past Bai Yunfei, it was already the size of a small mountain, directed to slam into Ta Shan!

Now wasn’t the time to make use of the Cataclysmic Seal’s barrier, but the +13 effect instead. The ability to grow in size wasn’t limited to just defending, it could be used as an extremely strong attack too!

He wanted to use this attack a lot sooner, but Bai Yunfei couldn’t use it because of a factor completely out of his control. His soulsense told him that Tang Xinyun was hidden just a few hundred meters behind Ta Shan, which meant she hadn’t

immediately been sent away when he found Ta Shan.

Fortune and misfortune were two sides to the same coin. While this meant Tang Xinyun was safe and nearby, this also meant Bai Yunfei couldn't use the Cataclysmic Seal to grow several hundred meters in length and crush his enemies flat.

The beginning of the battle was an attempt to sound out how Ta Shan fought so that he could attack appropriately. Whether by design or by pure bad luck, Bai Yunfei had failed to act on his plans up until now.

Even now, Bai Yunfei was still afraid to make the Cataclysmic Seal too big in fear of making Tang Xinyun an unfortunate target of friendly fire.

.....

“Thwok thwok thwok thwok thwok!” The concentrated barrage of one thousand stone spikes pelted the Cataclysmic Seal, but what use was rain drops to a mountain? They did nothing, turning from stone back into sand and dirt once more.

Without any obstructions, the Cataclysmic Seal continued on to strike Ta Shan.

“It can get even bigger!?” Ta Shan's eyes dilated in surprise. Not expecting such a thing to happen, Ta Shan took one step back before realizing that that wouldn't help him escape.

After half-second of considering the incoming mass, Ta Shan's eyes shined furiously with light. Soon elemental earth from all over started to flow and be absorbed into his body.

“Brat... you should be proud that you managed to push me this far!!” Ta Shan roared.

His left leg rose into the air before coming back down onto the ground with a heavy stomp. The elemental earth that was gathering in his body flowed into the ground before rocks and stones started to congregate around him as if they were alive.

Crawling up his right leg, they coiled around his body, up to his waist before finally stopping around his entire right arm.

The Cataclysmic Seal was already fifty meters away by the time the stones traveled to Ta Shan's right arm. In just moments, the stones were hardening while growing in size!

When the Cataclysmic Seal was just twenty meters away, the right fist of Ta Shan was already ten meters wide and ten meters long. With a grunt, he heaved his heavy fist forward as he lashed out!

“You can fuck off!!”

With a heavy collision, the fist smashed against Bai Yunfei's Cataclysmic Seal!!

“Boom!!!!”

A cacophony of sounds erupted in the area as the two objects collided. Ta Shen's feet sank deep into the ground as he tried to maintain his footing, but the fist that was so heavily backed by elemental earth and stone was already starting to crumble. Due to the inner turmoil of his body, his face was a dark shade of red, and his mouth was already starting to dribble with some of his blood.

Despite the state he was in, his eyes were filled with glee.

He had... repelled the Cataclysmic Seal!!

Whistling as it traveled, the Cataclysmic Seal flew over Bai Yunfei's head before coming to a stop on the ground just ten meters away.

Bai Yunfei was completely bewildered by what had happened. From when Ta Shan slammed the brick back to when the brick smashed into the ground, he didn't react.

It was only when he felt the vibrations of the brick that Bai Yunfei snapped back to awareness. Turning his head back to look at the half-submerged Cataclysmic Seal, he tried his best to

rationalize the events in front of him.

“Im... impossible!!”

The Cataclysmic Seal had been invincible during every single thing it had done so far, but it was the loser in this bout!

This... this was the strength of a Soul Exalt!!

# Chapter 336: The Collision of Two Fireseeds!

## (Third)

---

The Fire-tipped Spear, the Ardent Sun Gloves, the Flameblade Bracer, the Returner Bracer, the Eighty-one Fold Fist Force, the Lightning Bolt Dagger and the Glacial Pricker—

—Not a single one had helped him overcome this foe...

And now, his biggest crutch, the Cataclysmic Seal, had been overpowered by the same foe!!

This time, Bai Yunfei really was out of trump cards. Every technique he knew, every item he owned, they had all been exhausted...

Ta Shan on the other hand didn't look much different after he had used his technique. Squatting down on the ground with both palms touching it, he fixed his Terra Armor once more. With his body and armor both currently recovering from the previous ordeal, Ta Shan wasn't in a good enough state to deal the finishing blow to Bai Yunfei.

But it wouldn't take long for him to be able to. All he needed to do was relax for a moment. Then, he'd be able to finish the battle.

The fearsome look in Ta Shan's eye unnerved Bai Yunfei since he didn't have much soulforce. He had to make use of the 300 points of soulforce stockpiled in his ring in a hurried attempt to replenish himself. As it filled his body, Bai Yunfei's eyes flickered with light as he tried to assess the danger in front of him.

"What do I do? What do I do!? Isn't there any way I can win? Any type of secret technique? Any of the flying daggers? The Compliant Rope? The Walkon Strawhat!? Dammit all! I used to think I had more equipment than I knew what to do with, but now, not a single one of them can help me!!"

The joints in his knuckles cracked rhythmically from the

pressure being exerted in them. Bai Yunfei found his newly reformed essence fireseed starting to pulse rather erratically. Perhaps as an effect, the elemental fire in him started to flow erratically as well.

“Wha??” It was then that he realized something. The fireseed essence in his body just had to be planning something if it was moving like that. If he concentrated on it, he could just faintly detect an odd sensation fluttering in his heart.

It felt as if... something was being called for... something that had once been with him but had been lost, but now the connection to it was slowly being rebuilt...

“That’s... that’s my essence fireseed!”

The summoning cry had knocked Bai Yunfei for a loop; it was trying to call to the essence fireseed in the Cataclysmic Seal!

Elation started to fill his body now that he knew what was going on, “This is it! I’ve still something up my sleeve! Something I can use!”

After being forcibly knocked onto the ground by Ta Shan, the fireseed essence that was in the Cataclysmic Seal finally started to give off traces of existence!!

After months of slumber, it was finally awake!

If the fireseed essence was awake, then the battle outside Curopia City could be repeated. With the fireseed essence, the power of the Cataclysmic Seal would drastically rise!

“This is my last hope... you’ve been asleep for so long, so it’s about time you wake up!!”

Reinvigorated and refocused, Bai Yunfei stared heavily at the Cataclysmic Seal while wishing in his heart for the essence fireseed to awaken!

It didn’t feel like there was enough power in it.



Without a doubt, the essence fireseed had woke up, but it wasn't fully awake.

By this point, Ta Shan was already getting back on his feet. Worried about what he'd do next, Bai Yunfei stared at him with clenched fists.

His right fist slammed into his chest, "Damn it! You better wake up! Otherwise, I'll use you to fuel the Cataclysmic Seal again!!"

His mental roar of anger had been the impetus that the essence fireseed in his body needed to explode in activity. It thought Bai Yunfei would really force it out his body.

Suddenly, a spark jolted through Bai Yunfei's body, allowing him to feel as though something important was being established. The connections that had slowly been built between him and the fireseed essence were now reconnecting at a hastened pace, allowing a tremendous amount of power to pour out of his very soul. The power flowed to each and every corner of his body, replenishing him with power while his fireseed essence started to 'crackle' to life.

"Bzz..." The partially submerged Cataclysmic Seal behind him started to vibrate where it was. Waves of red light and elemental fire started to billow out, and with the bewildered Ta Shan as witness, a fist-sized fireseed slowly started to float out of the Cataclysmic Seal.

By an act of osmosis, the soul armament and the fireseed were dividing. The moment it successfully escaped from its confines, the fireseed flew straight for Bai Yunfei. It 'dove' right into his body before he could even understand what it was doing!!

He had originally been planning to use the newly awakened fireseed essence to power up the Cataclysmic Seal again, so when it fully awakened, Bai Yunfei was surprised that it'd dive into his body so suddenly!

It hadn't even reached Bai Yunfei's heart, but the fireseed was already starting to feel like it was at 'home.' Traveling through Bai Yunfei's body with practiced ease, it returned to his core—the origin acupoint.

When it arrived at the origin acupoint, the fireseed was quick to discover that it wasn't empty...

There was another fireseed existing at its core!

Then... the two fireseeds trembled violently before colliding with one another...

“Booom!!!!!!”

It was as though a mental bomb had exploded within Bai Yunfei's mind. Not only was there a dreadfully loud sound, a wave of fire exploded from both fireseeds and the origin acupoint flooded his entire body with elemental fire.

Even his body wasn't enough to contain it all. It hit its limit and elemental fire started to explode out!

The explosion of fire was like his body had been dipped into lava; it was unbelievably hot and painful!!

“Aaaghhehhh!!!”

All of the muscles in Bai Yunfei's face spasmed with pain. His head snapped back as he let loose a powerful roar as all of the elemental fire in his body started to flow out.

The elemental fire outside his body started to violently surge, like the forming of a typhoon. It completely enveloped Bai Yunfei!

The wave of pain that shot through him threatened to knock him unconscious. Even though he wasn't clear of mind, there was a feeling of contrast.

He felt even more 'free' than ever.

He felt as though if he wanted to, he could split apart the sky just by raising his fist!

“Wha—what’s going on!? How’s he getting all this power. It’s inconceivable!!”

Ta Shan was currently lost in his own thoughts. They persisted for only a few seconds before he cleared his mind and prepared to kill once more!

For some reason, fear was starting to rise up in his mind.

It was laughable, to say the least.

How could a Soul Exalt ever fear a young Soul Ancestor!?

“I can’t let him grow any stronger! I’ve got to kill him, now!”

Roaring to himself as he leaped, Ta Shan flew forward to strike Bai Yunfei down with all his might.

A ring of fire flew off Bai Yunfei’s body when he realized Ta Shan’s movements. Tilting his head, Bai Yunfei stared at Ta Shan with both of his fiery eyes for just a second before he...

Disappeared!!

He was gone without anything but a flash of fire from where he used to stand.

Bai Yunfei had disappeared from Ta Shan’s very eyes!

Ta Shan was a Soul Exalt with all the perception granted to someone of his calibre, yet Bai Yunfei had disappeared without a trace!

Another second later, the burning heat of elemental fire could be felt right behind Ta Shan. Eyes dilating in fear, Ta Shan tried to turn around. Both of his hands were ready to protect himself, but...

It was too late!!

“Bang! Bang!!”

There were the two distinct sounds of something being hit.

Just slightly above Ta Shan in the air was Bai Yunfei. Both of his

hands were outstretched right next to Ta Shan's neck!!

A double Eighty-one Fold Fist Force!!

# Chapter 337: The Final Explosion (Fourth)

---

Two unrestrained bursts of elemental fire erupted from Bai Yunfei's fists. They covered the surrounding hundred meters in waves of burning fire within just half a second. Then, Ta Shan's body fell from it!

Two deep impressions could be seen on both sides of his neck. The Terra Armor in those areas had been blown to pieces while the rest of the armor on his body crumbled apart.

In just a few moments, the Terra Armor completely disintegrated!

The two punches Bai Yunfei had unleashed on Ta Shan allowed elemental fire to flow into Ta Shan's body, destroying both flesh and bone.

Besides the total destruction that was happening in Ta Shan's body, the real point of interest was the punches' separate flows of energy.

They were flowing in two completely different patterns!

That... was an impossibility in itself!! Each and every soul cultivator—even those with dual affinities—elements would flow in a certain pattern no matter how weak or strong their control was!

Ta Shan could confirm that the two halves of elemental fire were flowing in completely different patterns!

Even more shocking was that, the two halves were converging right toward the center of his chest!

“N-no!!” Despair from his impending doom began to creep up into Ta Shan's spirit. His eyes were filled with desperation, but with time, his desperation turned into an indignant frenzy...

“Killed by the hands of a Soul Ancestor whelp, how will I ever get

over this shame!! How could I... Ta Shan, die at the hands of this gnat!!”

He howled at the sky before bringing his right hand down onto his chest!

“Origin essence... scram!!”

During the final moment between life and death, Ta Shan was forced to do something completely reckless... he destroyed his own origin essence!!

To destroy the origin essence was to relinquish control over the elements of the world. As such, destroying your essence fireseed meant forcibly dropping your own strength to the level of a late-stage Soul Warrior!

There'd be no way to train in an element they destroyed without a miracle!

If a Soul Exalt like Ta Shan were to do such a thing, nothing would differentiate him from a cripple...

Ta Shan would do it for the sake of saving his own life! For the sake of self-preservation, he'd do anything to kill the one who forced him to such a state!

The fact he was doing this was crazy in itself, but he was still capable of some rational thought. Instead of choosing to 'explode' his origin essence, Ta Shan chose to 'destroy' it. If he had chosen to destroy it, then the resulting explosion would be ten times as big, but nothing would remain of his body...

Back when Tang Xinyun was suffering from the effects of the Soul Refining Palm, Xiao Binbai chose to destroy her essence fireseed so that the resulting energy would overwhelm the eroding effects.

Destruction of the origin essence meant not being able to cultivate, but at the same time, it would give an instant burst of power at that moment!

Since Ta Shan sacrificed the ‘earthseed’ in his body, his strength would improve drastically. He would become a... mid-stage Soul Exalt!

With the power of the earthseed surging through his body, the elemental fire running rampant in it was quickly overtaken. Not even a second had passed before the elemental fire was expelled. Then, Ta Shan’s body was basked in an eye-piercing orange light. There was a slight explosion before he snapped his neck up, giving Bai Yunfei, who was several hundred meters away, a near-insane glare.

The moment he glared at Bai Yunfei, he could feel the tip of his head start to grow dimmer. The sky that had been cloudless earlier was starting to cloud over, and a feeling of death was starting to surround him!!

“This is...”

.....

Several seconds before Ta Shan’s final gambit, Bai Yunfei had just used the twin Eighty-one Fold Fist Force before being blown away by the force of his own technique. Thrown back a few dozen meters, Bai Yunfei managed to stabilize himself.

The fire around his body hadn’t lessened after his attack, giving him a rather carefree feeling about the affair. Though after using the twin Eighty-one Fold Fist Force, both of his arms felt a twinge of pain due to the blowback.

Still, the amount of power flowing through his body gave him an unprecedented level of strength he just couldn’t describe.

This feeling of ‘carefreeness’ that came after knocking away Ta Shan persisted for only a second longer before his right hand flew to his chest.

Gasping in pain, Bai Yunfei’s eyes started to dilate. The color in his face drastically dispersed. The intolerable pain he was feeling

from the burn had come back with a vengeance!

The burning pain he was feeling was many times stronger than when Bai Yunfei had eaten the fireseed spirit mushroom. It felt as though his very soul was being used as a source of fuel to burn his very nerves.

He couldn't stop the pain, he couldn't alleviate the pain, and worse—he couldn't control it either!!

“Dammit! This again! I feel like my body's about to explode!!” Bai Yunfei gave a mental howl as the energy in his body gradually started to overwhelm his senses. The pain was becoming so unbearable that he could hardly prevent himself from panicking.

The changes going on in Ta Shan's body alerted Bai Yunfei of his situation. Eyes snapping to the man, Bai Yunfei was about to try and attack the man while he was down, but before he could move, his eyes flicked over to the left to where the Cataclysmic Seal was!

“I've got it! I can do this!!” Joy burst forth from his head as Bai Yunfei realized the most optimal method of attacking in his current situation. Without any hesitation, he slapped his chest with his right hand and roared mentally to himself, “Why fight? Just go into the Cataclysmic Seal already!”

By this point, he was already aware of the conflict in his body. Both essence fireseeds were currently fighting in his origin acupoint for ‘territorial rights,’ resulting in the uncontrollable power that was running rampant through his body.

Author Note: For the sake of differentiating between the two fireseeds, let us call the fireseed gained from eating the fireseed spirit mushroom ‘first fireseed’ and the one in Bai Yunfei's Cataclysmic Seal ‘second fireseed’.

After his command, the two fighting fireseeds came to a screeching halt in his origin acupoint. The second fireseed was slowly dragged from his body before materializing outside of it in



his hand.

Before anything else could happen, Bai Yunfei threw the second fireseed at the Cataclysmic Seal so fast that it resembled a shooting star. The second fireseed melted into the brick the moment they touched.

“Bzzzz...” Once again, the Cataclysmic Seal started to hum and radiate elemental fire while Bai Yunfei tried to keep it from exploding.

Back in Curopia City, Bai Yunfei had been in a moment of mindless rage when he had used this move. Right now, he was in a completely sober moment of clarity, and his connection with the Cataclysmic Seal was many times stronger than before. As soon as the essence fireseed was in the brick, Bai Yunfei felt as though he had turned into the Cataclysmic Seal. Every single pulse and every wave of power were clear to him. They were all available for him to control!

Though it felt as though an eternity had passed, what was going on in Bai Yunfei’s body and the Cataclysmic Seal took place roughly before Ta Shan could destroy his own essence earthseed and repel the twin Eighty-one Fold Fist Force...

Narrowing his eyes in concentration, Bai Yunfei willed the Cataclysmic Seal to where Ta Shan’s head was many times faster than before!!

“This is my strongest attack...

“Die!!”

While Ta Shan was glaring at him, Bai Yunfei let loose a furious roar and brought his hand down!

With this final word, the Cataclysmic Seal began to expand in size before smashing Ta Shan to a pulp. By the time it hit the ground, it was already eight hundred meters long, large enough to block out Ta Shan’s sight of the sky, and with that, the brick was

smashed deep into the ground!

# Chapter 338: The Death of Hidden Snake (Fifth)

---

By the time Ta Shan was fully upright, the Cataclysmic Seal was only ten meters away from his head!

The anger that had been in his eyes was quickly replaced by subdued shock and then despair.

He didn't have enough time to form any sort of defense or make an escape!

“Boom!!!”

The earth violently quaked with a sound that reverberated through the air as the mountain-sized Cataclysmic Seal sunk into the ground!

Not even a peep was made by Ta Shan before he was crushed by the Cataclysmic Seal. Despite the giant explosion that came with the destruction of his origin essence, Ta Shan was still crushed by the brick. His aura was snuffed out just like that!

The way the Cataclysmic Seal was binding the earth around Ta Shan made it so he couldn't escape into the ground.

That only left death as his last remaining option!!

Ever since the battle had started, both combatants had fought with all their might. Only Ta Shan lacked the final step and was crushed underneath the Cataclysmic Seal as a result!

“Whew...”

A relieved sigh escaped Bai Yunfei's lips. His final strike was by no means effortless; the collision of the two essence fireseeds had cost him eighty percent of his soulforce. It was fortunate that his first essence fireseed was extremely easy to work with. After the second essence fireseed was gone, the first had settled down without any further troubles. It continued to regulate the warm

elemental fire in his body, making up for the soulforce it had used up earlier.

“I won... all on my own this time! I won against a Soul Exalt!!” Giddy with excitement because of his achievement, Bai Yunfei gave an appreciative look to his Cataclysmic Seal.

After relaxing for a moment, Bai Yunfei suddenly came to a start, “Shit, Xinyun!!”

The battle had been so intense that he had temporarily forgotten about Tang Xinyun. Bai Yunfei had been sent flying behind Ta Shan earlier in the fight, meaning he could use the Cataclysmic Seal without needing to worry about hurting her.

Paradoxically, he had forgotten about her in the rush of the moment.

Whipping his head back to look in her direction, Bai Yunfei began to worry that someone else had taken advantage of the situation while he had been distracted and had taken her farther away.

.....

About half a minute ago, when Bai Yunfei was about to use the Cataclysmic Seal to smash into Ta Shan’s fist—

Hidden Snake was still hidden in the small mound of dirt with Tang Xinyun as he observed the distant battle with a confused eye.

In truth, he had planned to carry Tang Xinyun away a lot earlier. They were being chased, and he had no way of knowing if it was the Tang chasing them.

He wasn’t as strong as Ta Shan, so being dragged into the battle would’ve bode badly for him. When Bai Yunfei’s strength was made known to him, Hidden Snake felt his worries slip away.

Bai Yunfei might have been just a little stronger than him, but the same couldn’t be said for Ta Shan’s strength.

Taking into account his better judgement, Hidden Snake decided to satisfy his curiosity and watch the fight.

Another major reason for him staying behind was because of the strange spear Bai Yunfei was using.

He could tell it was a very strong soul armament; any soul cultivator would be able to tell that by the amount of power radiating from it.

While Ta Shan was Bai Yunfei's opponent, it didn't mean Hidden Snake couldn't get a share of the spoils himself.

However, the battle proved more shocking than he initially thought. He had never once doubted Ta Shan's strength, but the amount of weapons in Bai Yunfei's repertoire left him speechless!

The more he watched, the more 'pleasantly surprised' he felt. In the end, Hidden Snake couldn't contain his excitement any longer. There was far too many soul armaments!!

If Bai Yunfei were to die, how many items could he get for himself??

Bai Yunfei's strength was enough to keep him from leaping in the fray.

When Ta Shan sent the Cataclysmic Seal flying and was on the crux of victory, Hidden Snake finally let out a sigh of relief. He prepared to walk out to 'help' land the killing blow on Bai Yunfei.

But that was when the battle suddenly took a turn for the worse.

Summoning back his essence fireseed, Bai Yunfei managed to force Ta Shan into destroying his origin essence as a final gambit and a chance to live. Despite that, Ta Shan was still overwhelmed by the intense power of the Cataclysmic Seal and was killed.

This left Hidden Snake stunned at the sight. His mind was abuzz with the implications of the battle along with disbelief in what he was seeing.

The next moment, clarity came rushing back to his mind. Any qualms he might've had about staying behind were thrown to the wind thanks to his fear. Grabbing Tang Xinyun, he suppressed his own aura. Then made use of the terrain to make a quick and stealthy getaway.

“Hey now, where are you trying to take my brother's wife?”

Out of nowhere, the sound of a third party made its way into the ears of Hidden Snake. Letting loose a swear as he came to a stop, Hidden Snake turned around with a pale face and a sweaty back.

The reason why he was so afraid was because of how this person has appeared like a ghost.

Already... a dagger was pressed against Hidden Snake's neck!

It was only when this figure spoke that Hidden Snake had realized where the person was!

“Im—mpossible!!” Thunderstruck, Hidden Snake couldn't even find the words to describe what he was thinking. When Ta Shan had been killed, Hidden Snake didn't think that he has been discovered then, so why now?

More importantly, how did this person appear right behind him without him noticing!?

He was a soul cultivator that excelled in all things stealth related. He had faith in his abilities to detect anyone within a hundred meters radius. It'd be a stretch to say that he was detected due to Tang Xinyun's weak aura.

Yet, that was the case. Hidden Snakes well-trained senses were telling him that this was the only possible way...

“Hey now, don't be so surprised. You're a little... too green to even think about hiding from me.

“But don't move! I'll have you know that the dagger at your throat is a heaven tier soul armament. As long as I will it, the

energy in the dagger will cut through your throat before you can even twitch.”

The foreboding voice of the person behind Hidden Snake terrified him, so he didn’t dare move a muscle.

“Good, good. Now put down the person you’re holding—slowly now. She’s worth her weight in gold, you know! If you hurt her, I’m afraid you won’t be able to afford it...”

His banter was quite light-hearted. In fact, one could probably even call it lazy, but Hidden Snake knew better than to risk it. Gingerly putting Tang Xinyun down on the ground, he raised his hands up to show that he was willing to comply.

“Very good. Now walk forward, slowly. Don’t you dare try anything sudden, or you’ll have to excuse me if my finger starts itching to cut into your throat.”

The entirety of Hidden Snake’s head was drenched thoroughly in sweat by now. He was so nervous even gulping the saliva in his mouth was proving to be an impossible task. He was afraid that if he did swallow, the bobbing of his adam’s apple would press against the dagger.

If that were to happen, he could say goodbye to his blood and life.

As he slowly walked away from Tang Xinyun, the person behind him followed like a shadow, and though the person’s body bobbed up and down with each step that was made, the dagger remained level without moving a centimeter.

Just ten meters away, the previously frightened-into-silence Hidden Snake was now starting to regain some confidence. A sinister light began to bleed into his eyes as a wave of killing intent started to rise up from within him...

“Hey, you know why I wanted you to walk this far away?”

The still calm voice spoke again.

This time, Hidden Snake was startled to see the dagger move away from his throat!

Before he could even properly register why it was moving, his eyes widened in shock and the killing intent quickly turned into absolute despair.

“Pzk!!”

Hidden Snake felt his blood start to leave from a cut across his throat. He tried to open his mouth to say something, but no words came out.

His hands tried to move up to hold the wound together, but halfway through the process, his arms fell back down.

His strength was spent. His eyes were already starting to dim.

As he crashed down to the ground, Hidden Snake felt his life slowly come to a silent stop.

Behind him, Jing Mingfeng swung his dagger to rid it of blood.

“It’s because I didn’t want your blood dirtying the clothes of my brother’s wife.” Mingfeng explained.



## Chapter 339: A Safe Rescue (Sixth)

---

“If you really want to make a sneak attack on me, hide your killing intent at the very least.” Jing Mingfeng spat at the corpse in front of him. Shaking his head, he gave a sigh, “Too bad I didn’t ask him who he’s working for, but I doubt he’d give me an answer anyways...”

Jing Mingfeng really wanted to keep Hidden Snake alive, but the situation wasn’t progressing to a state where that was possible. If Hidden Snake had attacked when he had pulled the dagger away, it was quite possible that something unexpected would have happened, so to do nothing when Hidden Snake started to leak killing intent wasn’t a possibility

Jing Mingfeng and Hidden Snake were of the same level of strength. However, Jing Mingfeng was just slightly weaker. In a straight up battle, Jing Mingfeng would have no advantages or contingencies to help if Hidden Snake were to run away. Holding onto Tang Xinyun only complicated the matters.

After failing to find anything of importance on Hidden Snake’s corpse, Jing Ming took his space ring and headed straight for Tang Xinyun.

Roughly at the same time, a rustling sound could be heard from the bushes before a figure came darting over like a bolt of lightning.

That figure was Bai Yunfei.

“Haha, what’s the rush, Ol’Bai? The enemy’s already dead, and your wife is safe.” Upon noticing the worried expression on his friend’s face, Jing Mingfeng couldn’t help but tease him.

Bai Yunfei didn’t say anything at first and chose to look around the area for any potential threats. His eyes lingered on the corpse of Hidden Snake for a moment before moving back to Tang

Xinyun. Rushing toward the two, Bai Yunfei asked, “How’s Xinyun?”

“Not sure,” Jing Mingfeng shrugged, “take a look yourself.”

Crouching next to Tang Xinyun, Bai Yunfei could tell that she was unconscious. Bai Yunfei took her wrist to check for her pulse and began to send his soulforce into her. A preliminary scan revealed that several of her acupoints had been forcibly suppressed, but that was about it. The blockage in her acupoints wasn’t very severe.

Bai Yunfei concentrated as he sent his elemental fire into her body. He then began to burn away the blockage in her acupoints.

“Unghh...”

A slight groan escaped her lips as Bai Yunfei pulled his soulforce away. The eyelashes on Tang Xinyun’s eyelids fluttered before finally opening to reveal her eyes.

The very first thing she saw was a very worried and concerned Bai Yunfei looking at her.

Strangely, Tang Xinyun didn’t seem that surprised or jubilant.

Instead, she gave Bai Yunfei a warm smile and said, “I knew that you’d come save me...”

“Haha,” Bai Yunfei laughed, his hand was still clutching her wrist, “Of course! I brought you here. If I didn’t bring you back safe and sound, how would elder Cang Yu ever forgive me?”

“.....”

Jing Mingfeng couldn’t help but give an exaggerated shiver at the amorous interaction taking place in front of him. “Hey, if you’re going to make love, you might want to choose a better place for that, yeah? There’s a dead corpse right over here you know!”

Sputtering incoherently, Bai Yunfei coughed in embarrassment before he helped Tang Xinyun to her feet.

“Do we know who the dead guy is?”

“Didn’t get a chance to ask.”

Jing Mingfeng looked through Hidden Snake’s space ring, but he didn’t see anything that might identify who the man was working for, “Nothing here either. I can’t tell who he is.”

Bai Yunfei’s eyebrows narrowed together as he tried to think for a moment. Two seconds later, he turned to look off into a distance. A ball of orange light was flying toward them; it was the Cataclysmic Seal with its barrier effect activated.

Within the barrier, a good deal of what appeared to be dirt was held in it.

Tang Xinyun was confused about why there was so much dirt, but Jing Mingfeng wasn’t.

He knew that Ta Shan’s corpse was in there...

For the sake of not letting Tang Xinyun see such a bloody sight, Bai Yunfei made a ball of fire envelop the Cataclysmic Seal when it approached. After a while, a space ring was thrown from the fire. It landed in Bai Yunfei’s hand.

Bai Yunfei found nothing in the ring. He sadly shook his head, “Nothing suspicious here either... let’s forget about it and leave. We can look into it later and try to find clues then.”

Together, the three turned to return back to Mo City. While Tang Xinyun was left gasping in shock over the crater left behind by the Cataclysmic Seal, Bai Yunfei set to collecting the Fire-tipped Spear, the Glacial Pricker, and the Lightning Bolt Dagger.

He, of course, picked up the rod Ta Shan had left behind.

As soon as Bai Yunfei was done putting everything away, he walked back to where Tang Xinyun was waiting.

He noticed two streaks of light flying in their direction when he arrived by her side. One was a golden color, the other was orange,

but both lights were traveling extremely fast.

At a closer look, Bai Yunfei could see that the two people were skywalking in order to get to them—though they weren't traveling as fast as the Tempest Sword did—their speed was still comparable.

Skywalking was a technique Soul Exalts could pull off while the act of flying was something Soul Kings could do.

Since the two were skywalking, that meant they were both Soul Exalts.

Bai Yunfei was wary at first, but his concerns bled away in relief when he recognized the two auras.

He didn't recognize the older one of the two, but the youth was the eldest son of the Tang, Tang Jing.

"It's your eldest brother," Bai Yunfei said to Tang Xinyun, "and an old man. Is he someone from the previous generation, or...?"

The two figures were within a hundred meters when Bai Yunfei was asking, prompting Tang Xinyun to look closer at the two. Eyes widening in surprise, she said, "It's my third uncle! Even he came!"

The third uncle to Tang Xinyun meant that he was the third brother to Tang Qianlei, Tang Qianshan.

Bai Yunfei nodded; the man was a late-stage Soul Exalt.

As expected of the Tang, no one was weak in strength.

The two figures had already noticed Bai Yunfei and the others, so they landed not too far away from the three when they drew closer. They looked surprised to see the crater left behind by the Cataclysmic Seal, but they managed to recover their emotions in time to walk to the group.

"Sister, brother Bai, and brother Jing, are you alright?" Tang Jing asked.

"Big brother, third uncle," Tang Xinyun nodded her head in

greeting, “I’m unhurt.”

“Thank you for your concern, brother Tang,” Bai Yunfei nodded as well, “I’m fine as well.”

“And the enemy?” Tang Jing asked as he looked warily around the place.

“Dead.”

Looking as though he was annoyed by their late entrance, Jing Mingfeng gave a short and off-handed answer.

“What?” Tang Jing remarked, “Do you mean to say that...”

Deciding to explain things as simply as he could, Bai Yunfei said, “The ones who kidnapped Xinyun are dead. One was named Ta Shan, but his corpse is basically gone. There’s another corpse over there. We don’t know who he is, but he’s dead too. What we’re not sure about is if there were any other accomplices with them...”

“Are you saying you killed the Ta Shan the Stone Asura?” Tang Qianshan questioned.

He found it hard to believe, Bai Yunfei was only a mid-stage Soul Ancestor at best, so how could he kill someone who was of the Soul Exalt level like Ta Shan?

“Yes, it was a difficult battle, but I won in the end.”

It was a modest statement. He said that it was a difficult battle, but how could it be if he was entirely unharmed?

Because of that, Tang Qianshan doubted Bai Yunfei but wasn’t interested enough to press for the truth.

“Shouldn’t we head on back, Ol’Bai? Running left and right for two battles in a row makes me pretty tired. Let’s go home and rest it off.” Jing Mingfeng sighed with his head facing the sky.

Not willing to argue, Bai Yunfei nodded his head. “Brother Tang,” he spoke to Tang Jing, “Since Xinyun is back, we shall return to Mo City.”

“Very well then,” Tang Jing nodded, “You three should return first. Third uncle and I will stay to inspect the area. Perhaps we’ll find a clue about who’s responsible for trying to kidnap Xinyun.”

# Chapter 340: The Mastermind Was Him!

## (First)

---

Bai Yunfei took the Tempest sword out of his space ring. He laid it out for Tang Xinyun to step on. When Bai Yunfei stepped aboard, there was hardly enough room for a third person to climb on, prompting Jing Mingfeng to stamp his feet in mock anger.

“How upstanding you are, Ol’ Bai! As soon as you find yourself a wife, you completely forget about your fellow brother! Are you trying to make me run back to Mo City!?”

“Er...” A droplet of sweat slipped down Bai Yunfei’s face, “I guess... we could try to squeeze three on here...”

“Pft, I can practically feel your insincerity, forget it!

“Besides, if I were to get on there, I’d be ruining the atmosphere for you two lovebirds!” He quipped.

The awkward looks on both Bai Yunfei and Tang Xinyun’s faces made Jing Mingfeng laugh, “I was just joking with you two. Go on ahead, I’ll make my way home myself.”

“But...” Hesitant, Bai Yunfei felt like there was something wrong with this.

“Hey now, don’t be like that. Don’t sweat the small stuff,” Jing Mingfeng waved his hand, “When we came, it was me on the sword, so let Xinyun have a turn. It doesn’t make a difference to me anyways. In any case, I can treat this as a nice and relaxing walk; do you think something like this is hard for a Soul Ancestor?”

Without even letting Bai Yunfei say anything more, Jing Mingfeng whirled around with his hands resting behind his head. He walked into the bushes in the direction of the city.

A jaunty tune could be heard as he whistled and walked away.

“...” For a good while, Bai Yunfei said nothing.

He eventually turned back to Tang Xinyun with a small smile, “Well, let’s get going then.”

In a burst of green light, the Tempest Sword took off with the two onboard.

Speaking wasn’t too convenient as they traveled through the air, so conversation was scarce between the two passengers. During the silence, Bai Yunfei reflected on the battle with Ta Shan while Tang Xinyun stared silently at his back. What she was thinking was a mystery.

Once Tang Xinyun had been brought home, Bai Yunfei decided to fly off to find Jing Mingfeng. After being picked up, Jing Mingfeng couldn’t help but laugh, saying there was still hope for Bai Yunfei since he followed the ‘code of brotherhood.’

.....

Tang Jing’s investigation of the battlefield started only after Bai Yunfei had taken Tang Xinyun away and after Jing Mingfeng was far away.

There wasn’t much he could investigate. The crater left behind by the Cataclysmic Seal didn’t leave anything behind. If the battle prior to the crater was intense and with marks everywhere, the crater wiped all those marks away with a clean sweep.

“Jing’er, do you really believe what Bai Yunfei said? He may be the disciple of senior Zi Jin, but he’s a mere mid-stage Soul Ancestor. How could he kill the Soul Exalt, Ta Shan?” Upon seeing the contemplative look on Tang Jing’s face, Tang Qianshan just had to ask.

“Third uncle, you only just came back from abroad, so there’s some extenuating information you might not know.

“I didn’t have time to tell you while we were rushing over here, but before Xinyun was captured, the two who stopped the theft of



the fireseed spirit mushroom we were selling at the auction house was Bai Yunfei and Jing Mingfeng...”

“Oh? Something like that happened?” Tang Qianshan asked, “What happened after that?”

“We sent some of our men to deal with the problem right away, but they met some of the returning members of the Wu on their way there. According to them, the transaction had already been made with Bai Yunfei. He was bringing the fireseed spirit mushroom back to Mo City with him...”

“The two who had tried to steal the fireseed spirit mushroom were a mid-stage Soul Ancestor and a late-stage Soul Ancestor... both of them were killed by Bai Yunfei! In under three minutes no less!”

“What!?” Tang Qianshan exploded, “That Bai Yunfei is that strong!?”

“Yes, third uncle. You might recall that Bai Yunfei was only a late-stage Soul Warrior before this, but just now... I could feel that he was as strong as a mid-stage Soul Ancestor! I didn’t see anything that proved he wasn’t a Soul Warrior before. Even father said he couldn’t detect anything hiding his strength. If I had to guess, he might’ve revealed that he was as strong as a mid-stage Soul Ancestor, but he might be even...”

“You’re saying he might be even stronger? Is he a Soul Exalt!?” Tang Qianlei interjected with doubt. He simply couldn’t believe what Tang Jing was saying. A twenty-something year old being a Soul Exalt—that was...

“He is the reason that my sister was brought back. I can also see that there’s something between my sister and him... even if he’s hiding his strength, I don’t believe he harbors any ill will for our family, and with him being a crafter, if we can make ties with the Crafting School, the benefits our Tang would gain would surely be great.”

“Ah yes, that much is true...” Tang Qianshan nodded in agreement.

Choosing to ignore the issue with Ta Shan for now, Tang Qianshan looked around the crater in front of him, “Was... was this really done by Bai Yunfei? Even I wouldn’t be able to manage something on a scale like this, how terrifying...”

“Can you sense the traces left behind by a soul armament? What kind of monstrous soul armament is needed to leave a result like this!”

After careful consideration, Tang Qianshan turned to Tang Jing, “Bai Yunfei mentioned there was a corpse nearby, go take a look. I want to look around this crater for some clues.”

While Tang Jing busied himself with inspecting Hidden Snake’s corpse, Tang Qianshan stood at the very center of the large crater where a smaller spherical crater was.

“Third uncle, have you found anything?” Tang Jing asked after he came back.

The man shook his head, “Nothing of any use, but... if we are to believe Bai Yunfei’s words, then the Stone Asura died right here.”

“Oh? Why do you say that?”

“Look here...” Tang Qianshan pointed at the smaller crater in front of them, “A strong amount of elemental earth still lingers here. It’s slightly weaker now, but I can still sense it to some degree. I’m sure that the amount at its initial explosion was from an early-stage Soul Exalt at the very least! The lack of rubble from the explosion means he was killed before it could finally detonate.”

Tang Qianshan was a late-stage Soul Exalt with an affinity for earth, meaning that his sensitivity to elemental earth was far stronger than most. Just by looking at the lingering elemental earth, he was able to make a detailed inference of the situation. The phrase ‘experience comes with age’ was created for people like

him.

“How unexpected to think that Ta Shan, the scourge of the Forest Pass Province for the last decade, would meet his demise in this spot. But... there has never been a conflict between our house and him. What prompted him to kidnap Xinyun?” Tang Qianshan asked himself briefly before shaking his head, “Never mind that. What have you found out?”

“Nothing...” Tang Jing tossed Hidden Snake’s corpse onto the ground, “I don’t recognize him, and I couldn’t find any clues on him.”

A quick cursory glance was all it took to observe Hidden Snake’s body, but it didn’t seem as though Tang Qianshan knew him either.

“We’ve little choice but to stop here for now.” He sighed, “The enemy was without a doubt prepared for this, so finding any clues would be dubious at best. Let’s return first and hope that we can find something during our future investigations...”

They leaped up from the crater, reaching higher ground. When their feet tapped the surface outside of the crater, Tang Qianshan’s eyes narrowed for a moment.

Turning around, he began to suspiciously look around.

“Third uncle? What’s wrong?” Tang Jing asked in confusion.

Still slightly suspicious, Tang Qianshan continued to look around.

Without anything to show for his efforts, the older man withdrew his glance, “It’s nothing. I was probably mistaken, let’s go...”

.....

The two men left for Mo City shortly after that.

Just several kilometers away, at a mountain Tang Qianshan was

looking at earlier...

“He certainly earns his title as a late-stage Soul Exalt if he could sense me...”

Came the voice of a lively speaker.

From the white frosty fog that covered the mountain tops, two figures quickly made themselves known.

“Junior headmaster, moving against the Tang is far too early for us...” The second person that spoke was an elderly old man in white, who standing right behind the first speaker.

“Haha, it was a sudden fancy, that’s all...” The ‘junior headmaster’ laughed. “That’s why I ordered you not to fight. This is a slave’s work. If we fail our goals here, we won’t be hurt at all.

“Though that person’s strength was something else... what we thought was a simple grab for the fireseed spirit mushroom ended up as a failure, and even kidnapping the young miss Tang proved to be a failure. This Bai Yunfei is quite the unpredictable one...”

His voice gradually grew more eerie as he spoke. Just listening to him made one think that he wasn’t really talking about a sudden fancy, rather a plan!

“Bai Yunfei, was it? What an interesting person. I hope I’ll be able to play around with him in the future...” The young man laughed in anticipation before turning to walk down the other side of the mountain.

When he turned around, the fog that had been covering his face disappeared. A surprisingly handsome and alluring face was revealed.

He... was the man that fought Bai Yunfei for the fireseed spirit mushroom back in the auction house. He was the same person who had had a friendly talk with Bai Yunfei at the end...

Mo Ni!!

## Chapter 341: Resting After a Battle and the First Rumors of Fame (Second)

---

The second day of the auction house was just starting, but news of what had transpired was already making its way throughout the Forest Pass Province and even into the provinces beyond.

The purchase of the dragonfruit and the wind squaller paled in comparison to this new piece of information. Not only was it new, it was also quite ‘juicy.’

A mysterious young man had not only used a heaven tier soul armament to buy a fireseed spirit mushroom, he did it for the sake of the daughter of the Tang!

By no means was Tang Xinyun an important figure in her own house, but that wasn’t known to outsiders. For all they knew, she was the treasured daughter of the Tang. She was clearly special enough for some family’s ‘big spender’ to spend so much for her.

The depth this person was willing to go for her was practically unprecedented, so the gossip ran wild like fire. Conjectures and speculations ran rampant, but none hit the mark.

A few more observant fellows were able to find the truth in the gossip, learning more about who this ‘mysterious’ young man was.

News that this person was in fact a student of the Crafting School quickly became public knowledge. One by one, the puzzle pieces was starting to fit together; it was starting to make sense now.

Who else but a crafter could afford to flaunt so much wealth?

Still, there was one thing that remained unclear. Who was this figure in the Crafting School if he could afford to give away a heaven tier soul armament like it was nothing?

The answer to that question came with the next piece of the puzzle; it was made known that not only was Tang Xinyun also

part of the Crafting School, she was the personal disciple to the third elder.

This news was shocking to say the least. Many gossipers could only surmise from what they knew so far. They inferred that the youth was of the inner school and was probably also someone's disciple...

The normal layman wouldn't know that Bai Yunfei was in fact a disciple of the ex-headmaster, Zi Jin. Those who were in the know weren't the talkative type, so the information didn't spread.

A second bombshell was dropped soon after in regard to the fireseed spirit mushroom. Though slightly stale, news of its theft was still rather interesting to talk about. Since the sale of the mushroom had only taken place a day ago, plenty of interested parties were informed of what had transpired.

Not only did two Soul Ancestors try to steal the mushroom, the very youth who had bought the mushroom killed them by himself!!

If 'mysterious' was the only term to describe Bai Yunfei at first, the veil of 'strong' could now also be applied to him.

News that Tang Xinyun had been stolen was the biggest topic of discussion among all the other topics.

The only daughter to the Tang was kidnapped from within the city!!

When people first heard about it, they thought it was balderdash at first, but the truth was the truth.

Her kidnapping was without a doubt a huge slap to the face of the lord mayor Xuan Yuan. Despite the careful work he had put in to maintain security during the event, there was still a single chink in his work. The auction house had taken up all of his focus, leaving the other aspects of the city left untouched. With a gap like that, it seemed only obvious that the infamous 'Stone Asura' Ta Shan

would exploit it.

Yet again, the mysterious young man appeared. Not long after the daughter was kidnapped did the same young man bring her back safe and sound!!

Eyewitness reports stated that not long after they saw the daughter kidnapped, the young man came back from protecting the fireseed spirit mushroom. After realizing what had happened, the man leaped back onto his flying sword and flew off to save her.

The same eyewitnesses said that it didn't take long for him to return to the city with her safe and sound.

Tang Xinyun's kidnapping was big news to the entire city. Everyone knew that the Tang had no shortage of powerful people, even Tang Qianlei himself went after the kidnapper when he heard about it. The men from the Tang were unsuccessful in their attempts since Bai Yunfei was the one rescued her.

The one who had kidnapped Tang Xinyun—Ta Shan, the 'Stone Asura'—was known to everyone as an infamous Soul Exalt!

If the young man was the one who had defeated the 'Stone Asura' and brought back the kidnapped girl, that could only mean...

Each and every topic of discussion caused a commotion in their own right, but only one person connected them all together...

That person was Bai Yunfei!!

Only one day had passed since then, but Bai Yunfei's name was already known throughout Mo City.

In the eyes of the commoners, soul cultivators were beings of unbelievable power. In Mo City, the commoners living there knew a great deal about soul cultivators, but the things Bai Yunfei had accomplished in one day alone was starting to sound like some sort of fantastical epic.

Each iteration of the story retold was an iteration different from

the last, making the story even more unbelievable than ever, leaving people unsure of what was true or not.

One rumor in particular made its way to the ears of Jing Mingfeng—

During the one year Tang Xinyun was traveling, she came across the man known as Bai Yunfei and returned home to discuss the topic of marriage. Many said that there was already a child on the way...

Practically howling with laughter, Jing Mingfeng relayed the rumor to Bai Yunfei who nearly spat blood out of his mouth while Tang Xinyun's ears turned redder than a tomato.

She refused to look up at Bai Yunfei the rest of the day.

.....

No matter how turbulent the rumors about him became, Bai Yunfei managed to remain calm. He didn't leave the Tang residence for days so he could recover his strength.

His battle with Ta Shan left Bai Yunfei with plenty to digest, so he preferred to stay in his room and train in peace.

He didn't bother to go to the remaining few days of the auction either. He hadn't been very interested to begin with, and since there wouldn't be a second fireseed spirit mushroom, Bai Yunfei saw no need to make a return visit.

Speaking of the fireseed spirit mushroom, his failure to deliver it to Tang Xinyun left him vexed.

She didn't seem to mind. She would gently comfort him whenever it was mentioned.

Her comfort only served to aggravate him even more since he didn't know when he'd be able to come across another fireseed spirit mushroom...

Though the fireseed spirit mushroom granted Bai Yunfei a



second essence fireseed, he tried his best to not look into the issue. His master had once said that it was impossible for a soul cultivator to have two fully developed origin essences of the same element.

In the case that such an event occurred, one would devour the other, which was a good scenario.

Another possibility was that the two origin essences make his body explode—a path frequently traveled by a good deal of people who tried before.

A legend existed within the Crafting School that someone had once formed a ‘companion fireseed,’ but that was a special case with extenuating circumstances...

With all that said and done with, what would Bai Yunfei be considered??

One essence fireseed was better than ever in his body, and the other essence fireseed was slowly gathering power in his Cataclysmic Seal.

Zi Jin had never mentioned anything about this before.

Bai Yunfei only spent two days observing the state of his essence fireseeds. Since nothing extraordinary could be documented, he gave up and labeled the situation as the best case scenario.

He had an essence fireseed in his body and his strength was back. The Cataclysmic Seal had a fireseed and its power was stronger than ever.

It was the best of both worlds, really. While Bai Yunfei couldn’t guarantee that something worrisome wouldn’t happen, he could, at the very least, take it easy and return to Zi Jin for advice.

Of course, that was only if nothing out of the ordinary happened with the Cataclysmic Seal. It went without saying that a sleeping dragon should be left undisturbed.

Jing Mingfeng saw fit to go to the auction house every day with Zhao Xiluo since Bai Yunfei remained cooped up in his room.

Tang Xinyun and Kou Tingting didn't leave the Tang residence much, but when they did, the Tang had some guards accompany them.

Neither Bai Yunfei nor Tang Xinyun found anything out of the ordinary in Ta Shan and Hidden Snake's space rings, so they let the Tang inspect them as well.

When the Tang came up with nothing as well, the two parties decided to just let the matter drop.

The auction house officially ended several days later, but Bai Yunfei didn't really care which family got which heaven tier soul armament. Jing Mingfeng, on the other hand, had made out like a bandit. He was understandably gleeful for days.

What only served to make him happier was the fact that his wind squaller was already awake and strong enough to be called a late-stage third class soulbeast. Thus, it was as strong as a late-stage Soul Warrior.

In short, Bai Yunfei didn't really care for much the following days after his battle with Ta Shan. The outside world might've been hustling and bustling, but Bai Yunfei found it rather dull. After the battle, Bai Yunfei only really wanted a well-deserved rest.

Only two days after the auction house ended did Bai Yunfei's previously calm heart start to race with excitement when Tang Jing brought a notice to him...

## Chapter 342: The 'Soulbound' Yun's Soul Ring (Third)

---

The report Tang Jing notice mentioned that a very old fireseed spirit mushroom existed within their family' storehouse!

Tang Xinyun's father had finally decided to help Tang Xinyun reform her essence fireseed with it...

A long state of shock followed shortly after Bai Yunfei heard this information.

Bai Yunfei had painfully tried to think of a way to find another mushroom, but who would've thought that one would just drop into his lap?

Bai Yunfei was ecstatic now that he knew there was one to be gained. It didn't even matter that the Tang didn't bring it out earlier. They made up for that by taking it out now.

The more important thing was that Tang Xinyun would be able to reform her essence fireseed! She would be able to practice the path of fire! She would remain a student of the Crafting School!!

All of the problems that Bai Yunfei was so worried about had been easily resolved!!

There was a complete turnabout in the way the Tang were treating him after Ta Shan was killed. Even Tang Xinyun and her mother were starting to be treated better.

Each action the Tang did had to be thought of well in advance, but Bai Yunfei didn't care what they did. All he cared about was seeing Tang Xinyun recover her strength and state of mind.

If the Tang said they'd do something, then they'd do it. On the second day after Bai Yunfei heard the news, Tang Xinyun was personally protected by her father while she ate the fireseed spirit mushroom and reformed her essence fireseed.

The formation of an essence fireseed was an special situation for a crafter. It was the only time in a soul cultivators life that they could take advantage of the situation to create a... soulbound armament!

Tang Xinyun joined the Crafting School when she was only a late-stage Soul Warrior. Not long after that, she was able to craft and form her first soulbound armament.

Now that she could reform her essence fireseed again, she could... forge another soulbound armament!

A second option existed as well. If a second soulbound armament wasn't wished to be gained, then that person could choose to 'refine' the first soulbound armament. While this option meant that a second soulbound armament couldn't be obtained, it was still a huge power boost to the first that would increase its soul compatibility.

That in itself was already very useful.

With two equally appealing options for Tang Xinyun to decide on, Bai Yunfei didn't try to influence her decision.

He decided to let her choose for herself...

Bai Yunfei was actually very sorry that he squandered that opportunity himself. When he had formed his second fireseed, the same opportunity presented itself to him. Whether he made his Ardent Sun Gloves into a soulbound armament or made his Fire-tipped Spear or Flameblade Bracer even stronger, Bai Yunfei would've benefited greatly either way.

Unfortunately, the affair with Tang Xinyun being kidnapped by an extremely strong Ta Shan left Bai Yunfei no choice when he formed his second fireseed and the opportunity was lost.

Even though Bai Yunfei was sorry the chance had been lost, he had never regretted his decision.

Should the same choice present itself to him again, Bai Yunfei

would still choose the same.

.....

Tang Xinyun found herself back in the Soul Sprite realm after reforming her essence fireseed; in fact, she was now a mid-stage Soul Sprite, which brought her quickshade bird into the realm of a fifth class soulbeast. The birds wounds were also rejuvenated.

Time was needed for Tang Xinyun to readjust to her strength, so Bai Yunfei waited until afternoon to see her. While he waited, he spoke with the Flying Dagger Brothers in his courtyard, asking several questions about the technique.

The two brothers had come before, but Jing Mingfeng had met with them to say that Bai Yunfei was still recuperating from his battles. Having been told that, the two left so that they could visit another day.

“Xinyun, have you adjusted yet? How do you feel?”

As soon as Bai Yunfei saw Tang Xinyun come out of her room, he stood up from his seat to rush over to her.

“I’m fine. My essence fireseed has settled down, so there shouldn’t be any problems...” Tang Xinyun nodded with a small smile

Her head tilted as she noticed Han Chong and Han Lin, “And these two are...?”

Rising to greet her, Han Chong said, “You must be the only daughter of the Tang? This one is Han Chong, and this is my younger brother, Han Lin.”

“Nice to meet you.” She nodded. She knew who they were, but she was confused about why they were here.

Realizing why she was confused, Bai Yunfei explained, “The Han brothers were there the day I took the fireseed spirit mushroom. Without them, I never would’ve been able to get it.”

“Haha, brother Bai, since it’s getting late, my brother and I will head home first.” Han Chong smiled to Bai Yunfei.

It was indeed getting late. Night time was rapidly approaching. Bai Yunfei realized that he had spent the entire afternoon talking with the brothers about the Flying Dagger techniques.

Apologetically, he said, “Alright, I’d like to thank you two for your explanations. I’ve learned a lot.”

“You’re too kind, brother Bai,” Han Chong replied, “It was only a small chat to share our experiences, that’s all... we’ll say our goodbyes here then. Perhaps we’ll meet again another time, brother Bai.”

From their earlier talks, Bai Yunfei knew that the two brothers were planning to leave Mo City tomorrow morning, so Bai Yunfei bowed to them, “I hope to see you two again as well!”

.....

Only Bai Yunfei and Tang Xinyun were left in the courtyard after the two brothers left.

Well, there was also Xiao Bai.

“Hey, Xinyun, did you refine your ‘Yun’s Fire Sword’?”

Sitting down at the table next to Tang Xinyun, Bai Yunfei inquired about her decision.

The Yun’s Fire Sword was the name Tang Xinyun had given her soulbound armament, a meter-long soft sword. Since there wasn’t anything else comparable to that soul armament in terms of power, Bai Yunfei thought that she’d choose that one to refine.

Tang Xinyun laughed contrarily, “No. I made myself a new soulbound armament actually...”

“What?” Bai Yunfei uttered, “You made a new one?”

Tang Xinyun was already raising her left hand as Bai Yunfei asked, “What... what are you doing, Xinyun?”

“This is my new soulbound armament...” She smiled before pointing at her left hand with her right.

“What!?” Bai Yunfei cried out, “You... you made the Yun’s Soul Ring into a soulbound armament!? That’s... that’s just crazy! The Yun’s Soul Ring grade isn’t high, but you really made it into a soulbound armament? Isn’t that... isn’t that a waste of such a great opportunity?”

“How could you say that?” She laughed still, “Didn’t I turn it into a soulbound armament? It’s even stronger now!”

“Can... can you even say that it was worth it? If you refined your Yun’s Fire Sword, then...” Bai Yunfei started to speak until he realized that the situation had already passed, he sighed. Rather than complain, he extended his hand, “How good is it now? Can I see it?”

“Go ahead.”

Taking the ring off, she dropped it into Bai Yunfei’s hand.

Equipment Grade: Mid Human

Elemental Affinity: Fire

Upgrade Level: +13

Attribute: +160 Spirit

Additional Attribute: +300 Spirit

Soul Compatibility: 40%

+10 Additional Effect: Increase spirit by 90.

+12 Additional Effect: 10% chance of immunity to a spirit-based attack.

Cooldown of 1 hour.

+13 Additional Effect: Recover 4 soulpoints every second.

Upgrade Requirement: 75 Soulpoints

“.....”

# Chapter 343: Misgivings

---

The stats for the Yun's Soul Ring popped into Bai Yunfei's mind the very moment he touched it.

As Bai Yunfei registered the stats, he began to look more and more surprised before his expression froze into one of rigid curiosity.

"What's wrong, Yunfei?" Tang Xinyun asked when she saw his face.

"Ah... it's nothing." Snapping back to reality, Bai Yunfei shook his head to reassure her. "The change is substantially different, so it wasn't a waste of an opportunity." He remarked as he handed the ring back, "Xinyun, you have to keep wearing this ring. Don't use any other ring, okay?"

Like he said, it hadn't been a waste. It was actually quite worth it to improve the ring. It didn't matter that the ring was still the same grade or that the spirit increase was small.

What was more important was that the +12 and +13 effects had been improved!

Before, the ring had a three percent chance to ward off spirit-based attacks, rather than the ten percent chance it had now—an increase of over three times the original percentage.

But what constituted as a spirit-based attack?

Simply put, it was an attack only Soul Kings or soul cultivators with an affinity for illusions could pull off. Attacks such as those were the stuff of nightmares to many soul cultivators!

But why?

Why would they be scared?

What do soul cultivators use to fight with?

Aside from the eyes, the primary answer would be the soulsense.



To put it frankly, the soulsense was an application of the spirit, so if there was an attack that could affect the spirit, wouldn't that be absolutely terrifying?

Without having a stronger soulsense than the enemy, trying to defend against a spirit-based attack would only result in absolute failure.

The fact that the Yun's Soul Ring had a ten percent chance of making the wearer immune to spirit-based attacks was very important.

It wasn't just avoiding the effects, it meant complete immunity!

No matter how strong the opponent was, the activation of this effect meant that their spirit-based attacks wouldn't amount to anything!!

Ten percent was by no means a meager number...

In a battle between soul cultivators, even a one percent chance could mean the difference between life or death!

And the +13 additional effect? Having one additional point of soulforce added every second meant an increase of 33.33%!

Four soulpoints were recovered every second!

By just wearing this ring, the wearer was guaranteed a never-ending supply of soulforce as long as soulforce was being used!

An effect like this could only be described as perverted.

The reason why Bai Yunfei wanted Tang Xinyun to keep wearing the ring was because it was her best guarantee of protection.

However, his good intentions were misconstrued.

Her face grew a streak of red when she heard what Bai Yunfei had said. Slipping the ring back onto her left hand, she whispered, "I'll definitely keep wearing it. This ring is 'mine' now..."

"Eh? What'd you say?" Bai Yunfei didn't manage to hear what

she said since she was whispering.

“No-nothing...”

“Young miss! Young miss!! Have you readjusted yet!?”

Just then, a coarse shout erupted from outside the courtyard, startling Bai Yunfei.

No guesses were needed to know that Zhao Mancha was back.

The echoes of what Zhao Mancha had just said hadn't even dissipated when the woman herself came crashing into the courtyard. Upon seeing Tang Xinyun sitting at the table next to Bai Yunfei, Zhao Mancha's eyes lit up. Rushing to her side, the older woman clasped Tang Xinyun's hands, “Young miss, how do you feel? Is your strength back to normal now?”

Tang Xinyun smiled warmly at the woman. “It is, aunty Zhao. There's no need to feel concerned now. I feel fine again.”

“All is well then! All is well!” Turning as she spoke, Zhao Mancha cried out, “My lady! My lady! The young miss has fully recuperated! She can continue being a crafter now!”

Even Bai Yunfei felt like wiping away the imaginary tears in his mind at this touching display. Like Zhao Mancha, he was very concerned for Tang Xinyun.

The doors to the courtyard opened to reveal Chu Qingxue. She slowly walked over with Kou Tingting next to her.

Since Tang Xinyun had been busy readjusting and Bai Yunfei had been busy with the Han brothers, Kou Tingting and Chu Qingxue had gone on a walk to clear their minds.

“Mom, Tingting, you're back.” Tang Xinyun rose from her seat to lead her mother by the hand to the table.

Even Bai Yunfei rose to greet the woman, “Auntie Xue...”

“Oh? Have your two friends already left, Yunfei?” Chu Qingxue inquired when she sat down.

Clearly, she was talking about Han Chong and Han Lin.

“Yes, they just left.”

“Mom, where did you go? Why are you only coming back now?” Tang Xinyun asked. It was strange for her mother to come back so late in the evening.

“The third lady and I went to dine with the Hua!” Kou Tingting was the first to speak, “We had to go since she invited us, so we only just got back! We brought home some food for you two too. Have either of you eaten yet?”

With a wave of her right hand, two exquisite lunch boxes appeared on the table.

The third lady?

Bai Yunfei and Tang Xinyun both took a moment to take in what they heard.

The third lady meant Hua Yueying, the third wife to Tang Xinyun’s father.

That woman had seriously invited Chu Qingxue to a meal with the Hua?

“Mom, you actually had a meal with that woman...? Did... did she make trouble for you?” Tang Xinyun couldn’t help but ask as she tightly grasped her mother’s hands.

Chu Qingxue smiled and stroked her daughter softly, “There’s no need to worry. Nothing out of the ordinary happened.”

Tang Xinyun had confessed in private that Hua Yueying was a person she would never understand since she always made trouble for her mother and her.

Why was she being so ‘friendly’ now?

Bai Yunfei only had his suspicions, but he could make a rough inference.

Since the Tang were treating Tang Xinyun and himself slightly better, was Hua Yueying... scared of something?

Maybe the Crafting School?

Her mother said it was fine, but Tang Xinyun still couldn't help but have misgivings. "No matter what she's planning, we have to be careful, mom. The weather's been getting colder recently, so you should try to limit your walks to not stress your body..."

"It's just your imagination, silly girl. My body isn't as bad as you think it is. Your mother is still a Soul Ancestor!" Chu Qingxue calmed her daughter's nerves with a laugh. "I've felt much better recently, in fact! Ever since I put on the earrings Yunfei gave me, my body's been feeling better. The pain in my shoulder hasn't been flaring up as often, and it doesn't hurt as much when it does now... I really must thank Yunfei for this, haha!"

"Really? It's working? That's great!" Tang Xinyun exclaimed.

Turning to Bai Yunfei, she said, "Yunfei, mom says your soul armament really works! Do you have any more of them? If we can get more for my mom to wear, maybe she can be fully cured!"

"Silly girl, what are you saying? Your mother's wounds can't be healed like that. Those soul armaments aren't yours to give, so don't you think you're making trouble for Yunfei?" Chu Qingxue rebuked her with 'exasperation.'

"Haha, Xinyun's right though. If they work, we should try some more. Auntie Xue, please don't worry, I still have more of those accessories. They won't be as strong as the one you're wearing now, but they should still be somewhat effective..."

Bai Yunfei nodded with a smile. Scanning through his Violet Soul Ring, Bai Yunfei immediately pulled out some accessories that could increase strength. The effects of these accessories weren't too bad or too conspicuous, so Bai Yunfei felt at ease giving them to Tang Xinyun.

But...

Would these strength increasing accessories really cure Chu Qingxue's wounds?

As he passed the items over, a doubtful glint appeared in his eyes as though he had some misgivings about their success...

## Chapter 344: Misgivings

---

“What are you thinking about, Yunfei?” Tang Xinyun questioned when she saw the look on his face.

“Oh, it’s nothing.” Bai Yunfei shook his head, “Auntie Xue,” he turned to the woman, “please try these accessories. They should be beneficial in the future, so I hope that they will do you well.”

Chu Qingxue looked hesitant to take the., though. “I... Yunfei, aren’t these soul armaments given to you by the seniors at the Crafting School? Shouldn’t you...”

“Don’t worry, auntie Xue.” Bai Yunfei smiled, “They’re really not much. These are considered incomplete soul armaments in the Crafting School, so they’re not worth much.”

He couldn’t exactly say that he could get even more of those accessories whenever he wanted. The woman might be Tang Xinyun’s mother, but his secret had only been shared with Tang Xinyun.

“Yunfei’s right, mom. He’s the personal disciple of senior Zi Jin, so he has plenty of stuff. Don’t feel like you need to hold back with him.” Tang Xinyun smiled as she helped Bai Yunfei with an excuse. There was a subtle tone to her voice as she spoke...

“In that case... I’ll partake then.” Chu Qingxue relented. Taking the accessories from Tang Xinyun’s hands, she rose from her seat, “It’s getting late. You should both go to sleep after you eat your meal, Xinyun, Yunfei.”

“We will.” Bai Yunfei nodded. Taking one of the meals, he stood up and walked back to his own room. Tang Xinyun led Kou Tingting to her room so that they could talk about something.

No one had even made it to their rooms when they all heard a commotion take place outside the courtyard. It was taking place far away, but due to the strengthened hearing that came with their

abilities as soul cultivators, everyone in the courtyard heard the exchange and the footsteps that had turned toward the entrance.

“Fifth master! Please hold on! It’s already very late. The young miss is most likely resting right now. Why not come back tomorrow to see her!”

A hurried voice called out, causing Bai Yunfei to look confused, “Fifth master? Is that...”

“Alright, alright! I get it! I just want to see my sister! If she’s really sleeping, I’ll come back tomorrow!” A juvenile voice cried out rather loudly.

Bai Yunfei could hear the impatient pattering of footsteps before he saw a small flash of violet light from the other side of the wall. A person was seen leaping to the top of the wall before jumping back down onto the ground in a half-second.

“Haha, is my sister here!”

Laughter accompanied the figure’s voice as Bai Yunfei finally saw who this person was.

The figure looked to be a young boy about the age of fifteen or maybe sixteen. He wore simplistic gray robes that looked a little worse for wear. They had clearly gone through their fair share of travel. His hair was nice and short. His sharp eyebrows complemented the glint in his eyes. Though young in appearance, the man looked far more mature than his face would suggest.

“Lit—little Ming!?” Since the boy was calling for Tang Xinyun, she was the first to react to what he said.

“Haha, it’s me, sis. I’m back!” The boy nodded his head excitedly. Running toward them, he quickly gave a bow of greeting to Chu Qingxue, “Little Ming pays his respects to mother-in-law!”

“Oh? Oh... you’re back, Ming’er. How were yours travels?” It took a moment for Chu Qingxue to fully respond, but when she did, it was with a smile.

“It was great! Second Grandfather and I were able to see so many things!” The boy laughed merrily in response.

Bai Yunfei had a blank look on his face, but he was still able to recognize the fact that this youth was Tang Xinyun’s brother and Hua Yueying’s son, Tang Ming; the youngest heir of the Tang.

“Little Ming, did you only just get back?” Tang Xinyun asked when she saw his travel-weary clothes.

“Yep, only just came back from seeing dad! I heard sis came home, so I came here straight away to say hello, haha...” Chuckling as he rubbed his head, Tang Ming said again, “I heard you joined the Crafting School and became someone’s disciple, is that true, sis?”

“It’s true.” A rather subdued nod was given.

“Woah, that’s amazing! The Crafting School! I met a crafter while traveling, he was really strong and had many soul armaments!! I’m so jealous of him. Will you craft me a few soul armaments in the future?”

Finding it rather hard to keep up with what he was saying, Tang Xinyun could only manage to nod her head, “Er... yes...”

Tang Ming nodded happily at her response as he turned to face Bai Yunfei, “I heard on the way home that sis brought home a super strong person. Is that you, big brother? There’s so many rumors I heard about you these past few days. Are you really strong?”

“Eh?” Bai Yunfei never imagined that he’d be targeted for questioning next. Forcing a smile to his lips, he answered, “Well... it’s nice to meet you, brother Tang Ming. I’m Bai Yunfei, your sister’s—”

“No need to be so polite, big brother Bai! Just call me Little Ming! I heard that you were the one that rescued sis when she was kidnapped, I wanted to thank you so much!”



“Ah, there’s no need for thanks... I was just doing what needed to be done...” The super-polite way Tang Ming spoke unnerved Bai Yunfei so much that he was practically lost at how to respond.

A greeting was given to Kou Tingting afterwards. The way Tang Ming spoke was still very polite, and a conversation was soon kicked up with him. Though everyone was involved in the conversation, it felt as though Tang Ming was making the conversation himself with excited passion while everyone else listened to him with an odd expression...

At last, he mentioned that he still needed to see his mother and would have to leave. With an individual goodbye to everyone there, Tang Ming left the courtyards as energetically as he had come in.

“.....”

Bai Yunfei was the first to speak after his presence had vanished from the courtyard. “Xinyun,” he turned to her, “is... is he really the same brother you talked about before? I... I feel like he’s pretty different than what you said he was like...”

She had told him that Tang Ming was an out-of-control little devil that was disagreeable and bossy beyond all else.

But not once did Bai Yunfei think that when talking with the boy!

“I... I don’t know either. He’s a completely different Little Ming than when he left. I really don’t know what happened.” Tang Xinyun’s confusion was apparent. Had she not personally bore witness to her brother’s return, she would’ve very much doubted that the boy was really her brother.

“Then wouldn’t that mean... his travels caused something to change in him?” Bai Yunfei conjectured, “If he saw how big the world was and how strong the people are, wouldn’t that be enough for his character to change?”

It was the only thing he could suggest; when Tang Ming spoke to

him earlier, Bai Yunfei could tell his emotions were all from the heart and hadn't been faked at all. In a way, he radiated a very similar feeling to Ye Tianming from the Northern Cliff Province.

Both were very happy, carefree, and completely innocent young men...

What kind of person did he have to meet, or what kind of event did he have to go through for him to undergo such a drastic change in behavior?

.....

Meanwhile, a gathering was taking place in the main hall of the Tang residence. The head of the house, Tang Qianlei, his younger brother, Tang Qianchi, and his third brother, Tang Qianshan were all standing there along with Tang Qianlei's eldest son, Tang Jing.

However, in a seat above them all was a seventy-year-old elder with white hair.

This elderly man was the 'Second Grandfather' Tang Ming spoke about, Tang Zhengde. Though he looked like seventy years old, his real age was nowhere near as 'young' as that.

"For clarification, second uncle... Ming'er was lost for an entire month during his trip!?"

A crease could be seen on Tang Qianlei's brows. If what he heard just now was correct, Tang Ming had been lost for an entire month just two months ago during his journey.

"That was indeed the case." Tang Zhengde nodded without any emotion. "It was when we were traveling through the Qilian Mountains. I didn't expect to find an enemy Soul King out there, so I hid Ming'er in a cave with instructions to not come out. It was a messy fight, but by the time I returned, he was nowhere to be found. All that was left was a message on the walls saying that someone had taken Ming'er on a trip for a month and to not worry.

“I searched everywhere for Ming’er, but he was nowhere to be found. After a month had passed, Ming’er found me himself. He never told me what happened during that one month, nor did he tell me anything about the person who had taken him...”

No one could find it possible for them to remain calm after hearing such an explanation.

“Was it from that moment on that Ming’er’s personality changed to what it is now?” Tang Qianlei asked.

“Correct.” Tang Zhengde nodded, “After he returned, it was as if Ming’er had become a man. He became polite, obedient, logical, and patient...”

“For ten years, we’ve tried to teach him such to no avail, and to have a complete stranger accomplish that in a single month...? I looked all over Ming’er for any sign of brainwashing or mind control, but I couldn’t find anything.”

“Who could it be...” Thinking about the mysterious person, Tang Qianlei sighed when no answer came to him. “Whoever he is or whatever the case, everything is alright as long as Ming’er is fine. Isn’t this what we’ve been hoping to achieve this entire time? The Ming’er of today is a vast improvement from before, he’s what a young man his age should be...”

No one could disagree. They all gave a mental nod of approval to Tang Qianlei’s words, but the concerns they had remained fresh in their minds

Just who was it that managed to make Tang Ming change so much in a single month?

# Chapter 345: The Third Son of Tang

---

TL Note: This chapter title is a reference to Tang Jia San Shao, the author of Douluo Dalu.

The next day, Bai Yunfei woke from his training-induced slumber to the merry laughter of people gathered in the outside courtyard. Upon concentrating, he noticed that one of the people laughing was Tang Ming.

Rising out of bed, Bai Yunfei walked to the door and opened it, revealing Tang Xinyun, Kou Tingting, Chu Qingxue, and Zhao Mancha all sitting at the stone table in the center. They all seemed to be listening to the story Tang Ming was relaying,

“And then... the class four gold-scaled crocodile dragged me into the water, but Second Grandfather didn’t even try to save me. He said that I should kill the crocodile if I wanted to live! I was really desperate at that moment. You know, my leg was practically torn to shreds, and I was pretty much on the verge of death! But it’s a good thing that my elemental lightning is strong in water, I was able to use it to kill that crocodile at the very last moment...”

Bai Yunfei was just in time to hear the conclusion of Tang Ming’s story.

It would appear that Tang Ming was retelling the tale of a hard-fought battle he had with a soulbeast, with the frights and thrills all included.

“What are you all talking about so happily about today?” Bai Yunfei asked after greeting everyone.

“Little Ming was just telling us a bit about his journey.” Tang Xinyun laughed.

“You’re finally up, big brother Bai!” Tang Ming chirped in familiarity when Bai Yunfei sat on the last remaining seat, “Sis said that you were busy training, so I didn’t want to bother you. You’re

so hardworking, big brother Bai! Even I want to take a break for a few days before starting to train again...”

“Haha, it’s nothing, really. I was just a little late during my nightly training this time, that’s all.” Modestly, Bai Yunfei dismissed Tang Ming’s compliment.

It was true in any case. Now that Tang Xinyun was back to her full strength, Bai Yunfei felt as though a huge boulder had been dropped off his back, so his training had progressed smoother than usual, causing the session last night to go on a little longer than usual.

Now that Bai Yunfei was seated and had caught up with what was going on, Tang Ming continued on with his story by answering the questions Kou Tingting had for him. By any accounts, his story was quite fantastical and beat Bai Yunfei’s stories by a wide margin, causing even Bai Yunfei to listen with interest.

“... and then the guy attacked us for no reason at all! Second Grandfather killed him in anger, but who knew that his friend still wouldn’t give up? They fought for a long time before a really really strong person appeared! He was so strong, even Second Grandfather had to get serious. He hid me in a cave and began to fight. After that...”

The entire journey was retold by Tang Ming in clear detail, but when he got to this part, he immediately stopped talking as if remembering to not say anything more.

“Hm? Little Ming, what’s wrong? What happened next?” Bai Yunfei urged him on due to his interest in hearing more.

“Next... well, nothing really...” He averted his eyes and shook his head.

“What do you mean nothing’s next? Are you a eunuch!?” Bai Yunfei cried, “Even a blind person could tell you don’t want to not say anything more.”

TL note: A joke lost in translation. In Chinese, 下面 means 'below' in the literal sense, but 'what's next' in meaning. Eunuchs are males who were castrated, meaning they have 'nothing down below.'

"Ahem, well. I can't talk about what happened next. It's a secret." Tang Ming explained grimly to the people in front of him. "I can only tell sis..."

"Hm? Only me? What do you mean by that, Little Ming?"

"I... I can only tell you! Come here, sis, I'll tell you the secret." Not knowing how to best hide the secret, he pulled Tang Xinyun to a corner of the courtyard.

"Don't try to eavesdrop, this is a secret to everyone!" He 'warned' the rest of the people at the table.

"..." Though speechless that something like that had to be said, everyone gathered there couldn't help but smile at how secretive Tang Ming was trying to be. They were curious, but for the sake of letting the two people talk in peace like Tang Ming asked, Chu Qingxue decided to ask how Bai Yunfei was doing in his training to pass the time.

.....

Tang Xinyun just couldn't help but ask Tang Ming question out of curiosity, "Little Ming, what's with you? What do you have to say so badly to me?"

"Hehe... well... that's because I promised him I wouldn't tell anyone but you." Tang Ming shook his head in slight embarrassment.

"Promised? Who did you promise? What is it?" She was even more curious now.

A furtive smile reached Tang Ming's eyes. "Sis, don't be shocked when I tell you... I met third brother!"

“Wha... what did you say!?” Reacting half a beat late, Tang Xinyun spoke, “Say that again? You met with third brother!?”

“Shhhh! Be quiet! Don’t let anyone else hear you!” Tang Ming made a shushing sound with his finger, “But hehe... I did! I met with brother Tang Wei.”

“Little Ming... are you joking with me? Did you really meet with third brother?” Excited, Tang Xinyun started to ask him some questions.

Then a more confusing question arose in her mind, “But... third brother left home when you were only three. How would you even recognize him?”

“Hey! I’m not lying! Sis, I really did meet with third brother. I didn’t recognize him, but he definitely recognized me! I didn’t believe him at first, but then he started talking about a few secrets only we would know. He even said he carried me around before and knows about the birthmark on my back; that’s when I started to believe him.”

“Is that so? Then... is it really third brother?! Tell me quick, where did you meet him? If he met with you, why hasn’t he come home yet?” Now that Tang Xinyun believed him, she was excited to know the details. She clasped her hands on Tang Ming to press for more information.

“Don’t rush me, sis! I’ll explain it all to you, just hold on.”

Gathering his thoughts, the boy began to speak again, “You see, when Second Grandfather left me in that cave, third brother came into it and took me with him, but only once I found out who he was. I was really bored following Second Grandfather, so I decided to go with third brother instead... I trained with him for an entire month and learned so much! So many things happened, and he taught me a lot as well. He made sure to tell me what I lacked before too. It was only just one month, but I feel that that one month of following third brother around was the most I have ever

learned in thirty days!”

“Oh? So the reason why you seem so much more sensible now is because of third brother then...” Tang Xinyun smiled, “Then what did you do in that one month to change you so much?”

“Well... heehee, it’s a bit hard to summarize, really hard!” Pretending to be a wise old man, Tang Ming shook his head.

“Haha, that’s enough from you. What are you trying to get at?” Tang Xinyun affectionately rubbed his head, “Then answer me quickly now, how is third brother doing?”

“I’m no longer a kid, okay?” Grumbling as he fixed his hair, Tang Ming said, “Third brother’s doing fine! I don’t know how strong he is, but he’s really strong! Probably as strong as third uncle! He’s amazing no matter what he does, and more importantly, he’s even more handsome than I am...”

“Hey—be serious!” Slapping her brother on the head, Tang Xinyun said, “Then why didn’t third brother come back home with you? Why isn’t he letting you tell this to anyone else?”

“I don’t know,” came his response. “I think he has something important to do. After that month, he brought me back to Second Grandfather and told me not to explain what had happened during that month to anyone.”

A space ring appeared in his hand to present it to Tang Xinyun. “Sis, third brother told me to give this to you. He said that if you wanted to learn how to use elemental fire, the stuff in here would help you get stronger faster.”

“He’s giving me this?” Surprised, Tang Xinyun took the ring from him, “This is...”



# Chapter 346: Tranquility

---

“He’s giving me this?” Surprised, Tang Xinyun took the ring from him, “This is...”

“There’s a few precious herbs in here.” Tang Ming explained, “Third brother said that there’s a lot of different ones. You should only use some of them for now. He also said there’s a scroll that’ll describe how to use them. If you can follow what it says, your training will see a huge improvement.”

Tang Xinyun already had a rough idea about what was in the space ring by the time Tang Ming was finished explaining things. She didn’t recognize some of the herbs, but... there were a few herbs that she was familiar with. One of them was even a dragonfruit like the one that had been sold at the auction just a few days ago...

One of the herbs was even the medicine Bai Yunfei had back in the Crafting School when he had attempted to form a second essence fireseed.

While she didn’t know just how old or how potent they were, Tang Xinyun knew that they were still without a doubt precious beyond belief.

“Is... is third brother really giving me all of this?” She gestured at the ring in her hand in dumb shock.

“Yea, third brother said that even though it’s been several years since he last saw you, he still faces the responsibility of being a good older brother. When he found out that you joined the Crafting School, he made sure to prepare all these things to help you practice. He said that he hopes it’ll help you grow stronger and help you live your own life...” Tang Ming repeated the words Tang Wei once said to him about her.

“So... third brother knows about my situation...” Touched by the

words and affection of her brother, Tang Xinyun clenched her fists tightly, remembering the memories of the past. Memories of when she used to cry and hide behind the not-so-much older Tang Wei while he made sure to punish those who bullied her...

She also remembered when he was taken away from her by a powerful outsider when she was six years old.

“From now on, your third brother won’t be around,” he said, “I won’t be able to protect you, so you have to learn to be strong and learn to be patient. Learn so that you can protect yourself. When you can do that or when you find someone who’ll protect you for the rest of your life, you won’t be bullied any more. Until that day comes, you have to stay determined. Don’t cry, don’t complain, and don’t hate. Just stay determined...”

“Third brother... it’s been over a dozen years now. Xinyun has grown. I’m stronger and also a part of the Crafting School. I’ve my master and my school, no one will bully me now.” Tang Xinyun silently spoke to the Tang Wei of her childhood.

Her eyes wandered slowly to a figure behind her, “I... I may have also found that someone...” She added.

“Sis? Sis? What’s wrong?”

Suddenly, the voice of her younger brother snapped Tang Xinyun out of her thoughts.

“Sis, you better not tell anyone else! Third brother said that he didn’t want anyone else to know. I don’t know why, but still...”

Putting the ring away, Tang Xinyun smiled at him, “I understand. I won’t tell anyone.”

.....

“Okay! I’m going to go play now, sis, auntie, big brother Bai, sister Tingting, and aunty Zhao, bye bye!!”

Now that his ‘secret meeting’ with Tang Xinyun was over, Tang

Ming could leave. It was a mystery to everyone why he was leaving. Bai Yunfei was even more confused when Tang Xinyun said that it was a secret when he asked, so no one else tried to press for details.

Tang Ming left the courtyard and another two people came walking in.

Those two were Jing Mingfeng and Zhao Xiluo.

“Hey, Mingfeng, Xiluo, where have you been these past few days? I haven’t seen you even once!” Bai Yunfei asked as soon as they drew close. The last time he had seen the two was when the auction house had officially ended. Even Kou Tingting didn’t know where the two had gone off. They did mention they were going to meet with Zhong Liyan for something fun.

“Hehe, nothing much, nothing much. Just some good ol’ fun.” Jing Mingfeng gave a dismissive wave of his hand. “Is Xinyun back to full strength? Anything weird with her essence fireseed?”

“Yes.” Tang Xinyun smiled, “I’m back to normal now.”

“That’s good, then.” Jing Mingfeng nodded happily.

Turning to Bai Yunfei next, Jing Mingfeng said, “Ol’ Bai, make sure you protect Xinyun, alright? If something like this happens again, you deserve to be struck by lightning...”

“Screw off! Where do you get off saying stuff like that?” Bai Yunfei derisively snorted, “I definitely won’t let anything like this happen again.”

Though Bai Yunfei said it in response to Jing Mingfeng, his words were meant to be a guarantee for everyone to hear.

“Okay then! Now that you’ve promised, I hope to see you two in good condition next time.” Jing Mingfeng slapped Bai Yunfei on the shoulder as he said this.

“What do you mean next time...?” Puzzled by his response, Bai

Yunfei asked, “Hold on, what do you mean? Are you going to leave?”

Like Bai Yunfei, Tang Xinyun was also surprised to hear what was being said.

“Yeah, I’ve decided to leave Mo City. I was only here for the auction, so now that I’ve gained a lot of primal stones, I’m going to find a nice place to lay low and focus on training...”

“Alright then....” Bai Yunfei nodded before asking the next question that popped into his mind, “When are you planning to leave?”

Jing Mingfeng smiled, “Right now.”

“Now!? Why so soon? And so sudden?”

“Haha, of course right now. We’re soul cultivators, we don’t need to dawdle and wait around for goodbyes like ordinary people. I hate sad goodbyes, so I’m pretty sure I wouldn’t be able to leave if I stayed another few days.”

And that was that. Taking a few steps away, Jing Mingfeng clasped his hands together to say his goodbyes, “Everyone, I’ll spare the sad talk and just say that I hope we meet again somewhere in the world!!

“Xiao Feng, we’re going!!” He whirled around after finishing his goodbyes and called for his wind squaller, who came bounding after him.

“Woof woof...” It bayed twice as it trotted.

The wind squaller was still small, but the barking was already as loud and ferocious as any feral beast despite sounding like a dog.

.....

For the sake of avoiding a very sad goodbye, Jing Mingfeng left as suddenly as he could. Since he did, Bai Yunfei was speechless for a good while while he tried to process what just happened. He

sighed, a goodbye was to be expected at the very least, and ones as sudden as this one weren't necessarily bad.

He knew there'd be a day that they'd meet again anyways.

Zhao Xiluo and Kou Tingting left a few days after that. The two of them had no reason to wait and left for the Crafting School. Tang Xinyun wanted to stay and keep her mother company for a few days more.

Since the auction was finally over, the many visitors in Mo City slowly trickled away. It was still as busy as any other day, but the high tension from before wasn't there.

The city had reverted back to a state of tranquility.

Bai Yunfei was left to be nothing more than an idle guest of the Tang residence. For the most part, he stayed in the courtyard and concentrated on his training. Sometimes, he'd accompany Tang Xinyun out for a walk or he'd play with Tang Ming, but contact with the rest of the Tang wasn't had. To reciprocate, the Tang didn't bother him much either. Neither favor nor dislike was given to him since the Tang had plenty of matters to attend to as a huge power. They didn't have the time to treat Bai Yunfei as anything but a guest if he had no business with them.

Bai Yinfei had been keeping track of how the Tang treated Tang Xinyun and her mother for a while. As of now, it didn't seem as though life was as bad as Tang Xinyun had recalled; they were treating her and her mother better than before. Though some didn't seem to care, there were a few others that were happier than before.

Chu Qingxue was a great example of the latter group. With her daughter by her side and no one to intervene or make trouble, the mother was living in an extremely happy mood. The family members that had once made trouble for her would purposely avoid her, afraid of some sort of retaliation...

When Bai Yunfei had first arrived, he had beaten Hua Binbai so badly that his wounds still hadn't healed yet. Since the Tang had chose to side with the married-in family at that time rather than their own, how could they possibly get close to Bai Yunfei after thinking he was no one special?

Each day was nice and warm in any case. Seeing Tang Xinyun with such a content smile made Bai Yunfei feel calm. He was without worry or apprehension for the future. He could slowly enjoy his training, and his nerves, which used to be so taut and high-strung, could finally relax.

.....

One afternoon half a month later—

While Zhao Mancha had taken Tang Xinyun out for groceries (Unless notified beforehand, everyone would normally prepare and eat their meals by themselves), Bai Yunfei was finishing his training in the middle of the courtyard. In his hand was his Fire-tipped Spear, basking in the warm sunlight.

Chu Qingxue was in the courtyard as well, though she stood next to the wisteria tree so that she could water it.

Seeing that she was done with her task, Bai Yunfei chose then to speak to her before she could retreat into her room, "Auntie Xue, I've something I'd like to talk to you about..."

## Chapter 347: Poisoned?!

---

“Yes? What is it, Yunfei?” Puzzled by what Bai Yunfei wanted, Chu Qingxue slowed as she turned to the table. Sitting down, she waited for Bai Yunfei to respond.

A moment was needed for Bai Yunfei to put away his spear and to think. “Auntie Xue, I just wanted to ask how you have felt ever since you started wearing those soul armaments I gave you.”

“You mean these accessories?” Chu Qingxue touched the bracelet on her left hand. “Thanks to these useful accessories, I feel much better now.”

“Auntie Xue, please dispense with the courtesies with me. I wasn’t asking about that, but rather about your old injury... is it better?”

Accessories that could improve the strength of the wearer weren’t all that important to a Soul Ancestor like Chu Qingxue. Plus, Bai Yunfei wasn’t asking about that.

“My old injury?” Chu Qingxue clarified, “It’s getting better. Ever since you gave me that one earring, I can feel myself getting better. These past few days have been...”

“Auntie Xue, I might not have been clear enough with my question.” Bai Yunfei cut her off, “What I wanted to ask is: after wearing the accessories I gave you, do you feel yourself growing physically stronger? For example, does your old injury hurt as much as before after wearing the earring? Or is your injury not flaring up as much now that you have the other accessories?”

“I...” The eyebrows on Chu Qingxue’s forehead creased together in thought. “I haven’t felt that with the accessories.” She shook her head, “but I did after wearing the earring. My wounds have gotten weaker rather than stronger, but what do you mean, Yunfei?”

She was confused by what Bai Yunfei was getting at, but the fact that Bai Yunfei didn't immediately answer her made her even more suspicious.

"Yunfei, what is it? Is there something wrong?"

"Auntie Xue, how did you... get that injury?" He asked carefully after a moment of consideration.

"How'd I get it? What brought this up, Yunfei?" Chu Qingxue hesitated to answer since she hadn't expected to be asked such a question.

Bai Yunfei caught her hesitation and moved to correct himself. "If auntie Xue doesn't want to talk about it, then please let me ask another question. Do you know what kind of injury was inflicted on you?"

"What kind of injury? The elemental power of an enemy seeped into my body and started to injure me, especially in the area around my shoulder. It targeted the acupoints located there. That's why I have occasional breakouts from the wound. I've tried many treatments in the past, but for some reason, none of them worked. After some time, I decided to give up on a cure..."

The pensive look on Bai Yunfei's face prompted Chu Qingxue to ask again, "What is it? Why have you asked me such a question, Yunfei?"

"Auntie Xue," Bai Yunfei began, "I need to tell you something. It's my belief that your injury isn't what you think it is. It's possible that you've been... poisoned!!"

"Poisoned!?" His answer only served to astound the woman, "I've been poisoned? What do you mean, and for what reason?"

Still looking as grave as ever, Bai Yunfei began to explain his reasoning, "Auntie Xue, the earring I gave you isn't capable of increasing the strength of its wearer. It has a special effect... by wearing it, any person will find their resistance to poison



increased! You’ve said that you felt better after wearing it, so I had my suspicions before about your injury. It wasn’t some sort of long-lasting wound, but rather, it was the symptoms of being poisoned!”

“But... but how could this earring be capable of something like that? And... poison? How could that be?” The blood drained from Chu Qingxue’s face because of her shock. She looked like she was trying to remember the situation behind her injury.

### The Detoxifying Earring

Equipment Grade: Mid Human

Elemental Affinity: Wood

Upgrade Level: +10

Attribute: +160 Strength

Additional Attribute: +90 Strength

Soul Compatibility: 10%

+10 Additional Effect: Increase poison resistance by 15%.

Upgrade Requirement: 75 Soulpoints

Bai Yunfei’s suspicions of Chu Qingxue’s wounds first began when she mentioned that she was feeling better after wearing the earring. The additional strength granted by the earring wouldn’t have been significant enough for a Soul Ancestor to even mention. A paltry increase of over two hundred points of strength wouldn’t have been enough to help her get better that fast.

Only one conclusion could be drawn: it was the additional effect of the earring that was helping her!

If a fifteen percent increase of resistivity to poison was helping Chu Qingxue feel better, that could only mean that she had been poisoned!

Bai Yunfei didn’t dare mention this possibility to her without the facts. That is why he gave Chu Qingxue a set of accessories to improve her strength. He then observed her physical recuperation after that. With this experiment, Bai Yunfei was able to slowly

confirm his hypothesis and find the answer to his question.

As of right now, he was more than ninety percent sure that Chu Qingxue had been poisoned!

Obviously, the only time he could ask Chu Qingxue was when she was alone. He didn't want to worry Tang Xinyun nor did he know if Chu Qingxue was keeping it a secret from her. Hence, it was better to confirm it himself before he did anything else.

Bai Yunfei wasn't necessarily afraid of letting the effects of the earring be made known either. As long as no one knew that it was him that had made this earring go from having 'no' effect to having 'an' effect, he would be safe. If anything, he could pretend that it was the inherent ability of the soul armament just like how the Violet Soul Ring and the Violet Soul Bracelet had their own special effects.

.....

Chu Qingxue went through a period of internal debate and silence before finally looking back at Bai Yunfei, "Yunfei, I'd like to ask something from you..."

"Eh? What can I help you with, auntie Xue? Do you have any clues about how you were poisoned?"

"It's not that. I would like to ask you to not tell Xinyun about this."

"Oh, you don't want her to know? I can promise that I won't tell her for now, but since you were poisoned, I really feel that you should..."

"It's best that you do not look into why I was poisoned, okay?"

"What?"

He hadn't expected that.

"Auntie Xue, what did you say?"

"I'm saying that I know about this matter now, but you shouldn't

look into it, okay, Yunfei? I will handle this myself...”

He was stunned. He had thought that after he had learned the truth behind her wounds, he'd be able to find a way to help her treat her wounds, but asking Bai Yunfei to ignore the matter was...

He still had plenty of questions he wanted to ask, but the look in Chu Qingxue's eyes was more than enough to make him think twice about asking. Freezing up before anything more could be said, Bai Yunfei gave a slow but silent nod.

“I understand, auntie Xue. I'll do as you say...”

The older woman was clearly afraid of talking about something. If Bai Yunfei had to put his finger to it, she looked concerned, even afraid.

With the situation in an unknown state, Bai Yunfei could only agree to Chu Qingxue's request. However, he was already secretly thinking about trying to make some accessories that could further increase one's resistance to poison.

That way, he'd be able to help treat Chu Qingxue.

Even after Tang Xinyun came back, Bai Yunfei kept his promise with Chu Qingxue. Without the slightest indication that anything was wrong, Chu Qingxue smiled when her daughter returned so that Tang Xinyun wouldn't be able to tell that she was concerned about being poisoned.

Like the interlude to a musical piece, this event hadn't changed anything in the slightest between Tang Xinyun and her mother.

Just like that, the warm and peaceful days went by without further incident.

Soon, two months had passed since Bai Yunfei and Tang Xinyun had arrived in Mo City. On the twenty-fifth day of the tenth month, the two crafters finally decided to return to the Crafting School...

# Chapter 348: Elder Hai

---

The trip to Mo City was finally over. The benefits Bai Yunfei had gained during this trip were certainly more plentiful than he had anticipated.

The plan had originally been to reunite Tang Xinyun with her mother back in Mo City, so she'd be able to slowly forget about her lost essence fireseed and alleviate her sorrows with her mother.

Then many things happened, some beyond Bai Yunfei's wildest dreams, turning this uneventful reunion into a fantastical journey filled with stories to tell.

The first tale to tell would be of his encounter with Big and Little Dagger where he was able to obtain the rest of the Flying Dagger Compendium and learn the techniques required to throw them.

Next up was meeting a plethora of people in Mo City, such as Xuanyuan Jie, Zhong Liyan, Jing Mingfeng, and Zhao Xiluo again. He even met Kou Changkong's once-mentioned daughter, Kou Tingting.

The appearance of the fireseed spirit mushroom in the auction house was surprising, but what was just as surprising was the fact that it was stolen and then taken back shortly before Tang Xinyun was kidnapped, forcing him to eat the mushroom meant for her.

He formed a second essence fireseed in his body, and his first essence fireseed had reawakened during a battle where he killed a Soul Exalt. The reawakened essence fireseed brought him back to full strength, elevating him to the level of a mid-stage Soul Ancestor.

Lastly, while he was worrying about how to replace the fireseed spirit mushroom, the Tang came out of nowhere with a stored fireseed spirit mushroom of their own. Tang Xinyun was allowed to eat it, and she too was able to form her essence fireseed and

return to her original strength.

Having weighed the pros and cons, one would have to admit that the pros definitely outweighed the cons.

To put it succinctly, all of Bai Yunfei's problems had been taken care of all at once.

There was of course still the problem of Chu Qingxue being poisoned, but with the earring, she should at least be safe from any imminent crisis for now.

In short, the trip to Mo City was more than worth it.

On the day that marked their second month in Mo City, Bai Yunfei and Tang Xinyun finally started on their journey back to the Crafting School.

.....

Nothing special happened on their way back. With his strength back to normal, Bai Yunfei was able to fly even faster on the Tempest Sword without needing to stop.

The two of them were able to return back to the school in just twenty days.

On the Northern Peak of Mt. Crimson—

In a small bamboo house sat Zi Jin. Sunlight glinted through the window. It sprinkled onto the simple walls and floor of the room, basking the room in a peaceful but warm silence.

Only the occasional 'clack' sounds could be heard when something small was pressed against the hard ground.

"Haha! Killing the Dragon! Zi, my old friend, did you expect such a masterful move like this!?" A brassy voice roared in laughter, breaking the silence.

TL Note: Dragon is a term in Go where there is a long line of uninterrupted stones of the same color. Killing the Dragon means to interrupt the line, essentially.

“Isn’t it a little early for you to get excited, Hai, my old friend? Can you really claim to have ‘killed’ my Dragon after capturing so little of my stones? It’s far too early to see who the victor is.” A moderately more calm voice replied back, shutting the other speaker down.

This speaker was Bai Yunfei’s master, the previous headmaster, Zi Jin!

In the room sat two elderly men. In front of the two was a small square table with lines running this way and that, forming hundreds of small grids. On the intersections of the grids sat just as many stones of black and white—

—the game being played was clearly Go.

Both of the players had white grizzly hair. One of them was Zi Jin while the other person was an unknown entity. The elder wore a rather plain but slightly tattered blue robe and his white hair rested freely on its back. His face was weathered from time and age. He seemed not to care about his appearances since his beard was prickly and messy rather than combed.

What was most noticeable about him was the calabash gourd in his left hand. He was drinking alcohol rather greedily from it, like a drunkard.

The fact that he was able to drink and play Go with the one he called an ‘old friend’ clearly meant that he wasn’t any regular drunkard.

A white stone was held betwixt Zi Jin’s right hand before it was placed on an empty space of the board.

“Clack.”

As soon as the stone was in place, the face of the other old man start to drop.

“There... there was still a move like that!? How didn’t I catch that earlier!”

“Haha, playing Go requires a calm mind and heart. How could someone as noisy as you play well? Hai, my old friend, you’ve lost, that means your thousand-year-old frozen soulstone is mine now...” Smiling, Zi Jin began to clean off the board.

Though his words were without emotion, the smile on his lips was anything but. If anything, it seemed as though he was intentionally goading his friend.

“You—I... pah! You’ve been learning this game longer than I have! Where do you get off pretending to be wise? I was this close to winning!” Angrily waving his right hand, the old man launched a fist-sized blue stone out his space ring. It headed toward Zi Jin.

There was a pained look on the elder’s face when the frozen soulstone was taken away. Almost accusatorily, the elder said, “Zi, you old fogey, I’ve only won three earth-tier soul armaments from you, but you’ve already cleared me out of almost half my precious herbs and minerals. Were... were you planning this?!”

Zi Jin laughed, “Now now, don’t spout nonsense. I wasn’t the one that forced you to play Go, and the stakes were optional to begin with. Well? Would you care for another game? I’ll let you start with three stones, weren’t you saying how you were ‘so close’ to winning the last one?”

“Come then! I’ve the secret now. I’ll definitely win the next round!”

.....

A new game was starting between the two. Both players laughed and chatted merrily as it progressed. It didn’t seem like two powerful men were having a fearsome battle of wits, rather it seemed like any game of chess between two ordinary old men in an alleyway.

“Ah, Zi, my old friend, I nearly forgot to ask. You were in such a hurry last time when we met, why did you trade two of your low-

heaven tier soul armaments for the fire-type herbs I had? What was the rush?" The old man asked as he placed a stone down.

Zi Jin's move was swift as was his reply, "Ah, it wasn't anything important. Perhaps I didn't tell you about the new disciple I've gained. The one named Bai Yunfei? Several months ago, there was an accident with his essence fireseed, so I wished to help him recover his strength... all is well now. Changkong's daughter, Tingting, came back several days ago with a message saying that she had met with Yunfei in Mo City and that his strength is back to normal now."

"I see... it is still surprising to say the least. You having a disciple just twenty years since our last meeting? I had thought after that youngling from the Eastern Underworld you'd..." His sentence floundered at the last bit when he noticed the sour look on Zi Jin's face, "Haha, I misspoke, pretend I didn't say anything..." he hurried to correct himself, "I only meant that I'm quite interested in this new disciple of yours. I'd like to see just what kind of man he is if he could catch even your interest."

"Haha, a frog in the pond, he is not. I'm confident that in the future, his achievements will surely be on par with our own..." A look of satisfaction could be seen on Zi Jin's face as he praised Bai Yunfei.

"Oh? So this Bai Yunfei has that high of a praise from you?" The other man remarked in surprise.

Even Jiang Fan hadn't received such a wonderful comment from Zi Jin before.

"Yunfei is a special person with many things that I can't even possibly begin to explain him..." The stone in Zi Jin's hand paused briefly in the air, "Haha, what luck!" Zi Jin laughed, "Speak about him, and he appears."

Just as he finished speaking, the voice of a polite Bai Yunfei could be heard, "Master, your disciple has returned to pay his respects."



An affectionate light entered Zi Jin's eyes as he smiled, "Come in, Yunfei."

The door to the room creaked open as Bai Yunfei entered. Standing off to the side of Zi Jin, he bowed, "Yunfei pays his respects to the master."

Zi Jin nodded in satisfaction, "Haha, very good, you've returned. I heard from Tingting that plenty happened to you in Mo City. You've done well for your master."

"Zi, my friend, this is your new student? His strength doesn't seem anything special, he's just a Soul Spr—" The other elder was already observing Bai Yunfei as he entered, but before he could even finish his verdict, he paused for a moment.

"Eh? That's not right... you're hiding your strength..."

"You're a mid-stage Soul Ancestor!!"

Bai Yunfei was quite adept at using the Soul Concealment Art to hide his strength to the levels of a mid-stage Soul Sprite, but this old man had been able to easily deduct his actual strength, shocking Bai Yunfei.

Zi Jin came to the same realization as his friend. He gave a nod of his head in satisfaction. "Haha, not bad... it seems that regaining your strength wasn't the only thing that happened in Mo City..."

Casting an eye to the other man, Zi Jin introduced him to Bai Yunfei, "Yunfei, this old fellow is named Hai Dongqing. He's a friend of mine and is currently a wandering soul cultivator."

## Chapter 349: A Game Between Two Experts

---

“What do you mean an idling soul cultivator!? Zi, you dunderhead, I may be used to traveling now, but I’ve still a clan, you hear? How could you treat me like this in front of a youngling?” The other man cried out in agony because of Zi Jin’s introduction.

“Your clan? Hasn’t it been over a hundred years since you’ve seen them? Even if there’s a saying that the young will do well on their own, you didn’t do a thing when trouble happened to them fifty years ago. Can you still call them your clan?” Zi Jin lazily looked at him.

“How doesn’t it? If a clan with the last name of Hai still exists, they’re the offsprings of I, Hai Dongqing!” Hai Dongqing remarked indignantly, “Didn’t they take care of the matter by themselves? Where would an old man like me fit in?”

“How callous you are,” Zi Jin smiled, “to see your offspring in such danger from such a detached perspective.”

“What do you know? I’m just teaching them to be independent! Aren’t they doing fine without me? If they rely on an old codger like me like a crutch, how would the clan ever grow!? Haven’t you ignored the Crafting School for twenty years yourself?”

“Yes yes, that’s right. I won’t say anything more about your clan...”

The verbal sparring between Zi Jin and Hai Dongqing left Bai Yunfei speechless. He was surprised, to say the very least, to find that Zi Jin had this side to him. Nowhere was his strict persona to be seen; only a friendly and relaxed aura could be felt around the elder.

If what Zi Jin had said was true, he and Hai Dongqing were good friends for well over a hundred years. By extension, this meant Hai

Dongqing was at least a century old and Zi Jin was a contemporary of the same strength...

Bai Yunfei shivered at the thought.

Bowing so as to avoid looking impolite to the elder, Bai Yunfei said, “Junior Bai Yunfei pays his respects to senior Hai...”

“Ah, forget it, forget it. No need for all this politeness. You’ve talent if you’ve become a mid-stage Soul Ancestor at such a tender young age, young one. It’s no wonder the old fogey has taken a liking to you. Not bad, not bad at all...” Hai Dongqing waved his hand dismissively while trying to hide the mild shock in his eyes.

“Well then, let’s put this game away for next time, my friend. I’ve some things I’d like to speak to Yunfei about.” Zi Jin glanced over at him, “Shouldn’t you be...”

“Now don’t be like that! Don’t think I don’t know what you’re planning! I was going to win this game! I leave after this game ends!” Hai Dongqing glared as he ‘pointed’ out the plan of Zi Jin. With that, he placed another stone down onto the board, capturing yet another few stones.

“You...” Slightly embarrassed by the antics of his friend, Zi Jin tried his best to regain his calm.

“Yunfei, wait by the side for a moment.” He motioned to Bai Yunfei.

“Yes, master.” Came the reply. Standing behind Zi Jin, Bai Yunfei watched the game take place in front of him with some shock.

It looked as though the two people in front of him were playing a very intense game, but from what Bai Yunfei knew of his master, Zi Jin’s skill at the game was a little...

When Bai Yunfei took a closer look at the board, he could see the path the game was on with each stone placed. In time, a relieved expression appeared on his face.

As it turned out, Hai Dongqing was of the same level of skill as his master.

Equally... crappy.

His master had fallen in love with the 'way of Go' as soon as Bai Yunfei had introduced the game to him. Whenever Bai Yunfei went to his master for a question, he would find him pouring over a self-imposed game of Go, studying which moves to make.

Even worse was the fact that Zi Jin would always ask Bai Yunfei to play a game with him whenever he visited.

The part that terrified Bai Yunfei the most was trying to figure out a way to not completely humiliate his master by winning.

Now, it seemed as though Hai Dongqing was just as fanatical about this board game as his master...

In other words, they loved Go, but they were terrible at it. This meant they were perfect to play with one another.

Excited to play, excited to win, that was how this game could be summed up.

Zi Jin had spent the past few days studying Go in earnest. Though, his skill at the game didn't seem like it improved.

That was when Hai Dongqing visited him.

Unexpectedly, Hai Dongqing took up Go with just as much enthusiasm as Zi Jin, and the two ended up playing Go with each other for three whole days and nights. By this point, Hai Dongqing had felt that he had 'graduated' from being the student to becoming the master. Thus he had challenged Zi Jin to a duel.

Stakes were then made to officiate the duel, but as things turned out, Zi Jin was just a bit better than Hai Dongqing at the game. There were some games that he lost, but he won the majority of them.

It still remained to be seen if he was going easy on Hai

Dongqing...

Even experts of Go can slip up when careless. For example, Zi Jin was stuck in a losing situation this match. If nothing was done to rectify this situation, he'd most likely lose.

Clearly aware of his situation, Zi Jin sat in his seat with a grim expression. His hand hesitated over the board as his mind raced to find a solution.

If he was careless, then this game would be a repeat of his games with Bai Yunfei, where a single move completed thoughtlessly would lead to his imminent defeat...

"Hurry up already. You've been thinking for far too long. You're too slow." Since he was on the verge of victory, Hai Dongqing was extremely impatient.

"What are you going on about. Don't you know Go should be played in silence!?" Zi Jin glared, but the damage was done.

The hand holding the stone slowly inched toward onto the board after several seconds of observation. He was going to take back some of his previously lost territory.

"Cough, cough, cough, cough!"

Unable to stomach this match anymore, an exasperated Bai Yunfei gave four deliberate short coughs.

Did he forget where he was? The two elders in this room were ten times older than Bai Yunfei was, especially Zi Jin.

Just as Zi Jin was about to remark on Bai Yunfei's coughing, the hand holding the stone paused briefly when a moment of realization hit.

"Is this move wrong? Should I go elsewhere? Four coughs... four? Four... hm... oh, yes, that place!!"

In two seconds, the dots in Zi Jin's head started to connect together. Smiling, Zi Jin moved his hand to the left part of the

board to place a stone on the fourth spot from the left.

A step away from the edge, an escape from disaster, a glimmer of hope from beyond the shade, an attack that doubled as a defense!!

This was the move to turn the tides!

The smug look on Hai Dongqing's face was completely wiped away when he observed the move. He desperately placed another stone on the board to protect his territory, but his momentum had been lost.

The last vestiges of his armor was completely removed by Zi Jin's master stroke, and now it was evident to all that Hai Dongqing had lost this match as well.

"Haha!! Hai, my friend, I win yet again. Now now, hurry up and offer up what you've wagered. That sixth class gold-winged tiger soulgem is mine." Zi Jin laughed without remorse at his victory over Hai Dongqing.

Stone-faced as he handed over the soulgem, Hai Dongqing snorted, "Pah! If not for that last move of yours, I would've won that match..."

His eye wandered over to Bai Yunfei who was standing behind Zi Jin.

Freezing in place when their eyes met, Bai Yunfei felt his back start to grow wet with sweat...

"A loss is a loss. What kind of a two-hundred year old man tries to make excuses? Have you no shame or honor in front of a youngling?" Zi Jin mocked. "Well then, you'd best be on your way, my friend."

"You!!" Furious at this sudden expulsion, Hai Dongqing stood up from his seat without even bothering to clean up his portion of the stones. Another stare was given to Bai Yunfei and a look of a suspicion seemed to creep into his eyes...

Eyes palpitating with fear, Bai Yunfei's entire forehead was slick with sweat now. Hai Dongqing's stare felt like a dagger poised to strike at his back, causing Bai Yunfei to regret his decision to warn his master during the game...

# Chapter 350: Welcoming Gifts

---

Not even a second had passed since Hai Dongqing had started to observe Bai Yunfei, but the younger male felt as though time was stretching on for far too long now.

Thought after thought weaved with one another as Bai Yunfei tried to think of a way to stop this mysterious old man from forming some sort of grudge with him.

Thinking that his best bet was to do something, Bai Yunfei immediately prepared to try and change how this elder might perceive him.

“Cough cough, er... senior Hai, this junior... happens to have some writings of what I’ve learned in Go. Since this is our first time meeting, please allow me to offer this as a gift...” In a flash of inspiration, Bai Yunfei took out a small gray scroll from his space ring.

A while back, Bai Yunfei had been bored enough to write down a few memories about Go. The scroll detailed certain ways to best approach certain situations, and in a way, they were basically past records of various Go games for the average layman.

“Oh, such a thing exists?” Hai Dongqing’s eyes lit up, but with some suspicion. “Young one, is this something you wrote? Are you decent at the game? Don’t try and trick me with something you cobbled together.”

“Hai you fool, how could you speak to my disciple like that? The game of Go was created by Yunfei himself. Can you really say he’s not decent at the game?” Zi Jin backed Bai Yunfei in his attempt to save himself.

However, Zi Jin was also interested in the scroll in Bai Yunfei’s hand.

“Oh? You created Go?” Hai Dongqing remarked in surprise. He



gave Zi Jin an odd glance Zi trying to confirm the truth. He then raised his right hand up. With a twitch of his finger, the scroll in Bai Yunfei's hand flew to him. A pleased smile appeared on Hai Dongqing's face after looking through the scroll with his soulsense. He then deposited the scroll into his space ring, afraid that someone might steal it.

“Haha, very good! What a knowledgeable young man! Not bad at all!!” Hai Dongqing laughed. Bai Yunfei gave a mental sigh of relief when he heard an amicable tone in his laugh.

A look of disappointment flashed across Zi Jin's eyes when the scroll disappeared into Hai Dongqing's ring. Responding to Hai Dongqing's pleased words, he said, “What nerve you have. Accepting a gift from your junior without giving him one in return. Is that any way a senior should act?”

“Uh...” Freezing into place at the accusation, Hai Dongqing could only cough into his hand to disguise his emotions. “Who said I wasn't going to give a gift? In fact, I was just about to give one, but how can you call yourself his master if he was the one who had to give a gift? Really now, pay attention to your own image as the headmaster of the Crafting School, okay?”

“.....”

Thinking about what to give for a moment Hai Dongqing sighed, “Forget it. In order to avoid being called a cheapskate by that old fogey, have this item young one! I was going to trade this to your master for something equally good...”

Hai Dongqing waved his hand, and a fist-sized white stone flew toward Bai Yunfei. Catching the stone from the air almost reflexively, Bai Yunfei looked at it. He felt as though it was familiar...

“This is...”

Shocked by what he saw, Bai Yunfei quickly took a look at the

notification that popped up.

Unique Equipment
Equipment Grade: High Earth Elemental Affinity: None Upgrade Level: +10  Special Effect 1: Increase the chance of success when upgrading by 700%. Effect cannot be stacked with the effect of another item. Special Effect 2: Increase the chance of success when crafting by 500%. Effect cannot be stacked with the effect of another item.  Cannot be upgraded.

Bai Yunfei’s eyes nearly popped out of his head. Any thanks he wanted to say to the elder was momentarily forgotten as he stared at the gift that had been given to him. It was actually an upgrade stone! A high earth tier one!!

The last stone he had owned had only been a mid-human tier upgrade stone. This stone was far better than the last one!

An increase of 700%... a percentage seven-times greater than the previous one!

Even Zi Jin looked surprised at the object in Bai Yunfei’s hand. He nodded in satisfaction and gave a meaningful look to Hai Dongqing. “So you’ve what it takes to be a senior after all.”

“Ugh, I never should’ve come to the Crafting School! Your school has plenty of treasures, but not only did I get none of them, I lost most of my own! What a disappointment...” Hai Dongqing sighed.

Picking up his gourd to leave, Hai Dongqing said to Zi Jin, “I’ll be leaving first, but expect me to come back in a few days. I want to take a good look at this scroll, so you better prepare yourself for a complete massacre when I return!”

Then, Hai Dongqing disappeared from Bai Yunfei's sight. In no time at all, he was up in the sky flying off into the distance. With Bai Yunfei's strength, there was no way his soulsense would've picked up on the fact that Hai Dongqing had left.

With Hai Dongqing gone, the friendly look on Zi Jin's face reverted to his impassive one. Storing away the Go board, he sat on a nearby chair and motioned for Bai Yunfei, "Yunfei, come and sit."

Obeying his master, Bai Yunfei walked over to the other chair and sat down. "Yunfei, this crafting stone you got is extremely precious as a crafting ingredient." Zi Jin explained, "It can increase the chances of success when crafting an item, but you do not have the skill to use it efficiently. Wait until you grow strong enough to craft more advanced soul armaments, then you can use the stone."

"Crafting stone? Oh, yes, I understand, master." Bai Yunfei quickly masked the surprise on his face and nodded his head. The most important aspect to this stone was the fact that it could increase the chance of success when upgrading, hence why Bai Yunfei had named it the upgrade stone, but the stone was called the 'crafting stone' by everyone else since they could only make use of the secondary effect of it.

Looking away from the stone, Zi Jin warmly smiled at Bai Yunfei, "Yunfei, how do you feel about what happened in Mo City?"

"Many things happened to me, and I learned a lot. I feel as though I've grown as a person." Bai Yunfei responded honestly.

"That's good. If you've learned, you've benefitted. The outside world has many things to teach, things you wouldn't ever learn in the Crafting School. Words can't teach you everything, you need to learn by experience as well." Zi Jin nodded. "Explain to me the most important things that happened to you in the city. Tingting gave me a brief summary of what happened, but the details are still unclear to me. You'd best explain how you came to regain your

strength.”

When Kou Tingting came back to the Crafting School, she had not been able to explain everything that had happened to Bai Yunfei and Tang Xinyun, so Kou Tingting could only relay the major events, like their complete recoveries. She couldn't explain the finer details.

“Yes, master. After your student accompanied Xinyun back to her home, I...”

“.....”

Recollecting his thoughts, Bai Yunfei began to recall what had happened to him during his time in Mo City. He made sure to mention the fireseed spirit mushroom he had bought at the auction house, how it was stolen, how Tang Xinyun had been kidnapped, how he had eaten the mushroom to form a second essence fireseed, and how his first essence fireseed had been awakened to destroy his enemy... one after another, Bai Yunfei explained each event without leaving any details out.

The more Bai Yunfei talked, the more his master looked alarmed. By the time Bai Yunfei talked about forming a second essence fireseed after eating the mushroom, Zi Jin's face was completely overtaken by a look of utter shock. When Bai Yunfei mentioned that he had killed Ta Shan and divided the two essence fireseeds away from one another, a bright glint of light appeared while Bai Yunfei continued on with his story.

“And then I started to rest and recover my strength for an entire month before returning home...”

The entire narration took nearly a whole hour by the time Bai Yunfei was finished. Taking a deep breath, he looked at his master, only to see that Zi Jin had his head bowed low deep in thought.

“Master? Is there something wrong?”

“Yunfei,” he raised his head, “you said that you now have a

second essence fireseed, and that nothing happened during that one month since you obtained it?”

Not knowing what Zi Jin was getting at, Bai Yunfei could only answer honestly, “That is correct, master. Ever since, I have stored one of my essence fireseeds in my Cataclysmic Seal, I didn’t dare to put the two together again...”

“That’s good. You did the right thing.” Zi Jin praised him, “Yunfei, take your lifebound armament out for your master to see.”

“Yes.” responded Bai Yunfei. His Violet Soul Ring pulsated with light for a second as the Cataclysmic Seal popped out. A slight ripple of elemental fire emanated from it.

A stunned look appeared on Zi Jin’s face as soon as the Cataclysmic Seal popped into sight. Clearly, there was something different about the soul armament now.

He studied the brick for several seconds before extending his right hand.

The moment his finger touched the Cataclysmic Seal, the brick softly shivered. A vibrational hum came to life as if rejecting Zi Jin’s touch.

When he pulled away, the brick settled back down.

Testing the brick again, Zi Jin poured a bit of his soulsense into the brick to make contact with the second essence fireseed. When the two entities touched, the Cataclysmic Seal exploded with a blindingly bright amount of elemental fire!

Surprised, Zi Jin immediately pulled his hand back while Bai Yunfei moved to rein in the Cataclysmic Seal.

“Master...” Bai Yunfei started to speak.

“Haha, it’s nothing...” Zi Jin answered while maintaining eye contact with the brick. “Yunfei, give me your hand.”

Bai Yunfei complied with his right hand.

Touching Bai Yunfei's hand with his own, Zi Jin transmitted his soulsense into Bai Yunfei.

Knowing that Zi Jin was looking for something, Bai Yunfei offered up no resistance. He allowed the foreign soulsense to circle his body for a while before it pulled out.

“Amazing... there really are two... two completely intact essence fireseeds!!” Zi Jin announced as soon as he pulled his right hand away, “The method you used to make two essence fireseeds is strange, but without a doubt, you have two essence fireseeds... this means... this means...”

Delight slowly spread across Zi Jin's face. He spoke as though he was thinking about something incredibly special.

# Chapter 351: Dual Flame Arts and the Dual Dragon Burst!

---

“Master...” Bai Yunfei hesitated. This was the very first time he’d ever seen his master reveal such a pensive look.

Was there something wrong with him having two essence fireseeds?

Now that he was thinking about it, the question was making him nervous.

“Oh? Ah. Yunfei, there’s no need to feel worried. It’s a good thing! A very good thing!” Laughing, Zi Jin replied to alleviate Bai Yunfei’s worries.

“This situation of yours is completely unprecedented. Whether it be from the history of our Crafting School to the several millenias of the Tianhun Empire, no records have ever mentioned a person doing what you have done!

“But... do you remember when told you about the predecessor of our school. The one who had had a companion fireseed?”

Bai Yunfei nodded.

“Your student remembers. Master said that having two complete essence fireseeds co-existing in the same body was impossible. The best case is when one essence fireseed absorbs the other one, and the worst case is the body explodes into pieces, but that predecessor found a different solution. He formed a companion fireseed and shocked the world.”

“Correct. It took that predecessor many years of hardwork, yet there was still a bit of luck involved to form a companion fireseed. You experienced tremendous luck as well by successfully forming two fully intact essence fireseeds! Perhaps you don’t understand the significance of your achievement... Yunfei, you’ve an unlimited amount of potential in you. If you continue to train

hard, you'll definitely bring forth a new paradigm to this world!"

Bai Yunfei felt lost with the amount of praise Zi Jin was showering him with, "Master... while your student does have two essence fireseeds, I can only use the one in my body and control them one at a time. Though the second one in the Cataclysmic Seal can increase its strength by a lot, it's..."

What he was trying to say was: while I'm a lot stronger now with two essence fireseeds, they're nowhere as powerful as you're describing.

Naturally catching onto what Bai Yunfei was trying to hint at, Zi Jin shook his head, "Yunfei, do you know why I wanted to talk to you about the predecessor with the companion fireseed?"

"Your... your student knows not..."

"That's because this predecessor was not only someone who reached the top of the world, he also left behind... an eternal amount of treasure for our Crafting School!"

"He created the methodology of training with dual fireseeds, and he was also the one who invented an unbelievably strong soul skill!"

Only adoration could be heard in Zi Jin's voice as he spoke. This predecessor was clearly someone of great importance to him.

As he spoke, his right hand rose into the air and cut into space.

Then, in front of Bai Yunfei's very eyes, Zi Jin's hand went into this cut part of the air!!

It was like the opening to a cave or like something had opened up of the air. His hand had reached into the opening, and the parts of his hand that had entered the tear couldn't be seen on the other side.

Bai Yunfei wasn't able to see what Zi Jin was grabbing, but the moment Zi Jin pulled his hand out, Bai Yunfei was again startled



by what he saw.

In Zi Jin's hand were two crimson scrolls. He extended them to Bai Yunfei to take.

"Master, these are..." Bai Yunfei's voice shook as he accepted the scrolls.

"These are the invented art and soul skill that our predecessor left us, the mid-heaven tier art, the Dual Flames Arts and the mid-heaven tier soul skill, the Dual Dragon Burst!"

Bai Yunfei's hands started to shake violently once he processed Zi Jin's words. His heart started to skip several beats—heaven tiers! The both of them, and both were mid-tier as well!!

It is extremely crucial to note that the rarity of a soul skill was many times more precious than a soul armament of the same rarity!

Pausing to take a deep breath, Zi Jin waited for Bai Yunfei to calm down before continuing. "I was planning on giving you them to you if you had successfully managed to form a new essence fireseed. It was unfortunate that you failed then, and I never expected you to form a second one during your trip to Mo City..."

"Yunfei, from today on, you'll practice the two scrolls here, especially the Dual Flame Arts. That predecessor said that he had created this art so that he could learn how to train with both essence fireseeds, but he failed and only managed to form a companion fireseed instead. But still, he was able to use the Dual Flame Arts, just not its fullest extent like he had hoped. He passed down these scrolls, hoping a student would be able to fulfill his wish..."

"The Dual Dragon Burst is a complementary soul skill to the Dual Flame Arts. As long as you familiarize yourself with the Dual Flame Arts, you'll be able to make use of the soul skill. Its power... is rumored to have once killed two Soul Kings when our predecessor

first used it!”

The more he listened to Zi Jin’s explanation, the more Bai Yunfei was sent into a silent state of shock, but when he looked back to the two crimson scrolls in his hands, a fire was starting to burn to life in his eyes.

Noticing how excited Bai Yunfei was, the corners of Zi Jin’s lips started to curl into a smile. “Yunfei,” he warned, “take some time to study and learn the Dual Flame Arts. Don’t be hasty, even your master doesn’t understand much of the records left behind by our predecessor. Use the Dual Flame Arts only if you’re in immediate danger, do you understand?”

Putting away the scroll, Bai Yunfei nodded earnestly. “Your student understands, master.”

“Good. Go back and rest for now. After traveling for so long, you must be tired, right?”

For two whole days and night, Bai Yunfei had traveled with Tang Xinyun to Mt. Crimson without stopping. He dropped Tang Xinyun off at the Eastern Point and headed straight to see his master, meaning he hadn’t rested since they had left.

Even now, he was still planning on seeing the rest of the brothers and elders in the school before he’d rest.

Bai Yunfei rose to leave the room, but then a sudden thought struck him.

“Master, your student still has one last thing. If master could give his guidance for this, please.”

“Oh? What is it? Speak.”

“When your student was in Mo City, I watched Xinyun use the fireseed spirit mushroom to regain her essence fireseed and form yet another soulbound armament... what your student would like to ask is this:

“For us of the Crafting School, the formation of our essence fireseeds is a chance to forge a soulbound armament or refine it even further by increasing our soul compatibility with it. Then, couldn’t we dissolve our essence fireseed and use a fireseed spirit mushroom to reform another essence fireseed? That way, as long as we have enough fireseed spirit mushrooms, we could make more and more soulbound armaments, or maybe even refine a soulbound armament and hope to turn it into a lifebound armament....”

This question surprised Zi Jin, but he shook his head with a faint smile. “Yunfei, it’s not as simple as you think... using fireseed spirit mushrooms is not ideal. First off, fireseed spirit mushrooms aren’t cost-effective, and secondly, we don’t have a small amount of low-heaven tier soul armaments. Fireseed spirit mushrooms require at least a thousand years to mature, making them very rare outside of nature. However, more importantly, using the fireseed spirit mushroom again and again has its limits...”

“Limits?” Bai Yunfei asked. This was the very first time he had heard of such a thing.

## Chapter 352: Unexpected Guests

---

“Yes. Dissolving your essence fireseed, and then trying to form another essence fireseed is almost impossible. You’ve experienced how it feels to fail making one, so you should understand how difficult it is. Using the fireseed spirit mushroom does indeed make it easier to form one, but... it won’t always be ‘easier.’ The more you use the fireseed spirit mushroom, the less of an effect it has. You can use it at most three times before the fourth results with practically nothing...”

“More and more difficult? But master, when I used the fireseed spirit mushroom back in Mo City, I didn’t have any troubles at all. Why is that?”

“Well, that’s why I was so shocked at first, but if I think about it, I’d wager that your earlier failures when you attempted to form an essence fireseed helped when you ate the fireseed spirit mushroom. All of the medicines you used to help gather elemental fire must’ve had a lingering effect on your body, and since your first essence fireseed hasn’t truly dissolved, the formation of a second essence fireseed was most likely easier because of those factors.”

“I understand now.” Bai Yunfei replied, but what Zi Jin said before was still bothering him, “But even just using the mushroom three times means...”

“Yes, just three times, including when we first form the essence fireseed, which means we of the Crafting School can forge four soulbound armaments! In the history of our school, a predecessor once tried to do this. He managed to obtain three different fireseed spirit mushrooms, and on several different occasions, he took several normal soulbound armaments and turned one of them into a lifebound armament!!

“Yet, this same predecessor wasn’t by any means a genius. In the

end... he was stuck as a late-stage Soul Exalt. He was never able to become a Soul King!”

“Why is that? Was it because of the...”

“Correct. It was because of the side effects of the fireseed spirit mushroom! In a way, each fireseed spirit mushroom uses up the hidden potential of the eater’s body!” Zi Jin exclaimed. “That is why we cannot use the method you’re talking about... several of our predecessors paid a heavy price so that we of the later generations could learn of their experience and listen to their warnings...”

Concern started to grow within Bai Yunfei’s mind as he listened to Zi Jin. Worried, he asked, “Master, I once used a fireseed spirit mushroom to become a Soul Sprite. Now that I’ve used it again, wouldn’t that mean I...”

Zi Jin smiled to comfort him. “Haha, don’t worry. The situation I described just now is different than your own situation. When you formed your second fireseed spirit mushroom, your first one still hadn’t been dissolved, correct? And since you have two essence fireseeds, you can learn the Dual Flame Arts, so you don’t have to worry about your future potential. When you grow stronger, you’ll understand...”

“Phew...” Bai Yunfei sighed in relief. Now that all of his concerns had been addressed and dealt with, he stood up to bow to his master. “Your student understands now, master. Your student asks for permission to leave.”

“Good, you may leave.”

Turning around, Bai Yunfei took two steps toward the door before Zi Jin spoke again, “Ah, Yunfei...”

Bai Yunfei turned around. “Is there something master wants?”

For once, a slight hint of embarrassment could be seen on his master’s face. “Ah, Yunfei. That record you gave Hai Dongqing...”

“Eh?” Bai Yunfei quickly realized what his master was trying to get at after not understanding the question at first.

With a twist of his hand, a gray scroll appeared. Presenting it to his master, Bai Yunfei said, “If not for master’s reminder, your student would’ve forgotten. I have a copy of the scroll I was planning to give to master in hopes that it’d help master with his studies...”

Smiling as he took the scroll, Zi Jin nodded. He was pleased. “Haha, very good. You may go and rest up, then.”

It was only when Bai Yunfei was back in the comfort of his own room that he started to wipe away the hidden drops of sweat.

“It’s a good thing I prepared myself earlier. Today, I’ve seen a new side to the master that isn’t known to anyone.”

He was originally planning on giving the extra scroll to Tang Xinyun, but when he thought about it, her skill at the game was probably already beyond his own. Thus, it’d be a waste to give it to her...

.....

After a short rest, Bai Yunfei headed to the Northern Point to pay his respects to Kou Changkong, Xiao Binzi, and Cang Yu. Since Huangfu Nan was busy trying to forge a soul armament and Jiang Fan was on a trip, Bai Yunfei was unable to see them.

Bai Yunfei was headed back to his room when Song Lin, Li Tiechui, Ye Zhiqiu, Mo Xiaoxuan, and the others came looking for him at the Western Point.

It was already evening by the time Bai Yunfei retired to his room. By now, he was even more tired than before, so he chose to rest rather than train. Even though he was extremely excited to start learning from the scrolls he had been given, having the right mental state was equally important. He’d need to fully rest before he could start learning.

Seeing how no one came to disturb him, they must have all known that Bai Yunfei was trying to rest.

The next morning, a refreshed Bai Yunfei was now sitting on top of his bed. He was holding one of the crimson scrolls. His eyes poured over the written characters on it with great interest.

After a while, Bai Yunfei blinked. Exhaling, he looked at the scroll with renewed admiration, “What an amazing predecessor this man was... the Dual Flame Arts is many times more thorough than the Art of Firebending... dual flames... refers to when one has two fireseeds... I know I said before that I could only control one essence fireseed at a time, but who knew that this art would teach me how to use them both at the same time? It really feels like this was tailor-made for me!

“According to the records on here, training two essence fireseeds could double the rate of my training! That means I could train even faster than everyone else!” Practically giddy with excitement over what he had learned from the Dual Flame Arts, Bai Yunfei tried his best to calm down.

“But...” He sighed, “It’s extremely complicated! I wonder when I’ll ever be able to understand it all. I guess I’ll do as master says and focus on this the most!”

Now that his mind was made up, Bai Yunfei began to read over the scroll again with his soulsense. He read each and every character with extreme concentration.

“Knock knock knock.”

Several knocks interrupted Bai Yunfei’s study not long after he started. Bai Yunfei’s eyes narrowed, “Who is it?”

“Senior uncle Bai, it’s me, Si Kongxian.”

It was Bai Yunfei’s next door neighbor.

“Oh, little Xian? Hold on a second.” Rising from his bed, Bai Yunfei crossed the room. He opened the door to look at Si

Kongxian on the other side, “What is it?”

“Haha, senior uncle Bai, excuse me for interrupting your training.” Si Kongxian smiled apologetically, “but there’s a visitor asking to meet with you. He says he’s a friend of yours, so I thought I should...”

“A friend is looking for me?” Bai Yunfei asked.

“Yes, he’s a visitor that came a little while ago. He says he knows you. Do you want to go see him?”

“Where is he?”

“Right outside the outer dormitories.”

“Alright, I’ll go take a look. Thanks for telling me.”

.....

Bai Yunfei made his way to the outer dormitories. He stopped in his tracks when he saw who it was.

“It was you?”

“Haha, so we meet again, brother Bai...” The person nodded at Bai Yunfei with a smile...

It was the person who had met with him once before at the auction house—Mo Ni!!

The very same Mo Ni who had secretly orchestrated the kidnapping of Tang Xinyun!



## Chapter 353: Meeting Mo Ni Again

---

Bai Yunfei was surprised Since he hadn't expected his visitor to be Mo Ni of all people. Managing to disguise his shock by cupping his hands and bowing, Bai Yunfei greeted the other man, "Ah, so it was brother Mo, what brings you here...?"

Mo Ni smiled, "I've always admired the glorious Crafting School, so when it came time to journey the world, I decided to visit here. I had hoped that I'd be able to request a soul armament if I brought some of my more precious treasures. The esteemed elders have already agreed to my request, so I'll be waiting here until elder Huangfu Nan finishes making one."

"Oh, so elder Huangfu Nan is making a soul armament for you." Bai Yunfei replied in realization. "I heard that someone offered enough materials to make five high-earth tier soul armaments, but I didn't realize that it was you..."

"Haha, if I require the assistance of another, it's only logical that I uphold my end of the deal. It's really unfortunate that the materials needed for a heaven tier soul armament are many. I had to compromise for a high-earth tier soul armament instead." Mo Ni shook his head with a sigh.

"Brother Bai, I really didn't expect to see that you, the one who caused such a ruckus back in Mo City, would be a student of the Crafting School, let alone an esteemed disciple of the old headmaster Zi Jin... when I came across the truth just a few days ago, brother Lin and I were incredibly shocked... brother Bai—ah, perhaps I should be calling you senior uncle Bai?"

"Very humorous, brother Mo, since when should I be referred to as such? Just refer to me like someone else from the same generation." Bai Yunfei waved his hand.

"Brother Lin'? Did you come with someone else, brother Mo? Would it be..."

“Correct, I came with Lin Dongxiao. He has some business with the Crafting School.”

“The junior headmaster of the Beast Taming School, Lin Dongxiao?” Bai Yunfei asked for clarification. “What’s he here for?”

“Brother Bai, do you dislike the Beast Taming School?” Mo Ni asked when he saw the look on Bai Yunfei’s face, “Was it because of what happened in Curopia City?”

“You know about it?”

“Haha, only a little. Actually, that’s the reason why Lin Dongxiao is here today. He’s here to make a formal apology...”

“Apology?”

“That’s right. You might not know it, brother Bai, so let me explain the situation to you. The Beast Taming School had something to do with the house of Xiao in Curopia City. But those people were traitors to the school, so the Beast Taming School didn’t know about their actions. After investigations were made, the school was able to root out the rest of the rebelling members. Those members were actually rebels from three years ago who did evil on pretense of being from the Beast Taming School. They were even colluding with the evil Spirit Refining School. Despite their investigations, the Beast Taming School was unable to stop things in time before your Crafting School was involved. That’s why Lin Dongxiao is here today, to offer an apology in hopes that there won’t be any unpleasantries between the two schools...”

Bai Yunfei listened to the ‘explanation’ with a nod of his head in understanding, but his mind was thinking the exact opposite. “Can it really be that simple? Is that even possible? The Beast Taming School can claim these actions were made by ‘traitors,’ but that’s far too convenient and takes them out of the equation. To save the king, you sacrifice the rook. That’s exactly the situation right now...”

Mo Ni smiled when he noticed that Bai Yunfei didn't seem to want to continue talking about the Beast Taming School any more. "Brother Bai, your heroic antics of saving miss Tang that day in Mo City were made known to everyone." He changed the subject, "I heard that you managed to kill the 'Stone Asura' Ta Shan before saving Tang Xinyun. He was a horrible, but strong Soul Exalt. If you were able to kill him, does that mean you're a Soul Exalt as well? It's no wonder you're the disciple of senior Zi Jin then..."

"Haha, you give me too much credit, brother Mo. I'm nowhere as strong as you think I am. It was only a fluke that I was able to kill Ta Shan." Bai Yunfei modestly replied, "I'm nowhere near as strong as you, brother Mo. You're already a Soul Exalt. I can't help but admire your talent."

"What is there to admire? I heard that you're only twenty years old. I'm older than you by a good ten years, but when I was your age, I wasn't strong enough to kill a Soul Exalt like you are..."

Becoming a Soul Exalt by the age of thirty was talented enough to be regarded as a genius who could stand shoulder to shoulder with Jiang Fan.

The two talked for a while longer before Mo Ni had to finally leave. He promised that he'd go sightseeing with Lin Dongxiao below Mt. Crimson. He invited Bai Yunfei to go with them, but Bai Yunfei declined, saying that he still had some training to do.

Mo Ni's coming was a mystery to Bai Yunfei, but he didn't care enough to really think about it any longer. If the Beast Taming School was trying something, then senior Kou Changkong would deal with it appropriately. Whatever goal or sinister plot the Beast Taming School was planning, Bai Yunfei was sure that the elders would deal with it the way they knew best.

They had after all thought more about the situation than he did, so Bai Yunfei didn't need to blindly worry about it.

After returning to his room, Bai Yunfei continued to train once

more...

.....

Two days later, in the morning—

About a kilometer away from the Western Point dormitories on a patch of grass—

Though winter was already approaching, it was still quite warm and summerlike on Mt. Crimson. This was extremely apparent with how many trees had leaves sticking stubbornly to their branches. The only hint was the withering grass, but there was still many tufts of grass that retained their lush-green color as a final sign of resistance.

Bai Yunfei lay on a slope with his head resting on his hands. A shabby strawhat lay on top of his face, protecting his eyes from the sharp sunlight.

He looked as though he was asleep.

After two days of constantly studying the Dual Flame Arts, Bai Yunfei was thoroughly unsatisfied with how little progress he was making.

He was starting to get impatient, so he decided to take a break today and try to loosen up before attempting again.

As he lay there, Bai Yunfei couldn't help but think more about the Dual Flame Arts—more specifically—one of the questions he had.

As his mind wandered off, Bai Yunfei felt the strawhat on his face get pulled away by someone, causing sunlight to sprinkle onto his unprotected face. Meanwhile, an aromatic fragrance wafted into his nose.

Noticing the two changes, Bai Yunfei looked up to where someone was stooping over him with a hand on his strawhat. A smile could be seen as well as long hair that drifted in the wind.

“Oh? Xinyun, what brings you here?” Bai Yunfei sat up to ask.

Smiling as she sat down next to him, Tang Xinyun replied, “I came here to see you, Yunfei. What were you thinking about? You were so distracted you didn’t even noticed me get close.”

“Oh, haha, I really didn’t. Was just thinking about a few problems I have run into while training, that’s all.” Bai Yunfei smiled.

Noticing that something was missing when he looked around, Bai Yunfei asked, “Where’s Doraemon? She didn’t come with you?”

Like a tail, the girl known as Huangfu Rui was always behind Tang Xinyun.

However, she wasn’t here this time.

“She’s playing with Tingting. They get along just as well as she does with me, and they’re basically stuck together like candy since it’s been awhile since they were last together. Little Rui wants to learn the art of hydrotherapy as well it seems...”

“A fire-type soul cultivator trying to learn hydrotherapy? What a silly thought...”

“Haha, maybe. Little Rui is still like a child. Just yesterday, she was trying to form an essence waterseed, but when it failed, master immediately started to scold her attempting...”

Tang Xinyun looked a little lost when it came to trying to deal with Huangfu Rui, but still, a smile could always be seen on her face.

“...” A drop of sweat rolled down Bai Yunfei’s forehead.

“How silly Doraemon is...”

# Chapter 354: When All Worries Melt Away

---

With her hands now resting on her knees, Tang Xinyun turned to look at Bai Yunfei, “Yunfei, how are... your two essence fireseeds? Did senior Zi Jin say anything about them?”

“Ah, there’s no problems, so don’t worry about them.” Bai Yunfei replied.

“Master even said that this was an extremely fortunate stroke of luck for me!”

“Really?” Tang Xinyun asked with delight.

“Haha, really.” Bai Yunfei nodded. “The questions I have been thinking about arose from the training method master gave me. He said it was meant for people with two essence fireseeds, and it is extremely strong. I’ve been studying it for two days now, but all I got was a headache... that’s why I’m out here taking a break...”

“I see now...” Tang Xinyun nodded in understanding, “Don’t you worry, the amazing techniques are always harder to learn. Just take it easy and you’ll understand it soon enough.”

“Yeah, that’s what I was thinking. I have to learn to walk before I can start running. If there’s several thousand characters to read, then I’ll just have to understand each individual one to get the big picture.”

He chose to avoid the fact that he was extremely impatient to learn the skills, so he chose instead to look at Tang Xinyun’s face, “What about you? Any problems since you regained your essence fireseed? How’s the third elder taking it?”

“There’s nothing to worry about!” Tang Xinyun smiled, “Master has already looked me over and said that everything looks fine like before. There shouldn’t be any hindrances to my training either, and after all those medicines father gave me, master said that my potential growth has grown as well. I should be able to train

extremely well in the future.”

“Really? That’s amazing!”

Bai Yunfei was glad to hear that. At last, he could finally stop feeling guilty about Tang Xinyun’s sacrifice back in Curopia City.

Bai Yunfei could feel happy about something else as well. When Tang Xinyun mentioned her father, it was no longer with an emotionless and detached tone like before.

Their last trip home and the change in the Tang helped Tang Xinyun feel better about her family.

Watching as the clouds in the sky floated by, Tang Xinyun chose then to mention something, “Oh, have you heard, Yunfei? The junior headmaster of the Beast Taming School and the one who had bid for the fireseed spirit mushroom against you in the auction house, Mo... something... they’re here in the Crafting School.”

Unable to stop himself from chuckling at her attempt to remember Mo Ni’s name, Bai Yunfei smiled, “Haha, it’s Mo Ni. I know already. He came to see me two days ago.”

“Oh? What did he want?”

“I don’t really know. He just said a few things to me.” Bai Yunfei shook his head in confusion, “But... he might look like a decent person or someone who treats others fairly, yet I can’t help but have my doubts about him. I feel like he was testing me, but I don’t know why...”

“Really? I heard one of my seniors say that he’s from one of the isolated clans in the Western Frontier Province, one of the stronger ones too... if he’s friendly with the Beast Taming School, then it stands to reason that the Beast Taming School...”

“Hah... I don’t like the Beast Taming School.” Bai Yunfei continued, “I heard that Lin Dongxiao is here as a representative of his school to apologize for what happened in Curopia City. They’ve some sort of excuse, saying that the tamers we killed were some

traitors they had expelled a few years ago. I wonder if that excuse will be accepted...”

“Is it an excuse? I think I heard master mention before that they had found clues in Curopia City proving that those tamers had been expelled from the Beast Taming School three years ago. Something major happened three years ago, causing one of the elders to defect. It was major news at the time, and a decent part of the Beast Taming School rebelled because of that elder. A lot of them were driven out, but not before a lot of damage was done.”

“What? Is that true?”

The words Song Lin had spoken to Bai Yunfei started to resurface in his mind.

Indeed, Song Lin had once said something about an accident taking place in the Beast Taming School three years ago. It connected with what Tang Xinyun had said, making Bai Yunfei having to think for a bit. “If things are like what that Lin Dongxiao said, then those beast tamers we killed really were traitors to the school. So that means they aren’t connected to the school then?”

“I... don’t really know, but the headmaster has already accepted the Beast Taming School’s apologies. He agreed to not hold them accountable, and they’ve agreed to hold an open investigation together too.”

“Oh, so senior Kou has already reached a decision?” He was surprised. “Ugh, whatever then. Let’s talk about something else. How do you feel about going to Redfire City in a few days to have a look around?”

“In Redfire City?”

“Yeah, it’s been awhile since we went there. Let’s have Zhiqiu, Xiaoxuan, and the others join us. Since Fei Nian likes Sima Yue, I know he’ll agree to come. It’ll be fun if we all go together. We haven’t done anything like as one group since before we left for



Curopia City.”

Tang Xinyun nodded her head, “Sounds good to me.”

“I remember Sima Dong once telling me about a materials store in the south-western part of the city. We should go over there and take a look while we’re at it...”

.....

Conversation continued between the two after that. Now that there wasn’t anything to be concerned about, and Bai Yunfei’s attempts to make Tang Xinyun laugh worked. He was able to hear a giggle from her every so often.

Time quickly passed by as they laughed, and before either of the two knew it, it was already noon. Looking up at the sky, Tang Xinyun stood up, “Well, Yunfei, I have to go back now...”

“Alright, let me walk you back.”

She didn’t refuse his invitation. She only nodded before walking to the path first.

Before she could get far, Bai Yunfei pointed at the hat Tang Xinyun was still holding, “Eer... my hat, Xinyun...?”

“Haha, this thing?” She shook the strawhat with a smile, “Let me hold onto it for now, I’ll give it back to you in a bit.”

“Uh...” Though a little mystified by such a request, Bai Yunfei acquiesced it to her. Choosing not to say anything, he moved to catch up to Tang Xinyun and started to walk side by side with her.

Soon enough, the two of them reached the spot where the Western Point met with the Main Point. As they were about to cross to the path that lead to the Eastern Point, the two saw a group of people running over from the Southern Point.

When Bai Yunfei looked closer, he could see Mo Xiaoxuan leading the group.

“Xiaoxuan!” He called out.

“Brother Bai, cousin Tang!” Stopping where he was for a brief second, Mo Xiaoxuan hurriedly started toward them with renewed speed, “What are you two doing here?” He asked.

“I was bringing Xinyun back. Why are you all in such a hurry?”

Mo Xiaoxuan glanced at the two people with him before turning back to Bai Yunfei to say, “I was on my way down to receive the guests in the outer dormitories.”

“We’ve guests?”

“Yeah, a small school came this morning asking for some soul armaments. Senior Tiechui received them in the Southern Point to discuss some business, but since it’s noon, he asked me to prepare some food and shelter for the school.”

“Oh, so they’re here for soul armaments.” Bai Yunfei remarked. These type of requests were pretty common between the smaller schools and clans. Naturally, the elders of the Crafting School would not see to all guests, so the smaller schools and clans were often met with seniors, such as Li Tiechui, who would see to their requests and accept their materials. The materials made in return weren’t very high in quality. They were mid-earth at most, and of course, it was Li Tiechui that usually saw to everything.

Now that he knew it was a small school here as a guest, Bai Yunfei lost interest in the affair, “Where is the school from?”

Bai Yunfei didn’t really care who they were, but when Mo Xiaoxuan answered him, he fell into a stupor.

“Where they’re from? I think I heard them say they’re from far away, the Azure Cloud Province...” Mo Xiaoxuan scratched his head, “Their school was called the er... the Gla... Glac...

“Oh! Right, the Glacial School!!”

# Chapter 355: A Meeting of Foes

---

“The Glacial School!!”

The expression on Bai Yunfei’s face grew rigid at the very mention of that school. For a moment, Bai Yunfei did nothing but stare off into the distance.

Bai Yunfei then latched onto Mo Xiaoxuan’s shoulders and asked him in a slightly louder voice than normal, “What school did you say was here!?”

“The... the Glacial School? Brother Bai, what’s wrong?” Frightened nearly out of his skin, Mo Xiaoxuan could hardly respond coherently.

Even Tang Xinyun was surprised that Bai Yunfei would experience such a major reaction. Tugging at his robes, she asked, “Yunfei, what’s wrong?”

Realizing where he was, Bai Yunfei immediately let go of Mo Xiaoxuan’s shoulder apologetically, “Sorry about that, I let my emotions get the best of me...”

“It’s fine, there’s no need for brother Bai to apologize,” Grimacing when he touched his pained shoulders, Mo Xiaoxuan asked, “Hss... brother Bai, you’re really strong you know... but what’s going on? Why did you get so excited at the name of that school? Do you know them or something?”

Like Mo Xiaoxuan, Tang Xinyun stared anxiously at Bai Yunfei, waiting for an answer.

Bai Yunfei nodded and stayed silent for a moment as he thought of what to say. He sighed before starting to talk, “Yeah, I don’t know why I didn’t tell you before, but I’m from the Azure Cloud Province. Back then... I experienced a scuffle with the Glacial School where they tried to kill me...”

“What!?” Mo Xiaoxuan angrily roared, “The Glacial School dared

to do such a thing!? I'll notify senior Tiechui at once and drive them from the school! No! That'd be too easy! I'll make sure our seniors teach them a lesson!"

After turning to run back to Li Tiechui, Mo Xiaoxuan found himself immediately stopped by Bai Yunfei.

"Brother Bai, why are you stopping me?" He asked.

"Oh! I get it, you want to be the one to teach them a lesson! Okay! You're super strong after all. You could beat them all and still have enough energy to spare, I'll lead you to them! It's time for revenge! Even if you killed them all, I'm sure the headmaster and the others would be more than happy to allow it!"

"Hold on, Xiaoxuan, don't be too hasty." Bai Yunfei shook his head. "Forget about it..."

"What?" Mo Xiaoxuan couldn't believe his ears, "Brother Bai, what are you saying!? What do you mean forget about it? Didn't you say they tried to kill you? How could you say 'forget about it' then!?"

"The past is the past, I don't want to bother myself with it anymore..." Bai Yunfei smiled, "Besides, they're here to pay our school a visit. Brother Li received them and it'd only hurt our reputation if I caused trouble in the school. I can't allow my personal grudges affect the name of our Crafting School."

It was true that Bai Yunfei felt a strong urge to rush over to where the Glacial School was when he heard that name. Furthermore, he was also feeling the urge to do what Mo Xiaoxuan had said: to beat and maybe even kill a few of them to satisfy his revenge.

When he calmed down, that line of thinking was sealed back into his mind. He wasn't an ignorant child of the world anymore. This was the Crafting School he was living in. The Glacial School were the guests. If a guest were to be attacked here rather than be

treated well, wouldn't that sully the name of the Crafting School?

Even if the elders were to allow him to kill the ones from the Glacial School here, he wouldn't want to do it.. He didn't want to take advantage of their kindness and repay them with a dirty reputation.

In fact, his grudge wasn't even with the Glacial School. It was with the Zhang. Not to mention it wasn't in his nature to want to kill the entire Glacial School.

Should he come across them elsewhere, well, there was interest that needed to be collected.

"Yunfei, what are you going to do?" Nervous of his silence, Tang Xinyun asked to hear his answer.

When he turned around to answer, a gentle smile greeted his gaze; it almost looked as though she would support him and any choice he made.

"Haha, it's nothing, let's get going, Xinyun." Bai Yunfei smiled. "Xiaoxuan, try not to think about this. Hurry and do what you need to do."

"Are you really going to let things go here? Brother Bai..." It looked as if there was still something Mo Xiaoxuan wanted to say, but Bai Yunfei had already turned to leave. Thus, he shut his mouth, but he wasn't convinced.

"Bai Yunfei really is far too generous."

Despite Bai Yunfei's reaction, Mo Xiaoxuan was already starting to think of a plan to take care of the Glacial School himself, to vent Bai Yunfei's anger for him.

Meanwhile, Bai Yunfei had only taken a few footsteps away from Mo Xiaoxuan when he noticed something strange. Stopping in place, he turned to face the rightmost part of the Southern Point.

Four figures could be seen walking toward him from several

hundred meters away. Out of the four, one of them was Li Tiechui. On his immediate right were two people. One was a young man perhaps twenty-seven years old. He wasn't someone Bai Yunfei recognized, but he knew who the other person was; the headmaster of the Glacial School, Yu Fei!!

The middle-aged man on Li Tiechui's left was... Zhang Zhenshan!!

When the four saw him, both Yu Fei and Zhang Zhenshan immediately went stiff. They became slackjawed. Li Tiechui and the other young man with him on the other hand, stopped to give the two men questioning looks.

Before Li Tiechui could even ask what was wrong, Zhang Zhenshan's body started to dangerously shiver. His eyes were glaring daggers at his most hated enemy, and his lips curled into a malevolent snarl.

Under Li Tiechui's startled eyes, an explosion of soulforce materialized from Zhang Zhenshan's body before he pounced straight for Bai Yunfei like a tiger attacking its prey!

“Bai! Yun! Fei!!!”

One by one, the words roared from Zhang Zhenshan's lips were practically dripping with the hatred the man felt for Bai Yunfei. The aura around his body was growing thicker by the second, and icicles were already starting to formulate around his right palm where a layer of frost had formed.

The distance dividing the two foes was traversed in practically moments. Zhang Zhenshan hadn't even finished pronouncing Bai Yunfei's name when he was nearly on top of Bai Yunfei. Up in the air now, his right palm extended out. He was prepared to crash down on Bai Yunfei's head with the power of ice!

The Glacial Palm!!

The utter suddenness had caught everyone off guard, even Bai

Yunfei was at a loss for words.

He was still the first one there to regain his bearings. Narrowing his eyes when the Glacial Palm drew close, he lashed out with a punch of his own, right as the palm was about to connect with him!

“Pow!!”

A halo of red light danced to life with the flurry of frost when the two hands made contact. Bai Yunfei’s right leg was pushed back just half a step while Zhang Zhenshan was sent unceremoniously flying ten meters back.

“Stop!!”

A voice called out; there was a blur as someone appeared in between Bai Yunfei and Zhang Zhenshan. Li Tiechui stared ominously at Zhang Zhenshan who was still glaring daggers at Bai Yunfei, “Zhang Zhenshan, what is the meaning of this?”

“Zhang Zhenshan, stop!!” At the same time, Yu Fei managed to finally call out to him to stop.

Their words fell on deaf ears. Zhang Zhenshan looked as crazed as ever as he stared at his most hated enemy with bloodshot eyes.

Rather than pull back his aura, Zhang Zhenshan pushed off against the ground so that he could get around Li Tiechui and go straight for Bai Yunfei!!

“Hmph!” Since his warning had been ignored, Li Tiechui flared his soulforce and prepared to forcibly stop the man.

It was then that Li Tiechui heard the calm voice of Bai Yunfei right behind him, “Brother Li, this is a personal enemy of mine. If you could please refrain from doing anything here.”

“What?” He turned his head behind to look at Bai Yunfei.

His distraction was taken advantage of by Zhang Zhenshan. Maneuvering around him, Zhang Zhenshan was now in front of

Bai Yunfei. The back of his right hand had a blade of ice about three meters tall stuck to it.

With a furious roar, he plunged it toward Bai Yunfei's chest.

“Bai Yunfei! Give me back my son's life!!”



# Chapter 356: Anger From A Son's Death

---

Zhang Zhenshan was the head of the house of Zhang in Talus City of the Azure Cloud Province and also one of the elders of the Glacial School.

Thee Zhang were a small family that only the denizens of Talus City feared and respected. While the Glacial School was a small school, the entire Azure Cloud Province was their stomping grounds.

From Zhang Zhenshan's perspective, he wasn't a man that had frittered away his life. He didn't seek fame to move the world, rather he wanted to secure enough power for himself. He had worked hard to establish himself and his family, and though his son was a little immature, he was still his darling little child, imperfect as he may be.

Compared to the life span of the average commoner, a soul cultivator had a vastly longer lifespan, so he allowed his son to dilly-dally for the first twenty-something years of his life. Zhang Zhenshan may look very strict at first, but he had very high expectations of his child. He was only waiting for his son to mature enough before he'd accept him as the next generation head of the household.

The tyrannical acts of despotism and bullying of the weak in Talus City went completely ignored by Zhang Zhenshan. To soul cultivators, the lives of the commoners were like ants, and men like him wouldn't care about them. Perhaps it was due to his perspective of these commoners that his son, Zhang Yang, grew to become such a person.

Many of the atrocities committed by Zhang Yang were usually taken care of by the Zhang, but if they couldn't cover it up, Zhang Zhenshan would use the Glacial School to smooth over the matter.

An arranged marriage between his son and Liu Cheng's daughter

of the Glacial School was even proposed in hopes that the Zhang would be able to grow even more.

Everything was going according to plan, and everything was moving like Zhang Zhenshan had hoped...

Until one day, a person named Bai Yunfei appeared.

It all happened when he was away, dealing with the bandit group the Glacial School was secretly backing. A mysterious power had somehow eliminated the group, forcing Zhang Zhenshan to temporarily leave the city to deal with the aftermath.

By the time he had returned, news of his son's death had quickly reached his ears.

His one and only son! Dead!

The one responsible was Bai Yunfei!!

Making use of every single resource available to him, Zhang Zhenshan sought his son's killer at once. From Talus City to the far away Old Well Town, Zhang Zhenshan hadn't slept for a wink during those three days and nights!

He ultimately caught up to the one responsible, only to find out it was a middle-stage Soul Warrior whelping.

Yet, the very same whelping managed to escape his grasp!

An oddity was realized during that same battle. He noticed the soul armaments Bai Yunfei was using was awfully strange, the Glacial Pricker was noticeably different before.

Connecting two and two, Zhang Zhenshan came to the conclusion that Bai Yunfei wasn't from the Crafting School, but he had some sort of special technique to strengthen soul armaments.

If the Glacial School could obtain that technique, their power would explode exponentially! So for the sake of capitalizing on this chance, he ordered the entire Glacial School to search for Bai Yunfei.

The trail of clues left behind by Bai Yunfei finally pointed Zhang Zhenshan to Jadewillow City. Unwilling to let others know of the secret he knew, Zhang Zhenshan leaped on a horse and headed to the city straight away. He was patient.

He was patient enough to follow Liu Cheng's plan of forcing the secret out of Bai Yunfei before completely dismembering him from limb to limb...

But even that plan had lead to nothing but failure! A failure, nothing but a failure, though not something he cared all too much about.

In fact, he was a little glad it failed.

This meant he didn't have to wait anymore. With several high-ranking members of the Glacial School, he was able to trap Bai Yunfei in Jadewillow City where he was able to issue a duel in seven days.

Again, he waited for those seven days to pass, all for the sake of experiencing the day of taking revenge on the killer of his son.

But...

The victory that was surely meant to be given to him turned into a defeat!!

The killer of his son was very clearly right in front of him, but he had no way of taking revenge for his son. He had lost!!

Ever since then, his entire world had come crashing down one piece after another like the domino effect. Bereaved by the death of her son, Zhang Zhenshan's wife became ill and bedridden. His business, left unattended to due to his reallocation of priorities, wilted like grass without water. His attempt to gain power to the Glacial School, failed. His authority was usurped by Liu Cheng.

He was now an elder only in name.

The fact that he might never see the killer of his son weighed

heavily on his mind. He knew it was implausible and that it'd be best to move on...

But he couldn't.

The hatred in him refused to budge.

It festered in his mind, fermenting and compressing in on itself more and more each passing day. If nothing was done about it, this hatred would've consumed him to his death.

It was still possible that if one day—just one day—he met his son's killer, that hatred in him would break loose.

Only madness would ensue.

When he saw Bai Yunfei, the utter hatred he had felt had finally reached the breaking point.

.....

“Bai Yunfei! Give me back my son's life!!”

He was like a feral beast now. His hands were radiating a chilling aura as he plunged a bladed fist toward Bai Yunfei's chest!

Though more powerful than the first strike, Bai Yunfei still didn't house any thoughts of dodging.

A chilling glare was exuded from his eyes as he lifted his right hand up to grab ahold of the blade!

“Crack!”

Caught in the middle of the Ardent Sun Glove Bai Yunfei was wearing, the icy blade was shattered apart, as if it had been made from flimsy ice. With Bai Yunfei's death grip on Zhang Zhenshan's hand, the other man wasn't able to move even an inch!

“Do you still think I'm the same weakling you tried to kill before!?” Bai Yunfei snorted.

With a toss of his arm, he threw Zhang Zhenshan back ten meters.

Tossed through the air, Zhang Zhenshan managed to flip onto his feet. He stood still for a brief second as he roared.

“You’ll pay for my son’s death... you’ll pay for this!!!  
Aaaahhhhhh!!!!”

With even more flourish than before, he flew forward to attack Bai Yunfei again.

“Give me my son back!!” It seemed like these words were the only words Zhang Zhenshan was capable of saying. Each time he ran forward, he was sent flying back.

Still he persisted!

“Pow!”

“Pow!!”

“Pow!!!”

The pain Zhang Zhenshan had endured when he had lost his son was so much that he had lost any sense of rationality now that Bai Yunfei was in front of him. He was sent back once again, yet he attacked again, unable of doing anything else. The only thing that registered in his mind was Bai Yunfei and Bai Yunfei alone.

Like his eyes, his mind had only one thing in it; the dismemberment and death of the one who had killed his son!

With all semblance of rationality stripped away from his mind, Zhang Zhenshan wasn’t at all capable of realizing the difference in strength between him and Bai Yunfei.

He also couldn’t tell that Bai Yunfei’s glare was becoming more dagger-like after blocking and sending him back a dozen times now.

“I didn’t want to deal with you while on school grounds, but you leave me no choice!”

“You keep telling me to bring your son back, but a life is a life; doesn’t the life of anyone else count, or are they just grass to you!?”

Was uncle Wu's life not a life, or his grand daughter? What about my own!?"

At last, an inkling of killing intent could finally be felt from Bai Yunfei's eyes.

On the verge of Zhang Zhenshan's next attack, which was aimed at Bai Yunfei's right shoulder, Bai Yunfei deflected the blow and sent him back. This time, Bai Yunfei's hand held the Fire-tipped Spear as he swiftly moved in to strike Zhang Zhenshan!

When the spear made contact, a mouthful of blood escaped from Zhang Zhenshan. Having been unable to dodge while in the air, he crashed back onto the ground.

This time, he didn't get back up.

Still, Bai Yunfei didn't let up. Already on top of his enemy, Bai Yunfei primed the spear with a bone-chilling glare.

Then his spear plunged down.

A stab straight for the throat!!

# Chapter 357: Expulsion

---

Bai Yunfei really didn't want to cause trouble while on school grounds. Having known that trouble would break out if they were to meet, Bai Yunfei had been determined to avoid the Glacial School during their visit, so he could avoid tarnishing the Crafting School's name and reputation.

If Zhang Zhenshan was the first to strike without at all letting up, then Bai Yunfei would by all means spare no feelings while dealing with him!

"You're taking revenge for your son. You've gone mad for your son, and now you want your son back? Where do you get off being a paragon of virtue!? How hilarious!! Zhang Yang was your only son, sure, but what about the ones he killed? Didn't they have family too!? I was dragged into the Coliseum for no reason at all. Where is the fairness in that!?"

"Your son deserved to die!!"

The utter madness behind Zhang Zhenshan's barrage had finally whittled away at Bai Yunfei's patience. Like the spark to a fuse, Bai Yunfei couldn't hold his anger back any longer. After an unceremonious blow that sent Zhang Zhenshan back, Bai Yunfei followed up with a throat strike with his Fire-tipped Spear!

"Sure, by killing your son, we've become eternal enemies, but if you're going to go crazy... just die then!"

"Yunfei, stop!!"

Just before the Fire-tipped Spear was past the point of no return, someone's voice suddenly shouted at him.

Simultaneously, a mysterious power pulled at his spear, causing it to slip from its intended path.

"Tzzk!!"

Rather than into Zhang Zhenshan's throat as intended, the spear was deposited into the ground next to the man. Having turned red-hot at the tip due to Bai Yunfei's soulforce, the temperature the spear was giving off started to burn Zhang Zhenshan's nearby strands of hair.

Having nearly died by the hands of Bai Yunfei, Zhang Zhenshan's body froze. His lost rationality was coming back to him now, giving him enough brainpower to look up at Bai Yunfei in a daze.

The light in Bai Yunfei's eyes slightly flickered when he realized who had spoken to him. After making the Fire-tipped Spear vanish, Bai Yunfei turned to greet Kou Changkong with a bow, "Senior brother..."

"Yunfei, what happened here?" A confused look was on Kou Changkong's face. Just a few minutes ago, he was in the Main Point taking care of some internal matters when several students started to report to him that Bai Yunfei was in the middle of some trouble.

Putting aside whatever he was doing at the time, he flew straight to where Bai Yunfei was just in time to see Bai Yunfei about to put a spear through the person on the ground.

Whatever the reason Bai Yunfei had for his actions, Kou Changkong was still the presiding headmaster of the Crafting School. He saw fit to interfere in the matter before it was too late.

"Headmaster." Li Tiechui bowed to the headmaster before relaying what he had seen to him.

"The Glacial School from the Azure Cloud Province?" Kou Changkong repeated with some surprise.

Back when they were accepting new students, the Crafting School had investigated each individual to avoid accepting any spies or untrustworthy individuals.

Bai Yunfei's background had been made known to Kou



Changkong.

Wasn't the Glacial School the one mentioned in the reports for having chased Bai Yunfei across the Azure Cloud Province with the intent to kill?

"That man there, is he not called Zhang Zhenshan?" Kou Changkong pointed at the one lying on the ground.

"He is indeed Zhang Zhenshan, headmaster, but how did you..."

Li Tiechui was surprised Kou Changkong knew about them. Li Tiechui had been handling the people from the Glacial School; he hadn't even made a report to the headmaster, yet Zhang Zhenshan's name was known to him already?

"I see now..." A light of realization went off in Kou Changkong's head as he pieced together the reasons behind this disturbance.

"Yunfei," he raised a head to Bai Yunfei, "how do you plan to deal with the Glacial School? This is your business, so you should decide. If you decide to kill them, I won't stop you."

Considering his position as the headmaster, Kou Changkong shouldn't be relegating the task to Bai Yunfei. Even more so when they were talking about killing a guest on their school grounds. No matter how good of reason they had for it, killing guests who came to their school for a request would still reflect badly on them. As the headmaster, he should be trying to mediate the matter with peaceful methods rather than violent ones.

Since Bai Yunfei was involved... some leeway could be given. Kou Changkong knew of the external circumstances behind this argument and the grudges the two had for each other. As things were, it was best to resolve it here and now and let Bai Yunfei be the one to do so.

This was the decision Kou Changkong had arrived at after thinking over the possibilities.

If Xiao Binzi had arrived instead, he would've just let Bai Yunfei

kill the man and be done with it, especially with how protective he was about school.

Yu Fei broke into a cold sweat when he heard Kou Changkong's words. His face was as pale as parchment. From when Zhang Zhenshan started to attack Bai Yunfei with a crazed frenzy to when Bai Yunfei beat him back with unbelievable strength to when Zhang Zhenshan was nearly killed by the same boy, Yu Fei hadn't been able to lift even a finger! Even when Zhang Zhenshan was about to be killed, he didn't dare to move!

Thus, he let out a sigh of relief when Kou Changkong arrived just in time to stop Bai Yunfei.

However, his next words led to the man sucking in his breath again!

What was just as shocking was how Bai Yunfei addressed the man.

He clearly heard Li Tiechui say that this man was the headmaster of the Crafting School, but Bai Yunfei had called such a man his... senior brother!?

"He's... he's the junior brother of the headmaster of the Crafting School!!" That was the realization Yu Fei came to. Like tidal waves, shock washed over his mind in droves as he tried to snap himself out of this delusional dream.

The person he had once pursued and tried to kill... was the junior brother of the Crafting School!

The plan he had once thought up had him trying to attack such a powerful individual!

Didn't this mean that the information they so desperately wanted to interrogate and torture from Bai Yunfei's mind was a 'secret' of the Crafting School!?

The final words Kou Changkong said was the final nail to his coffin. His mind wasn't even back to operational functionality, yet

it felt as though all of his organs were starting to fail him!

Countless of kilometers had been traveled for the sake of reaching the Crafting School. He was hoping to have a soul armament crafted for his son and to hopefully gain some power for the school.

With how things were progressing, would they end up dying here at the end of their journey??

“....”

Poised with such a challenge, Bai Yunfei could only narrow his eyes as he tried to make his choice. Kou Changkong had already given his approval, but Bai Yunfei was still hesitant to do anything.

The grudges of his past or the reputation of his school?

How should he choose?

“The Glacial School is a subsidiary of our Beast Taming School. Would it perhaps be possible to show my school some face and be merciful?”

The voice of another caused Bai Yunfei to turn around. He saw two people walking over to them.

It was the junior headmaster of the Beast Taming School, Lin Dongxiao, with his fellow companion, Mo Ni.

His sudden request made Yu Fei happy beyond belief.

The seedling of hope was starting to sprout in him.

Now that another ‘outsider’ was thrown into the equation, Bai Yunfei was beside himself now.

Killing them all would be rather difficult now, so Bai Yunfei raised his head to look at Kou Changkong, “Senior, I...”

“Die!!”

The moment he looked up, the previously motionless Zhang Zhenshan below him exploded up. With vitriol hatred in his eyes,

his hand flew like a sword to stab Bai Yunfei's throat!

His sudden movements alarmed everyone and caused a furious glint to appear in Kou Changkong's eyes. His soulforce spiked before immediately dying back down.

Bai Yunfei had already made his move.

"Hmph!" Disdain for the man was all too apparent in Bai Yunfei's snort. Any sudden movements from Zhang Zhenshan would be immediately tracked by Bai Yunfei's soulforce, making any attempts at a sneak attack was virtually pointless.

Kicking viciously, Bai Yunfei sent the man flying with a thwack. The man spit out yet another mouthful of blood.

Despite how similar this hopeless situation was to before, Zhang Zhenshan continued to try and attack Bai Yunfei with an unrelenting barrage of anger!

"Zhang Zhenshan!!"

Another furious roar.

This time, it was Yu Fei, the headmaster of the Glacial School that yelled out.

Yu Fei stared at Zhang Zhenshan fearfully, and he looked as though he was having a furious mental debate between regret and fear. Before he stopped from saying anything more, he said.

"Zhang Zhenshan! Don't drag the Glacial School past the point of no return with your personal vendettas! If you so wish to act on your vengeful desires, then I hereby announce... that you are expelled from the Glacial School!!

From henceforth, whatever you do will have nothing to do with my Glacial School! Should you die, our school will have nothing to do with it!"

# Chapter 358: Returning a Tiger to Its Mountain?

---

Yu Fei was really scared. The events that had transpired within the past few minutes were enough to almost cause him to have a mental breakdown, but he hadn't the ability to think of anything else but to protect his own life and the life of the Glacial School!

Resentment for Zhang Zhenshan was building because of those two things.

"It's all because of you. If you hadn't tried to anger this Bai Yunfei, we wouldn't be in this situation in the first place!"

His announcement astonished everyone there, even Zhang Zhenshan who was still on the ground. The man had been so startled by the announcement that the anger in his eyes bled away, replaced with disbelief.

Only Mo Ni was different from the others. The announcement caught him off guard for a second, but a smile soon reappeared on his face. He gave both Bai Yunfei and Zhang Zhenshan a good look as if he was watching a very amusing play.

"You're... expelling me from the Glacial School??" Zhang Zhenshan repeated ominously.

For a while, Zhang Zhenshan did and said nothing.

Then he broke out in laughter, "Haha! You're expelling me from the school? Fine, so be it then!! Rather than help me get revenge on my son's killer, you expel me from the school! I've worked hard for years for the school, yet it all falls apart during your one moment of fear! Are you that afraid of the Crafting School to sever your connections with me? Very well then... pftt!!"

The emotions Zhang Zhenshan was feeling were far too much for his body to take. Another mouthful of blood was expelled from his mouth, but he continued to glare and sneer with bitter

resentment.

With blood sprinkled on him, the man looked half insane.

“Sigh...”

Bai Yunfei chose then to let out a sudden sigh. Having lost any will to fight, Bai Yunfei looked at the man below him.

“You should go...”

“What??”

Another startling announcement.

Up to that point, everyone—Tang Xinyun included—had thought that Bai Yunfei wouldn’t spare the Glacial School after earning the rapport of Kou Changkong.

At the very least, Zhang Zhenshan of all people wouldn’t be forgiven.

Yet, here Bai Yunfei was, forgiving the man after a moment of thought!

It was with a surprised smile that Kou Changkong turned to look at Bai Yunfei. He knew that Bai Yunfei valued the Crafting School’s name very highly and wouldn’t do anything that might besmirch it, even if it meant letting go of his own personal grudges.

It didn’t matter if Bai Yunfei’s choice was right or wrong, Kou Changkong was proud of Bai Yunfei.

It really went to show just how much Bai Yunfei valued the school.

Like everyone else, Zhang Zhenshan couldn’t believe his ears. His eyes stared darkly at Bai Yunfei, trying to find a hint of trickery, but when there was none to be had, he sneered and struggled to his feet before making his way down the mountain.

There was no barrage of attacks or any clichéd vows of revenge. He seemed almost lost, like a person who had lost their sight and

had stumbled forward.

“Sire... sire Bai...”

Bai Yunfei heard a hesitant voice from behind when he was back at Tang Xinyun’s side.

Turning his head, he was greeted with the sight of an embarrassed Yu Fei.

“Is there something you want?” Bai Yunfei asked.

His current appearance wasn’t something Yu Fei felt very confident about. Thinking quickly about what to say, Yu Fei respectfully said, “Sire Bai... I was blind to not see Mt. Tai. I was poisoned by Zhang Zhenshan’s words and offended you. Please... please take pity on this one and take mercy on my school...”

Author Note: This is an idiom meant for its contextual meaning, disregard the fact that no ‘Mt. Tai’ exists in this world.

Those words were said after plenty of struggling, but when he saw the utterly impassive look on Bai Yunfei’s face, Yu Fei’s face fell for a moment.

Knowing that something had to be done, Yu Fei gritted his teeth and raised his right arm. With a powerful soulforce-infused palm strike, he smashed his palm into his left shoulder!

“Crack!”

Straight away, the sound of several bones being snapped could be heard to everyone as his left arm drooped uselessly by his side. This palm strike of his had destroyed the bones in his shoulder, and although it wasn’t enough to render the arm useless, it’d still take several months before it’d regain full mobility.

“Father! Why did you do that?!” The young man next to Yu Fei cried out in fright.

Raising his only arm to stop his son from trying to heal his shoulder, Yu Fei looked back to Bai Yunfei with an extremely pale

face, “This one will apologize thusly. By sire Bai’s will, please forgive my Glacial School....”

His voice was miserable to listen to, but it was rather understandable. In the Azure Cloud Province, he was the headmaster of a rather glorious school, but here he stood begging for forgiveness from a twenty-something year old.

Though miserable, there wasn’t anything else he could do.

His Glacial School was a minor school while the Crafting School was one of the top ten. Who wouldn’t know and respect them?

Studying the man’s expression for a little bit, Bai Yunfei finally turned an eye to Lin Dongxiao, “Since the junior headmaster of the Beast Taming School has already asked for lenience, let’s leave this matter as it stands. From today on, there is no ill will between your Glacial School and me.”

“Haha, my thanks for your leniency, brother Bai.” Lin Dongxiao smiled, though the thoughts in his mind were nowhere as cheerful.

“You weren’t even planning to do anything since the beginning, yet you’re pretending like you’ve just done me a huge favor. You hypocrite.”

Bai Yunfei nodded, but nothing else was said to him.

“Senior brother, since this matter is over, I’ll be going now...” Bai Yunfei said to Kou Changkong.

“Haha, very well then. I’ll take care of the rest of the matters here.” Kou Changkong nodded, “You did well, Yunfei...” he added on.

“Thank you for your praise, but since I am a crafter, how could I possibly do anything that’d harm our school’s reputation?” Bai Yunfei nodded before taking Tang Xinyun with him to the Eastern Point.

It was only after the two had left that Yu Fei was able to sigh in



relief. Bowing deeply to Kou Changkong, he said, “Headmaster Kou, this junior won’t disturb you any longer. We’ll be taking our leave then...”

He didn’t wish to stay here any longer. He wanted to leave right away and get back to the Azure Cloud Province.

Back to his Glacial School.

His own territory.

“One moment.” Before Yu Fei and his son could get far, Kou Changkong suddenly spoke to them again.

Yu Fei’s face paled again, “Headmaster Kou... is there something you need?

“Haha, don’t feel so flustered, headmaster Yu. If Yunfei says his grudge is over, then his grudge is over, and by extension, you of the Glacial School will remain our guests.

“Your school came here to request some soul armaments and we’ve already agreed to your request, so please stay a few days as you had planned. We’ll be done with your request and will send you down the mountain after that.”

“I...” Yu Fei didn’t know what to think, but all he do was relent. “Then, we shall do as you say, headmaster Kou...”

Now that the matter was dealt with and Li Tiechui was leading the Glacial School away, Kou Changkong dismissed the students gathered around the area. He then talked to Lin Dongxiao and Mo Ni. “This old man will be going now, please do as you wish now.”

“Senior Kou doesn’t need to worry about us. The two of us were just about to go on a small stroll...”

A frustrated sigh erupted from Lin Dongxiao’s lips when Kou Changkong was safely out of sight, “How fucking annoying. We came to see the fireworks, but somehow we now owe a ‘favor’ to that Bai Yunfei. He had to have done that on purpose! He even said

he was doing it since I asked... pah! What friendship, bite me!! How unlucky, let's hurry up and go back... brother Mo, what are you staring at?"

"Ah, it's nothing... haha. Brother Lin, don't feel so angry. Bai Yunfei was probably just saying whatever first came to his mind, so you don't owe him any favors. Let's wait until our soul armaments are done being crafted, then we can go back home."

Mo Ni looked away from where he was staring. He smiled at Lin Dongxiao before following him in another direction...

# Chapter 359: Hunted!

---

Within the main halls of the Crafting School, Kou Changkong sat in front of a table. In his hands was a single jade slip that he concentrated quite heavily on.

When something caught his eye, he put the jade slip down and smiled at the newcomer.

“Haha, senior uncle, what brings you here? Is something the matter?”

The person who had come in was Xiao Binzi, the first elder of the Crafting School. Narrowing his eyes in response to the smiling Kou Changkong, the man said, “Headmaster, I heard from the younglings that something happened further down the mountains and that Bai Yunfei was involved in the matter?”

“That was indeed the case.”

“And that it involved some guests from the Glacial School on our grounds?”

“Yes, Li Tiechui received them and let them stay within the outer dormitories on the Southern Point.”

“Then if my memory isn’t wrong, didn’t the Glacial School have a grudge with Bai Yunfei?”

“Indeed, there was a grudge or two.”

“Then, why are they still at our Crafting School?”

“Because Bai Yunfei has already resolved those grudges.”

“Hmph, you call that a resolution?” Xiao Binzi snorted, “The biggest transgressor, Zhang Zhenshan, was let loose. How is that a resolution? Why not kill him? He’s far too soft-hearted!!”

Knowing that Xiao Binzi was criticizing Bai Yunfei for his lack of resolve, Kou Changkong shook his head with a small smile. “Yunfei was thinking about the Crafting School when he made his

decision.”

“Hmph! He thinks too much then! What kind of negative response would our Crafting School suffer? Even if several of the Glacial School members were killed, who would say anything to us!?”

“Even if no one says a thing, there will still be many who will criticize us in the dark. Furthermore, the Glacial School is a subsidiary of the Beast Taming School, and the men from said school were there at the time.”

“Again with the Beast Taming School? Were they trying to appear righteous by helping out a weaker school? In the end, Bai Yunfei lacked the resolve. He should’ve killed them all, especially that Zhang Zhenshan! How could he let that man go? Hasn’t he heard of what happens when you return a tiger to its mountain? Zhang Zhenshan might be closer to a feral dog than a tiger, but when his jaws come snapping down on you one day, will you care what kind of animal it is? Better kill the rot before it spreads!”

Kou Changkong just had to shake his head as Xiao Binzi’s unreasonable justifications, “The way I see it, Yunfei didn’t seem like he lacked resolve at all. Like I said, he was just thinking about the reputation of our school.

“Also, I don’t quite think he’s as soft-hearted as you think...” Kou Changkong started before he grinned, “Look there, don’t you think this ‘lasting regret’ of his will soon be cleared away?”

Like Kou Changkong, Xiao Binzi noticed something going on behind him. Looking beyond the walls in that direction, he snorted, “If he was going to kill him in the end, why let him go to begin with? What a superfluous thought...”

“But if he knows to treat the wound before it festers, it’s not too late for him...”

.....

Above Mt. Crimson, a streak of green light shot to the north. It caught the eye of anyone that saw it before it disappeared into the horizon.

“Hey, wasn’t that person flying by just now brother Bai?” Mo Xiaoxuan asked from his spot on the mountain.

“Yeah, looked like him.” Xi Yan nodded in agreement next to him.

“Wasn’t he at the Western Point a while ago? What’s he doing flying that way? He’s flying quickly, did he forget to do something?”

“Who knows...”

.....

Up in the sky in the green light, Bai Yunfei stood on top of his Tempest Sword. He seemed to be concentrating on locating a hazy aura as he flew.

The reason he was flying was for no other reason but to kill Zhang Zhenshan!

Yes, Bai Yunfei might’ve let Zhang Zhenshan go while he was in Crafting School’s territory, but that didn’t mean he was lenient or merciful. He said the things he did because he didn’t want to tarnish the name of the Crafting School.

The logic behind ‘returning a tiger to its mountain’ was not lost on Bai Yunfei, and he knew the dangers associated with such an event. The hatred Zhang Zhenshan had for Bai Yunfei wasn’t something that could be easily forgotten or fixed. He’d get revenge for his son one way or another.

Hence, Bai Yunfei couldn’t allow such a threat to continue living.

This man had to die!!

The moment Zhang Zhenshan left the perimeter of the Crafting School, he’d be killed!

By doing it this way, anyone who noticed him killing Zhang Zhenshan could only say that he was a hypocrite. It'd be a personal blow to him as a person, but not to the Crafting School.

Would his actions even be called up for complaint? They shouldn't be.

Back then, Bai Yunfei said that his grudges with the Glacial School had been absolved, but not his grudges with Zhang Zhenshan.

Zhang Zhenshan already had three hours to escape Mt. Crimson; that much in itself was already a benevolent act of mercy.

Due to the difference in strength between him and Zhang Zhenshan, it was an easy matter for Bai Yunfei to leave some of his soulforce in Zhang Zhenshan's body to track him. Bai Yunfei had done it when he had first kicked the man away in the fight. It was a bit surreptitious to the eyes of everyone else, but Kou Changkong had easily seen through it. Perhaps that was why Kou Changkong had Yu Fei and the others stay behind in the Crafting School to avoid the parties from meeting with one another.

Since Zhang Zhenshan had been severely weakened by Bai Yunfei, it'd take more than a day for him to fully flush out the tracking aura and it would take him much longer to get far enough away to lose Bai Yunfei.

He wasn't even quick enough to run away, so how could he possibly beat the speed of the Tempest Sword?

Since honing in on the aura he left on Zhang Zhenshan required concentration, Bai Yunfei wasn't able to drive the Tempest Sword as fast as he could.

Consequently, it took him about an hour before he felt close enough to make a full-on pursuit of Zhang Zhenshan!

One man was trying his best to run away, the other was having a nice and easy time.

This scene seemed like it was familiar, but... the roles seemed to have been reversed.

.....

“Hmph!!”

A pained grunt echoed from under one of the trees, revealing a hurt Zhang Zhenshan. His right hand was pressed against his chest as he tried to gather his breath.

Running full speed with his wounds had exacerbated them, rendering his face white. Even now, blood would sometimes trickle out of his mouth, and his clothes were becoming tattered because of the tree branches he had passed through.

He looked like a beaten dog.

“Hssssss... Bai Yunfei... Bai Yunfeiiiiiii!!! I’m going to kill you! One day, I’m going to make you wish you were dead!!!”

With his son gone and him being humiliated to such a degree, Zhang Zhenshan’s hatred for Bai Yunfei simply couldn’t even be described with words anymore.

If Zhang Zhenshan was asked what he’d do to Bai Yunfei, he’d reply by saying he’d devour his flesh, drink his blood, and destroy his soul!

Zhang Zhenshan took another minute to rest before deciding that was enough; he didn’t want to stay in one place for too long. With the soulforce he had left, the man restarted his escape.

Just ten steps after he began again, he came to a rigid stop. He turned around with an unsightly look to his face—

Flying just overhead the forest in his direction was something extremely fast!!

In a matter of seconds, the light crashed down from the sky like a bolt of lightning, dropping on a nearby tree a hundred meters away. A single person walked out of the light to look down on

Zhang Zhenshan.

As soon as the person's figure was clear to Zhang Zhenshan, his eyes widened in bemused surprise. "I knew it." He scoffed, "You weren't letting me go at all. You let me go so that you could save the laughable honor of your Crafting School..."

"You may think upholding the Crafting School's name might be laughable, but it's ultimately important to me..." Bai Yunfei replied impassively, "Why would I let you go? You didn't let me go, so it's natural that I'd do the same to you. Today, you'll be killed by me, tit for tat.

"But talking's pointless. If you won't give up this grudge, then you'll forget about it with your death."

With a flourish of his hand, Bai Yunfei pounced forward to stab at Zhang Zhenshan with the Fire-tipped Spear!

Despair flickered in Zhang Zhenshan's eyes before turning into rage. "If you want to kill me, it won't be easy!" He roared.

Then, with his right palm raised high, he slammed it into his own chest!

"Bang!"

There was the sound of something breaking into pieces. Sequentially, rays of white light started to flow out in spasmic waves. They came Zhang Zhenshan's body along with his soulforce!

Bai Yunfei had seen something like this before...

"Dissolving your origin essence for a short burst of power, I see..." He was within twenty meters of Zhang Zhenshan when he realized the change going through his body.

Even after noticing a burst in power, Bai Yunfei didn't slow down at all—

Zhang Zhenshan may have gotten stronger, but he was still on



the verge of death anyways. The difference in strength was too big for Zhang Zhenshan's sacrifice to even start to bridge the gap between the two, so Bai Yunfei was confident that he could easily kill the other man.

When Bai Yunfei was in front of Zhang Zhenshan with his Fire-tipped Spear about to stab into the man, the look on Bai Yunfei's face drastically changed before he tried to pull his spear back!!

“You won't be able to kill me without paying the price, aaaahhhhhh!!!!”

Furiously howling, Zhang Zhenshan could feel his strength growing past the late-stage Soul Sprite level. With his origin essence gone, his power level was skyrocketing past the Soul Sprite stage and had surged into the Soul Ancestor realm—

It was still increasing!

This wasn't from dissolving his essence fireseed. It was from... self-exploding!!

Knowing that there was no way he could kill Bai Yunfei, Zhang Zhenshan made the ultimate decision!

# Chapter 360: The Closure to a Chapter

---

The hatred and despair Zhang Zhenshan felt for Bai Yunfei was enough to drive him far past the brink of sanity. He was willing to die in a way that assured mutual destruction!!

It might be called mutually assured destruction, but Zhang Zhenshan wasn't confident that this would kill Bai Yunfei.

But... even if it didn't, he still had to try!!

“Tsk!!” For once, panic settled in Bai Yunfei's eyes. He had not expected Zhang Zhenshan to do such a thing, and he knew he was in danger now.

Not only was he too close to get away, this explosion could potentially kill him!

Fortunately, his reaction was quick. He drew back to create a little distance. Then he took out the Cataclysmic Seal and immediately protected himself with the barrier.

Practically moments after the barrier was erected and when Bai Yunfei felt safe and sound behind the barrier a hundred meters away, he suddenly realized something was amiss.

The powerful explosion he had been waiting for still hadn't arrived. When he looked up to see why, all he saw was a gust of black wind.

Wind as black as the night had appeared when he had retreated. It had enveloped Zhang Zhenshan while Bai Yunfei was distracted. In a whirlwind of energy, the black wind flew into the sky before traveling far away in the blink of an eye!

Zhang Zhenshan, who was about to self-destruct, had been carried away with it, literally gone with the wind!!

Dazed, Bai Yunfei looked at the spot where Zhang Zhenshan once stood. Eergy pooled over the ground where Zhang Zhenshan had

dissolved his origin essence. The elemental ice there was starting to disappear into the world, but some of the ice was taking longer than most to disappear, proving that Zhang Zhenshan had once been there.

“What... what’s going on!?” Bai Yunfei howled. He called the Tempest Sword to him and immediately soared into the sky, but the black wind was nowhere to be found.

Bai Yunfei tried to use his soulforce to track down Zhang Zhenshan, but he wasn’t even able to find an approximate direction of where he might have gone.

From Bai Yunfei’s arrival to when the black wind appeared, only ten seconds had passed. Zhang Zhenshan had been rescued and taken away by someone before he died!!

“Who did this... why would anyone try to save him? The Glacial School, maybe? However, Yu Fei’s still on Mt. Crimson, and the school doesn’t have anyone that could be this strong... who is it then? It has to be someone that knew I’d let Zhang Zhenshan live for now. No one would’ve decided to save him out of nowhere, would they? But... this means they have to be a Soul Exalt at the very least; why didn’t they do anything to me then?”

Still hovering on his sword, Bai Yunfei thought about what he should do next. He didn’t know who this mysterious person was, and he couldn’t find the man either nor any trace of Zhang Zhenshan.

Sighing, he turned to fly to Mt. Crimson.

“This is going to come back to haunt me later. If I had known that this would have happened, I’d have used the Cataclysmic Seal to kill him earlier...” Bai Yunfei thought with regret, “But even though Zhang Zhenshan didn’t blow himself up, his origin essence was dissolved. He won’t ever be as strong as he was before, so that shouldn’t mean any troubles for me.”

.....

The second day on a small hillside of the Western Point—

As per usual, Bai Yunfei was laying on a grassy hillside, determinedly staring up at the clouds. This time, he wasn't resting because of any complications with his training. Instead, he was resting because of incident that happened with Zhang Zhenshan last night.

No one had asked him about the results when he came back; they weren't even supposed to know the purpose behind his trip, so all seemed peaceful in the school as if all was right in the world.

Bai Yunfei suspected that this mysterious user of black wind knew that he had been about to kill Zhang Zhenshan and had probably followed him there. That way, the man could spirit away Zhang Zhenshan without Bai Yunfei knowing.

If his suspicions were correct, then it had to be one of the 'outsiders' currently on Mt. Crimson.

Of those outsiders, it was safe to exclude Yu Fei from the list of suspects, leaving only Lin Dongxiao and Mo Ni.

He discreetly mad some inquiries, finding out that not even the guards that came with them had left the mountain that night

None of them had even done anything warranting suspicion in fact.

It was enough to make Bai Yunfei doubt himself. Maybe the enigma of that person was just far more stealthy than expected. In either case, he hadn't found any clues and had no choice but to end his investigation there.

While thinking about the person behind all of this, memories Bai Yunfei had nearly forgotten started to resurface in his mind. From start to finish, his memories played like a spool and thread. Sequences of images and events unraveled one after another before finally a softer and more gentle image of a person appeared next.

Liu Meng—

Someone he had first felt a splash of softness for and probably the first girl to hold feelings for him in any way.

She was also the first person he had felt pained for.

Bai Yunfei felt a growing mix of determination and relief just by thinking about those memories...

Those memories of long ago were pretty much just memories. There wasn't really a need to forget about the people he had met and the things he had accomplished. They had brought him the strength to help him mature as a person, whether it was on an emotional or practical level.

.....

“Eh?”

Noticing the approaching aura of another, Bai Yunfei snapped out of his thoughts. Tilting his head, he noticed Tang Xinyun in front of him.

“Xinyun, what brings you here today? Do you have something to do?” He smiled as he sat up.

The white-robed Tang Xinyun looked at him curiously, “Do... do I need a reason to come look for you?”

“Er...” Caught off guard, Bai Yunfei shook his head in embarrassment, “Of course not, that's not what I meant...”

“Haha, I know, I know. I was just joking with you.” A small giggle slipped from her lips as she took the spot next to Bai Yunfei, “So, what are you thinking about? Is it about training, or is it about the Glacial School?”

“Haha, it's nothing.” He shook his head, “I've pretty much come to peace with it.”

“Come to peace?” Tang Xinyun tilted her head, but she didn't question him, “That's good. After finding you thinking so much

these past two days, I was starting to worry...”

With a shake of her hand, the strawhat was gently placed over Bai Yunfei’s eyes, “I actually came here to give this back.”

Removing it from his eyes, Bai Yunfei realized that there was something different about the hat, “Oh? You fixed the hat for me?”

What he held in his hands right now was a completely patched up strawhat. Not a single hole could be seen anymore. Even the fraying edges of the hat were gone. The fact that the newer patches and stitching couldn’t be seen meant that Tang Xinyun’s repair work had been done meticulously and with great care.

If not for the fact that he could see the stats, Bai Yunfei would’ve assumed that this hat was a completely different hat and not his Walk-on Strawhat.

She smiled, “I did. Whenever you wear the hat, you always looked strange... so I thought I would fix it so it wouldn’t look so off.”

Her smile left Bai Yunfei in a slight daze.

Once upon a time, another girl had said that his strawhat was rather shabby-looking, but she had offered to buy him a new hat.

In the end, that had ended up being burned away—

With that, his feelings for the hat had been completely trampled over as well.

“Yunfei, what’s wrong? Is... is there something on my face?”

Bai Yunfei’s staring was distracting Tang Xinyun, who just had to ask to know. Touching her face with a hand as she asked, she didn’t feel anything but the reddening cheeks of hers...

“Haha, it’s nothing.” Bai Yunfei answered with a smile. He gave the strawhat another look before storing it away.

This hat wouldn’t end up destroyed. It was a treasure far too precious to him.

# Chapter 361: Smooth Training and....Unknown Dangers!

---

Off in a hidden forest cave several hundred meters west of Mt. Crimson—

Just barely visible in the dim light of the cave was a single person. His back was against the cave wall, and his head bobbed down with his hair splayed across his face.

If his chest wasn't still rhythmically rising and falling, anyone would've thought that he was dead.

The face behind the hair was vaguely familiar.

This was the man Bai Yunfei had chased down; a man saved at the very last second... Zhang Zhenshan!!

As of right now, he looked far more pathetic than before.

Approximately six days had passed since that fateful night... had it been six days?

Zhang Zhenshan couldn't be sure. He had only the slightest bit of light to help him tell the time. He hadn't left the cave since he had made it there to begin with.

In fact, he could hardly even move.

There were two reasons for that.

First, he was physically incapable of moving.

Second, he didn't want to move.

From the far corner of his eye was a single shadow. It sat in the corner of the cave on his right, all but hidden until Zhang Zhenshan looked directly at that corner!!

The figure's shoulder was practically a shadow of the cave itself; Zhang Zhenshan never would've noticed anyone else in the cave if he hadn't been looking around carefully.

Even then, the ‘presence’ of a human couldn’t be felt when he looked at the shadow!

In any case, this shadow was the one responsible for carrying him to the cave. Back when Zhang Zhenshan decided to blow himself up to take Bai Yunfei with him, a powerful aura had stopped him from going through with the act.

He woke back up when he was in this cave after had had been unceremoniously thrown to the side like a pile of trash.

Thus, he lived.

But not without the consequences of his actions.

The majority of his fruits of training had been ruined with the act of self-detonation. The remaining bits were pretty much neglectable.

With the soulforce he had left, he could hardly be considered a Soul Apprentice.

Combined with the heavy wounds on his body, he was weaker than a regular person by this point.

Zhang Zhenshan wasn’t a man who wanted to die. His actions before weren’t that of a fearless man, but a desperate one. Hence, why he kept a sliver of hope, so that he could live; that he wouldn’t ‘die again.’

The man in the cave with him clearly didn’t want him to die either, but that much was obvious. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have saved Zhang Zhenshan to begin with. The food and water being brought to him was also very clearly meant to feed an alive person rather than a dead one.

Aside from this, the man didn’t speak to Zhang Zhenshan at all. Zhang Zhenshan didn’t even know how tall, how skinny, how old, or even what gender this person was.

If Zhang Zhenshan had to guess, this person was waiting for



someone.

.....

“Sssss...”

For the first time in six days, Zhang Zhenshan heard a sound. It was a sound that was very low in pitch, but it was audible nonetheless.

“Junior headmaster.”

Within a second, Zhang Zhenshan saw the figure step from the corner of the cave to the entrance. He was dressed completely in black, but his face wasn't very spry. His back was hunched, and judging from the voice, the speaker was an old man.

When this man spoke, Zhang Zhenshan could clearly see that the light that remained in on the one corner of the cave was being obscured just enough to hide the details of a second person outside the cave.

“How is he?”

A young but robust voice.

This speaker was a considerably young man.

“He's crippled as a soul cultivator, but everything else is fine.”  
The first man replied to the second.

The one known as junior headmaster nodded his head. With two steps into the cave, he was in front of Zhang Zhenshan.

“Do you want revenge?”

He spoke after a careful observation.

“Eh?” Zhang Zhenshan hadn't expected those four words.

“Do you wish to fight the killer of your son again? Your enemy who left you in this state? Don't you want to have him beg for death before tearing him from limb to limb?”

Zhang Zhenshan heard this last part all too clearly. Previously

inert in motion, his body was now shaking minutely with emotions.

He wasn't stupid enough to say anything along the lines of, 'what do you mean' or 'how am I going to do that?'

In either case, all he could think about was his most hated foe.

Practically snarling with fury in his eyes, Zhang Zhenshan responded.

"I do!"

"Even if it means sacrificing everything? Selling your soul? Becoming a servant or slave? A demon? How does that sound?"

"Doesn't sound bad at all!!"

"Aaah... very good, this is the kind of hatred and darkness I like..."

A smile appeared on the youth's face as he turned to the mysterious person next to him, "Gui Wei, he will from today on travel with you. I want you to turn him into a Soul Ancestor within one year!"

"Yes, junior headmaster!"

In astonishment, Zhang Zhenshan couldn't help but look up at the young man's face.

His words weren't the only thing that surprised Zhang Zhenshan, but his face as well!

By borrowing just enough light from the outside, he was able to see enough of the young man's face...

Only to realize that he had seen this man's face before! And not too long ago!

Within the Crafting School in fact!

This man had been there when Bai Yunfei was there!

This man has been with the junior headmaster of the Beast

Taming School!

Mo Ni!

Mo Ni and Gui Wei exchanged several words with one another before the latter turned back to Zhang Zhenshan.

“From henceforth, I will be your master. You will throw away everything from your past life but the hatred in your heart. You will obey my commands and do nothing without my say!

“From henceforth, your name shall be... Gui Pu!”

.....

Mt. Crimson—

Three days had passed since Zhang Zhenshan’s new lease on life. Yu Fei and his school were just leaving the Crafting School.

Two days after that, Huangfu Nan finally finished crafting a high-earth tier soul armament for Lin Dongxiao.

He and Mo Ni both left the Crafting School after that.

The days were back to normal now.

Bai Yunfei was at a considerably nice level of understanding of the Dual Flame Arts, and within a month, he was able to undergo the practical training portion under the strict guidance of Zi Jin.

It was then that he experienced the first pleasant surprise.

When he recalled the essence fireseed from his Cataclysmic Seal back to his body, it went into the origin acupoint as he expected, but no explosion occurred. By following the directions listed in the Dual Flame Arts scroll, he was able to keep the two fireseeds in a strange equilibrium with one another.

That equilibrium was maintained for a short amount of time before the pressure was far too much for Bai Yunfei to control, forcing him to release the fireseed back to his Cataclysmic Seal.

The fact that Bai Yunfei was able to do this in the first place was

enough to make Zi Jin proud.

He said that such a feat was what the Dual Flame Arts was capable of. Back when their predecessor first conceived this technique, he was unable to accomplish it himself. The Dual Flame Arts was just one of those things that required specific conditions to learn. Aside from Bai Yunfei's special circumstances, no one else was able to have two fully useable fireseed essences without it blowing up. Only Bai Yunfei's lifebound armament was capable of housing a fully grown essence fireseed.

The reason why Bai Yunfei was able to house it there was still a complete enigma that even Zi Jin couldn't answer.

After several days of close observation, Zi Jin gave up and allowed Bai Yunfei to train without his supervision.

.....

"Knock knock knock!"

Three knocks on the door.

From his seat on his bed, Bai Yunfei looked up from the gray scroll in his hands, "Come in, Xinyun."

The door opened to reveal a smiling Tang Xinyun, "Yunfei, are you ready to go?"

"Go? Go where?"

"Did... didn't you say we'd go to Mt. Maple today? Did you forget?"

"Haha, how could I forget? I'll be right there, Xinyun, just hold on. I need to finish this painting."

"Okay..." Looking at the scroll Bai Yunfei had on the table, Tang Xinyun asked, "Yunfei, what are you drawing?"

From what she could see on the drawing, there was a spiral-shaped diagram that she'd never seen before. Everything painted on the scroll in fact looked foreign to her.

“Ah well, it’s the component designs for a soul armament.”

“Soul armament? Designs?”

“Yeah, I don’t feel like working on the Dual Flame Arts all the time since it takes me away from my regular training, so I thought I’d design something in the meanwhile. Since my training’s not done, I’ve enough time to craft some stuff, so I should be able to follow these designs to make some decent soul armaments.”

“Oh...” Nodding because she sort of understood him, Tang Xinyun asked again, “Then what kind of soul armament are you designing? It looks strange. I don’t think I’ve ever seen a soul armament like this before?”

“It’s a lance.” Bai Yunfei smiled.

TL Note: Both spear/lance and gun share the same character in Chinese. This is due to the invention of the fire lance: the ancestor of all firearms.

“A lance?” Tang Xinyun stared at the painting, “This is a lance?” She asked in confusion.

“Haha, it’s not the same type of ‘lance’ you’re thinking of like my Fire-tipped Spear.” Bai Yunfei chuckled.

Finishing off the painting with a final stroke, he gave the it a look over before nodding his head in satisfaction.

“It’s name is the... Desert Eagle!!”

.....

Meanwhile, in a secluded village of the Northern Cliff Province—

“Unc... Uncle Zhang... what are you doing!? Do-don’t come any closer! Do-aaah!!”

At first, the terrified whimper of a person could be heard.

Then the whimper turned into a blood-curling howl.

Then, nothing.

A bloodied arm was holding the face of a young man, hoisting him into the air. From the cracks between the fingers holding his face up, the terrified eyes of a young man could be seen in his final moments. A black wisp was coming out of his corpse in a shaky stream before flowing into the arm of the person holding the corpse up.

At the foot of this person was yet another icy-cold corpse!

“Bang!”

After the black wisp was absorbed, the figure tossed the corpse to the ground. The corpse had been living just moments ago, but its entire body was an unhealthy shade of gray now. Even its muscles looked as withered and decayed as a mummy!

Both of the fresh corpses had extremely familiar faces.

They were... Yu Fei from the Glacial School and his son!!

“Hehe... hehehehe...” An eerie and terrifying voice erupted from the bloody figure. Even with all of the clothing and blood on him, the shaking of his body could clearly be seen. He was an extremely terrifying sight to behold with two corpses beneath him.

“Kekekeke... Bai Yunfei... blood spilt by you will be in turn spilt from you! Wash your neck and wait for a living hell!!”

End of Book Three.

# Book 4 - Soulbeast Forest

# Chapter 362: Two Years Later at Praestia Pass

---

On the fourth month of year 2012 on the Tianhun Calendar in the northernmost part of the empire, Northern Mist Province, Praestia Pass—

The Northern Mist Province was the northernmost province of the empire, and Praestia Pass was the northernmost city in the province.

The ocean of trees that rested beyond the city was territory that belonged not to the Tianhun Empire, but to a completely different faction of power, the Soulbeast Forest.

The territory there belonged to the soulbeasts, and in a way, that place could also be called an ‘empire.’

As the name of the city implied, Praestia Pass was a mountain pass. The city was responsible for the fending off any soulbeast that roamed too close to the empire. The denizens of the city were assigned the tasks of maintaining surveillance and launching a counteroffensive on any soulbeasts that came from the Soulbeast Forest. They were there for the sake of protecting the people of the Tianhun Empire from harm.

The northern walls of Praestia Pass were many times larger than any other city walls. Not only was it a line of defense, it symbolized the line that separated the territory of humans from soulbeasts, but that didn’t mean there weren’t any humans beyond the walls.

On the contrary, there was a considerable amount of humans ‘beyond the wall.’

Roughly a hundred kilometers away from the gates of Praestia Pass was a small town that served as the central point between the two empires.

A town known as the ‘Town of the Braves.’



No actual name had ever been given to this town, but with all of the locals referring to the town by such a name, it became 'official' once the rest of the Empire heard the name.

There was a simple reason why the town was given such a name. Anyone that came to this town were what the rest of the empire called the 'Braves,' people that were brave enough to enter the Soulbeast Forest.

As an aside, the Tianhun Empire had three separate locations that were known as the 'Three Danger Zones.' The Soulbeast Forest wasn't recognized as any of the three.

It was a separate entity that was more dangerous than the aforementioned locations. Thus, it was designated as the most dangerous place of all, earning it a special designation of its own.

Unlike the Three Danger Zones: the 'Mountain,' the 'Valley,' and the 'Swamp,' many of the empire's soul cultivators were willing to journey into the Soulbeast Forest. If the Three Danger Zones were deadly enough to kill nine times out of ten, then the Soulbeast Forest was deadly enough to kill 'ten times out of ten,' but that was only applicable when journeying to the center of the forest.

Despite being a forest, it was beyond large. The outermost areas were by no means scarier than the legends told.

Regardless, there was still one common denominator between the Soulbeast Forest and the Three Danger Zones; each of the four places were known as a veritable paradise for 'treasure.'

Of all things in the world, what was the most common thing in the Soulbeast Forest?

Aside from plant life, the answer would obviously be soulbeasts.

In the eyes of soul cultivators, soulbeasts were equivalent to 'soulgems,' which in turn were equivalent to 'wealth' or 'shortcuts' in training.

Training without any external help was extremely difficult and

tiresome for any soul cultivator. Hence, objects and items that could speed up the rate of training were highly desired by all.

While primal stones were also shortcuts in training, they were limited in number and hard to obtain for a number of reasons. First, they were buried in the ground, meaning one would have to mine them out. Second, the majority of primal stone mines were owned by the larger houses and/or schools, meaning outsiders were unable to dip their fingers into the pot.

However, soulgems were different. They belonged to no one but the ones who could kill soulbeasts. As long as a person could kill a soulbeast, the soulgem was theirs to take. With a soulgem in hand, they could increase their training for half the effort.

Moreover, the soulgems weren't the only important drops from a soulbeast. The body of a soulbeast could contain many other potential uses. Every part of its body could be used in some capacity or be traded for something of equal value.

Besides those things, the Soulbeast Forest still had a plethora of natural resources that could rival soulgems in value.

All in all, while the Soulbeast Forest was dangerous beyond belief, its allure was enough to override many soul cultivators' fear. Whether it was for the sake of training, treasure, adventure, or even a soulbeast to partner with, the Soulbeast Forest was without a doubt the best place to be.

There was of course a warning to all that told people to stay within the outermost areas of the forest where the class five soulbeasts were.

Unless you wanted to die, there was no point in going any deeper into the forest.

In other words, one needed to be a Soul Exalt if they wanted to try venturing into the area where the class six soulbeasts were.

Records about soulbeasts of the seventh class were virtually left

blank since many soul cultivators would not be willing to share the discoveries they made in the deeper parts of the forest...

The Town of the Braves was a stopping point for those willing to venture into the forest or for those still in one piece who needed to rest and refuel. Aside from the essential services such as a store, an inn, and variety restaurants, there was also the quintessential 'Braves Guild.' While not an organization in an official sense, it served as a place for people to meet with one another for things to trade. It was the go-to spot for any soul cultivator new or old to the town.

It was a guild, but it was also a social area, not unlike a restaurant. The interior of the building was large beyond large with plenty of tables for patrons to sit at. People came in groups or by themselves, but they would all come and from the counter, inquiring about a service or requesting one to be done.

Of all the services to be had, the guild's most highly used service was the mission board. Whether it be soulgems, soulbeast infants, or even precious resources, any and all soul cultivators that were either too weak or too lazy to look for themselves could put a request on the mission board. As long as the requested service was carried out, a reward of equal value would be given.

It was through this mission board that bounty hunters or mercenary groups could flourish and earn their keep.

.....

Today, a rather special guest was in this guild hall where only soul cultivators gathered...

A guest that was about ten years old, in fact.

Timid and meek was he as he attempted to walk through the noisy halls. Dozens of pointed stares were leveled at the young boy, frightening him to such a degree that he wanted to turn tail and run, but somehow, he grit his teeth and ran full speed to the front

counter.

Almost out of breath from just running to the counter, the boy was surprisingly already out of energy from just running a short hundred meters.

Several of the patrons looked away, losing interest in the boy.

“Phew...” The boy gasped. Standing on his tiptoes to look over the counter, the boy hesitated for a moment before saying, albeit timidly, “Hi there, grandpa. I’m... I’m Xiao Yi. Is this... is this where people ask for missions?”

Servicing the counter at the moment was a kind old man who didn’t seem to judge the young boy in front of him at all.

“Indeed it is, my child. What brings you here today? Are you looking for someone?”

“I... I wanted to make a request”

“A request? What kind of request?”

“I’m... I’m looking for some stargrass. The kind that can cure any sickness. This... this is the reward money. Is it enough?”

The boy took a small pouch out of his pocket while he spoke. Slowly opening it up, he took out several dozen copper coins; each shining with a nice gleam, as if they had been taken care of meticulously.

“.....”

A blanket of silence was draped over the hall, the entire guild was silent.

Everyone here was a soul cultivator of considerable strength—Soul Sprites were among the most common—so it was easy for everyone to listen in to Xiao Yi’s request.

For a while, nobody spoke.

Then someone laughed.

Like a chain reaction, the entire place burst into laughter as if they had heard a very funny joke.

“You want someone to find some stargrass? For just those copper coins? Hah! Whose idiot kid is this??”

“Stargrass can heal plenty of sickness, that may be true. For commoners, it feels like it has enough power to resurrect even the dead and is worth its weight in gold, but for soul cultivators, it isn’t even worth a fart! Who’d care for this little money enough to go to the areas where the class five soulbeasts are? Even if I found those coins under my foot, I wouldn’t even stop to pick them up!”

“What a cute kid? Is he someone from ‘that’ village? Only those ‘pariahs’ wouldn’t know a thing about civilization...”

“He’s just a kid. What kind of soul cultivator would make fun of a kid? Have you no shame...”

“What a bleeding heart you are. Why don’t you take his mission then and find some stargrass?”

“Stow it, I’m not that merciful to risk my life for something as minor as this...”

Perhaps that everyone was bored, but conversations revolving around this little boy started almost instantly, inducing a red-hot blush of shame on the boy’s face.

“Is... is it not enough? I... I saved up for two years to... to request this... grandpa, can this get me some stargrass?”

“It...” The elderly man didn’t have it in him to laugh at the boy for the pitiful amount of money offered up, “Child, it’s best that you go home. Today won’t be a good day for you to get some stargrass...”

“I can’t!” The boy cried, “I need some stargrass!”

It was startling how the boy had exploded so suddenly, seeing how meek he was before, “The village grandpa said that only

stargrass can save mom! She's been sick for so many years! The village grandpa said that she'll die in a few months if we don't get her some stargrass..."

Each word was spoken with more emotion than the last, and by the end, the boy was practically on top of the counter begging the man, "Please... please! Can you please find some stargrass? If this isn't enough, I can save up more... I can... I'll work here! I'll scrub the floors! Wash the clothes! Cook food! Anything, just anything! I need stargrass for mom... I never met my father before. All I have left is my mom... please..."

Silence reigned again in the guild hall as Xiao Yi started to cry out to them all. Some people wore sympathetic looks on their faces while others looked on apathetically.

Either way, no one looked like they'd be willing to help the boy out.

"Alas..." The old man sighed again. "Begging me is no use. No one here has any stargrass, so making a request for it is useless. Don't be so naive, foolish child, and go back to your mother... that is all you can do for now..."

"I... I—"

The boy wanted to beg again, he really did.

But the look in the old man's face, while sympathetic, was telling him 'no.'

Knowing that begging anymore was futile, tears started to gather in the boy's eyes, but he refused to cry.

His teeth bit down on his lower lip hard enough to draw blood, but none was seen with because of the he was biting down.

With a quick hand, he gathered up all the copper coins and placed them back into his pouch so that he could turn around and leave.

Then, a hand reached out to grab the few copper coins still on the table.

“Haha, Xiao Yi... is it? This request of yours... I’ll take it.”

# Chapter 363: Accepting a Request

---

“Haha, Xiao Yi... is it? This request of yours... I’ll take it.”

Xiao Yi’s heart practically leaped out of his throat when he saw his personal wealth get ‘taken’ so suddenly.

Upon realizing what exactly had been said to him, he turned his head with a hopeful smile, “What... what did you say?”

“Are... are you going to help me get some stargrass?”

After a closer look, Xiao Yi noticed that the one who was speaking to him was a strange strawhat-wearing older male who had been sitting off in a corner earlier. The man hadn’t done anything since Xiao Yi came in, so it was a surprise to everyone when the male suddenly accepted this ‘request’ out of the blue.

Xiao Yi didn’t doubt that this older male could help him get stargrass. After all, he had heard that this place was where all of the mighty soul cultivators gathered.

People back in his village were often afraid to even mention the term ‘soul cultivators.’

He could only feel excitement that someone was finally willing to help him. Someone was willing to save his mother...

“It’s only a few stalks of grass. I was about to head into the forest anyways, so I might as well find you some.” The person replied with a pat on the head.

His voice was kind to the ears.

“Where do you live? I promise you that in two months, I’ll bring back some stargrass for you.”

Xiao Yi was so flushed with emotions that his face started to grow red and his eyes started to tear up. With a finger pointing towards his right, he spoke, “I... I live ten kilometers over there in a small village. The house on the right is mine. It’s easy to find... I... I’ll be



waiting for you at the village gates. You'll find me straight away."

"There's still a village east of here?" Surprised to learn that there was still another village besides this town, the figure nodded, "Alright. I'll remember it. Hurry back home to your mother, I'll send the stargrass over when I find some."

"Okay!" Turning about, the boy ran to the exit.

Just two steps into his departure, he turned around. It seemed as if he remembered something.

"Oh! Big brother, I still don't know what your name is."

"Haha, I'm... Bai Yunfei."

"Bai Yunfei... okay! I'll remember it! I'll be waiting for you by the gates. You... you have to come, okay!"

"Ah, don't worry. I'll do as I promised."

.....

Now that Xiao Yi was fully out of sight, Bai Yunfei turned to head back to his original seat to continue pouring over a map of the Soulbeast Forest.

His calm concentration was so thorough that he didn't even realize everyone was looking strangely at him.

At last, someone spoke.

"Sire..." The old man behind the counter hesitantly spoke first.

"Eh? Is there something you need, uncle He?" Bai Yunfei nodded in acknowledgement.

He knew that this man had the surname of He and was a worker of the guild. As such, the man was considerably strong, a late-stage Soul Sprite, but at his age, that meant his aptitude for being a soul cultivator was mediocre at best.

Still, the uncle named He was hesitant to reply, "Sire, that child just now... is from an unnamed village just ten kilometers east of

here, but that village... it's filled with people of unfortunate happenstances. They're known to many as the 'pariahs.' They've nowhere to go in Praestia Pass and can only live in areas where soulbeasts can attack at any time. Sire, I hope that you'll..."

At first, Bai Yunfei was somewhat surprised at the exposition being explained to him, but with time, Bai Yunfei realized what the old man was getting at.

"Uncle He, are you thinking that I'd... promise to help Xiao Yi as some kind of joke? That I'd give a naive child a glimmer of hope and then trample all over it?"

"That... that wasn't my intention..." Uncle He looked embarrassed.

Bai Yunfei shook his head and looked around.

It appeared everyone else was thinking the same thing.

"I only thought it Xiao Yi's filial piety was impressive, so I wanted to lend a hand. If I said I'd accept his request, then I'll be sure to accomplish it. I wouldn't play along with a pitiful but determined child." Bai Yunfei explained.

Bai Yunfei turned back to look at his map. If people didn't believe him, then so be it. He didn't care.

"Hah, just listen to him. Is he really going to go into the Soulbeast Forest for some stargrass?"

"Only the class five area has stargrass, he's only a late-stage Soul Sprite, yet he's still wanting to look for stargrass? Methinks he's overestimating himself..."

"Don't say it like that. He looks like he's in his early twenties at most, but if he's already a late-stage Soul Sprite, he has to be very talented. Maybe he's the heir to some sort of big clan?"

"Young and brash. Give them some strength and they think they're invincible. If he's going to be this kind, I predict he's going

to lose his life one day if he's not careful."

"What makes you think he's alone? Can't say he's not here with family or people older than him?"

"Didn't you see him walk up to the counter two hours ago? He's been doing nothing but look at that map the entire day. Doesn't seem like he's waiting for anybody. I'd say he's here by himself."

"....."

Chatter broke out in the guild again, and it was only natural that Bai Yunfei could hear it. He didn't mind though. All he cared for was the map in front of him.

It wasn't as though he wanted to pretend like he was deep in concentration.

He simply couldn't understand the map, even after two hours of looking at it!

The terrain was beyond complex with markings, directions, and special symbols that garbled his mind.

This was the most basic map!

"Uncle He, if I could just ask, where exactly can I... find some stargrass on this map?" Unable to make heads or tails of the map any longer, Bai Yunfei deferred to the older man for assistance.

A pleasantly surprised smile made its way onto the man's face upon seeing that Bai Yunfei didn't seem to be leading Xiao Yi on, "If it's stargrass, I've heard some people say before that they find it most often by Spoon Lake in the class five zone. The lake's shaped like a tablespoon like its name implies, and the area around the handle had stargrass in abundance."

"I see..." Bai Yunfei nodded his head in understanding, "Then what does this small red dot mean?"

Another wave of shock crashed over uncle He's face. "What in the world were you looking at for two hours if not the map?" He

seemed flabbergasted.

With only a mental drop of sweat weighing down on his mind, uncle He spoke up, “Those indicate spots where soulbeasts are known to appear. That map you’re holding is the simplest one, so it doesn’t reveal any information about the strength or the type of soulbeast. However, I can tell you that the soulbeasts around Lake Spoon are mostly class five goldhorned rhinos. As it turns out, stargrass is what they love to eat the most.”

“Ah, goldhorned rhinos, thank you for that information, uncle He.” Bai Yunfei nodded in affirmation before thinking of the best way to reach Lake Spoon.

Bai Yunfei’s reaction to this information was equally shocking to uncle He. At first, the man thought he hadn’t heard Bai Yunfei correctly, but that didn’t make sense. What kind of ignorant late-stage Soul Sprite would remain so calm after hearing that he’d have to fight class five soulbeasts to achieve his goals? If uncle He had to put his finger on it, he’d say that Bai Yunfei was treating soulbeasts as if they were regular beasts and weren’t a threat to be taken seriously at all.

While Bai Yunfei was lost in his own thoughts, a voice suddenly asked from behind him, “Friend, are you really planning to go the class five area?”

## Chapter 364: Adventuring Team

---

Having been asked a question so suddenly, Bai Yunfei turned around with a questioning look on his face. What greeted him was a pretty young woman smiling at him.

She wore stunningly-red clothes that clung tightly to her body and beautifully defined her curves quite. Likewise, her hair was tied up tight behind her head in a way that made her look quite pretty. She wasn't by any means drop-dead beautiful, but at the very least, she was heroic looking, like a female heroine.

"An early-stage Soul Ancestor." Bai Yunfei noted. Those were the median levels of strength in the guild.

She looked to be twenty-seven at the youngest and thirty at the oldest, so her talent as a soul cultivator wasn't all that low.

"I am indeed going to go there. Is there a problem?" Having made his observations, Bai Yunfei nodded his head in response to her.

A flicker of surprise ran through the woman's eyes. "As it were, sir, my team is about to enter the Soulbeast Forest. If it's to your liking, why not join us?"

"Join? A team? Are you bounty hunters or mercenaries?"

"No no, we're just a group of adventurers, not people that hunt for treasure or lives. We've a different reason for entering the Soulbeast Forest this time..." She pointed to a table not too far away where three males and a female sat. "It's incredibly dangerous in that forest, so it's common sense to stick together. If you don't have a team of your own yet, sir, then please consider joining ours. Our captain has gone into the deeper parts of the class five zone before and knows the terrain quite well. We'll be able to help you get to Spoon Lake."

"Oh?" Bai Yunfei had to admit, the offer was tempting. "Very well then, thank you for your invitation miss. I'd be more than

happy to join with you.”

Her face lit up with a bright smile, “Really? That’s good to hear. I’m called Ye Zi, might I ask what your name is, sir?”

“Bai Yunfei.”

“A pleasure. If you’d like, I can introduce you to the rest of my companions.”

“Well, if you don’t mind waiting for just a second, I’ve one more thing to do.” He turned to uncle He, “Uncle He, can I ask for the most detailed map you’ve got? One that’ll list information about soulbeasts and their classifications.”

“You want one of those?” The man looked troubled at the request, “Sire Bai, I must tell you that those maps are extremely precious. Their prices rather steep...”

The topography of the Soulbeast Forest was a complex mess that took the lives of many brave people. They had to figure out information about the area along with the soulbeasts living there, so a very detailed map was obviously quite precious.

“I understand that, uncle He. I only require one map, so the price shouldn’t be a problem.”

Since Bai Yunfei was adamant, the man didn’t try to convince him. Presenting a gray scroll, he said, “Sire Bai, this map will cost ten mid-tier primal stones.”

The amount nearly made Bai Yunfei flinch. He was ready for a steep price, but even this was slightly more expensive than he had thought. Ten mid-tier primal stones was equivalent to a thousand low-tier ones, a sum any soul cultivator would balk at.

Bai Yunfei didn’t have many primal stones to begin with, but when it came to other things of value, he had them in spades. A shortsword was brought out with a twist of his hand, “Would using a mid-human tier soul armament suffice as a trade?”

A mid-human tier soul armament would fetch a price larger than a thousand low-tier primal stones without a problem.

“Soul armament?” Uncle He was taken aback by the prospect, but he smiled nonetheless. “Of course, as long as it’s equivalent in price.”

Taking the sword, the man began to inspect it to confirm its value. “This is indeed a mid-human tier soul armament. Sire Bai, the map is yours.”

Bai Yunfei took the map with a grateful salute, “You’ve my thanks.”

He turned back to Ye Zi, who looked thoroughly surprised by the exchange just now, “Miss Ye Zi, let’s go if you don’t mind.”

“Ah? Oh! Yes, alright... please come this way, sir Bai.” Ye Zi snapped back to awareness after looking at Bai Yunfei with surprise. She turned to walk in the direction of her fellow adventurers.

.....

The two arrived at a table to the right of the room where three males and one female sat. “Everyone, this is Bai Yunfei. He’s agreed to join our team.”

“Thank you for the kind invitation, please treat me well.” Bai Yunfei clasped his hands politely.

“Haha, you’re a polite one, brother Bai! Come! Sit down!” A man in his thirties laughed. He seemed like the leader of the group.

“You do me the honor of joining my team, brother Bai.” The man smiled, “I’m very honored to have you here. The Soulbeast Forest is fraught with danger, so having one friend more is an extra layer of security for us all.”

He waited for Bai Yunfei to sit down before saying anything more. “Allow me to introduce myself. I’m Zhang Yunpeng, I hail

from the Shining Star School.”

Bai Yunfei had heard about that specific school before. It was quite famous in the Northern Mist Province and was considered one of the stronger schools.

Judging by Zhang Yunpeng’s strength, he was a mid-stage Soul Ancestor, which meant he was the strongest of the group.

“You already know Ye Zi’s name, I’m sure. She’s my junior.” He pointed at her first before his finger slide to the slightly shorter woman next to her, “This is Han Yan, Ye Zi’s cousin from the Bright Daylily School.”

The Bright Daylily school was an even more well-known school in the province. As a late-stage Soul Sprite, she was the weakest of the group and apparently the most shy since she only gave Bai Yunfei a small nod in greeting.

Zhang Yunpeng pointed his finger at the male to his right, “This is my good friend, Zhou Feng. He’s the eldest of the house of Zhou in Caevius City.”

“Nice to meet you, brother Zhou.” Bai Yunfei greeted, but the man replied with only a small grunt of greeting. It wasn’t a sign of rudeness, but rather a personality trait of his that made him less inclined to speak. He was an early-stage Soul Ancestor.

The very last person introduced himself before Zhang Yunpeng could even introduce him. “Haha, let me introduce myself. It’s nice to meet you, brother Bai. I’m ‘Kun’.”

In contrast to the nature of Zhou Feng, Kun was far more boisterous, but his introduction tripped up Bai Yunfei. This was the first time Bai Yunfei had met someone with only one character for their name.

But Bai Yunfei greeted him anyways, “Ah... nice to meet you, brother Kun.”

“Haha, isn’t my name something special? I chose it myself.”



Catching onto what made Bai Yunfei so surprised, he laughed, “I’m an orphan without any records, so I thought I’d make one up. A name with only one character is great and simple.”

Again, Bai Yunfei was surprised. It was rare to meet someone who was so natural at speaking. Bai Yunfei couldn’t help but feel respect for him.

Now that the introductions were over, Bai Yunfei asked the leader, “Brother Zhang, when do you plan on entering the forest?”

## Chapter 365: A Tentative Understanding

---

“Hmm? Are you in a rush, brother Bai? Is there something else you need to do?”

“That’s not it.” Bai Yunfei shook his head, “I’m by myself, so I can go whenever. I just wanted to ask about your plans.”

Zhang Yunpeng looked apologetic, “In that case... if you’d please wait a few days, brother Bai, we’re still waiting on a friend that hasn’t arrived. Once he’s here, we can leave straight away.”

“A few days?” Bai Yunfei thought it over, “That shouldn’t be a problem. I was afraid that Xiao Yi’s mother’s health might take a turn for the worse, so I wanted to be back with some stargrass before two months.”

Zhang Yunpeng was startled; he hadn’t expected Bai Yunfei to be worried about that of all things, but he just had to ask, “Brother Bai, if you don’t mind me asking, are you really going to do that? For the sake of a commoner you don’t even know, you’d go into the class five area and find some stargrass without a reward?”

“Haha, what problem is there?” Bai Yunfei laughed, “If I’m there, I might as well. I came here for experience, so I might as well find some.”

The entire team was looking at Bai Yunfei rather strangely. Should a young late-stage Soul Sprite really be talking with such confidence? Either he was fearless because he was brave or fearless because he was ignorant...

“Sir Bai, you’re going into the Soulbeast Forest just for the sake of ‘experience’?” Ye Zi couldn’t stop herself from asking.

Bai Yunfei nodded, “Yes. My master told me to come here and get some experience and hopefully find a suitable soulbeast partner.”

A common feeling was had among the group. They started cursing this master of his. Just what kind of experience was his

master looking for? One that'd harm his student or kill him? What point was there to having Bai Yunfei enter the Soulbeast Forest alone if not to feed the soulbeasts there?

Who knows what Bai Yunfei would've thought of the group if he could hear how they were cursing his master?

"That reminds me, where are you from, brother Bai?" Zhang Yunpeng asked.

"I traveled from the Great Plains Province." Bai Yunfei smiled, "it took me the better of three months and plenty of tough times."

What Zhang Yunpeng was asking for was Bai Yunfei's identity and Bai Yunfei was more than aware of that, but Zhang Yunpeng wouldn't press the issue if Bai Yunfei was only going to offer up what province he was from. "Haha, the Great Plains Province? That's a great ways away, you must have gone through a lot."

Honestly speaking, the tough times Bai Yunfei was referring to was when he had gotten lost. The majority of his time was spent trying to find his way. Since it was a journey to gain experience, he couldn't use the flying sword to save himself the trouble. Left without the option of the sword, Bai Yunfei could only rely on his sense of direction, something that for the life of him couldn't be fixed.

Bai Yunfei was a powerful soul cultivator who possessed strength and a mind better than any commoner, but his sense of direction was still something that left him in agony.

"I heard miss Ye Zi mention that you don't have any requests to go into the Soulbeast Forest. What business do you have there then? Is it for experience as well?"

"No no, we're by no means as brave as you are to go for the experience... if possible, I'd hope that I'd never even have to go into the Soulbeast Forest." Zhang Yunpeng shook his head sorrowfully, "I won't lie to you, brother Bai. I was once part of a

mercenary group three years ago. We were small in numbers with only twenty or so members, but I was an early-stage Soul Ancestor back then and filled with mettle. Our captain wanted us to go into the Soulbeast Forest, but... none of us had ever expected that we'd come across the class six three-eyed bloodlion! Even our captain, a late-stage Soul Ancestor, was torn in half with just a single bite of that beast's maw! In front of that lion, all twenty of us were no better than ants to be stepped on. Only I... only I was the sole survivor. I ran away as fast as I could..."

Bai Yunfei was alarmed to hear such a frightful backstory, "But weren't you in the class five area? Why would a class six soulbeast be there?"

"That's what's terrifying about the Soulbeast Forest..." Zhang Yunpeng hung his head, "Don't put too much faith in the supposed boundaries of the forest. Those are only guidelines and estimations we humans make. Soulbeasts don't care for the rules we impose or the markings we draw. Soulbeasts of a higher level will always naturally travel where they please, even if they travel through the supposedly less dangerous zones.

"Then you're coming back to the Soulbeast Forest for..."

"For the captain's wife." Kun interjected, "Yunpeng and his wife were targeted by a nasty guy a while back. She was poisoned by one of the injuries given to her, so we need the head of the class five purple-crowned snake to cure it. We're here to hunt one of those snakes now."

"I see now." Bai Yunfei nodded, "Don't worry, brother Zhang. I'm sure that you'll succeed. Your wife will be cured without a doubt."

"Haha, I'll be sure to take the luck from your words, I can only hope that it'll end up as such..." The frown on Zhang Yunpeng's face disappeared as he attempted to cheer himself up, "The purple-crowned snake is hard to find, and a class five soulbeast is already

hard enough to find. Though, we've heard of some reports recently saying that one was spotted nearby. I hope we'll be able to find it."

Killing a class five soulbeast would be a little difficult with their current team, but the strength of the person who wasn't here yet was still uncertain.

Bai Yunfei made his decision. Since they were willing to help him out, he'd be sure to help them out as well when the time came. To the group, Bai Yunfei was a 'weak' 'late-stage Soul Sprite,' but they were willing to help him get some stargrass. Acts of goodwill weren't common to soul cultivators, so Bai Yunfei was very happy to see such a nice deal offered to him.

Talking for a little while longer, Bai Yunfei finally rose from his chair. "Everyone, I'll be taking a stroll around the village first. I'll come back to the inn later tonight. When your friend arrives, we'll set out for the forest."

"That works. We'll meet again in the inn then."

"I'll be taking my leave first." Bai Yunfei bowed to everyone before leaving the guild.

.....

Now that his conversation with Zhang Yunpeng and the others was finished, Bai Yunfei had all the time in the world to stroll around the small town. Due to its small size, there were only a few streets, and all of the stores were related to what you might find in the Soulbeast Forest, such as a store that peddled in information, a store that sold soulgems, one that sold rare herbs and minerals—albeit they were of rather low quality since the higher grade ones were much harder to get—and even a store that sold soul armaments.

After perusing the wares of the 'Treasure of the Town,' Bai Yunfei only saw mid-earth tier soul armaments, so nothing caught his interest.

The objects he saw for sale weren't too interesting compared to the information regarding the Soulbeast Forest. At least, Bai Yunfei was far more interested in information.

The people in the guild would often talk about their trades, but they kept the majority of what they knew to themselves.

They were old hands at this business and information was gold. It didn't make sense to talk about what they knew without being paid for it. Compared to the people in the guild, the ones in the streets talked loudly about anything they could, sometimes even embellishing the details of their stories.

Nonetheless, Bai Yunfei was interested in listening to them since he wasn't even knowledgeable about what was supposed to be 'common sense.' By listening, he'd be able to benefit.

Somehow, two hours passed while Bai Yunfei listened to whomever he could.

A simple glance at the sky above told him that evening was quickly approaching. It was high time for him to return to the inn where Zhang Yunpeng and the others were resting for the night.

Suddenly, out of the middle of nowhere, a frightened cry called out.

“Look out! A... a soulbeast is coming!!”

# Chapter 366: Soulbeast Ambush

---

“Rooarrr!!”

The bestial roar of a soulbeast immediately startled all the humans that heard it.

But were the people here any regular humans?

As soon as their shock subsided, the majority of the people grew excited as their minds came to the same conclusion. While a few looked terrified at the prospect of a soulbeast here, the rest immediately ran in the direction of the roar.

The streets were already filled with people dashing out of their respective stores or restaurants. They all converged together and headed in the same direction. The ones from the guild were already dashing at full speed with soulforce blazing out in brilliant glows to increase their speed.

The people on the streets moved as one to run, jump, and move swiftly with the wind, and in just a few dozen seconds, the people around Bai Yunfei was half of what it was before; with the other half of the people being the ones whose minds hadn't caught up with them.

Wasn't the movement and actions of these people far too uniform!?

Bai Yunfei had nearly thought he was looking at some sort of practice drill.

These first responders were all 'experienced' in events like this. Those who hadn't moved yet were, without a doubt, newcomers to the village since the invasion of a soulbeast was not at all uncommon.

Just what kind of place was this?

It's the Soulbeast Forest. It was only natural for a soulbeast to

come out of the Soulbeast Forest. What kind of reality would it be if they stayed in the forest all the time?

Whenever a soulbeast invaded, the first reaction any soul cultivator would have would be fear.

But fear would subside with time, and with time, fear became excitement.

The people here weren't like most soul cultivators. In their eyes, the invasion of a soulbeast wasn't a threat coming to knock at their door, but a nicely wrapped present waiting to be slaughtered.

They were soul cultivators. Soul cultivators that earned yet another moniker as one of the Braves who risked their lives to come to the Soulbeast forest. Would they really be afraid of a soulbeast that came stumbling to their doorstep?

Any soulbeast that attacked this small town weren't normally strong either. Many of them, throughout the history of attacks, had been class five at the strongest.

More importantly, there was an unspoken rule about soulbeast invasions.

Whoever killed the soulbeast that invaded would reap the rewards!

Whenever a soulbeast attacked, it was quickly reduced to a dead ox swarmed by a pack of wolves.

Like vultures to a carcass, the soulbeast would find itself killed and stripped of any valuable parts.

Based off the reactions of the others, Bai Yunfei came to understand that this wasn't a danger he should be worried about. Just as he was thinking to himself whether he should head over to watch, two powerful auras were felt before an accompanying roar was heard. This time, the roar was different than the feral and angry one from before.



It was filled with pain and anguish this time.

“It’s over? Already!?” When the soulbeast cried out, Bai Yunfei felt its soulforce blink out of existence. The battle was over, and the soulbeast was killed!

“Late-stage Soul Ancestor!” Bai Yunfei hadn’t the time to make a confident observation of how strong the soulbeast was, but judging from the still lingering wisps of soulforce, Bai Yunfei could only assume that it was a late-stage Soul Ancestor in strength.

Unable to hold back his curiosity any longer, Bai Yunfei ran over to the spectacle as well. Running out of the town, he soon came to a place several kilometers to the north where a great deal of people had already gathered in a circle, each person gesticulating to one another at the objects in the middle.

The soulbeast was similar to a water buffalo, but five times bigger and black. The top of its head was a mess with blood pouring out from a hole in it. When Bai Yunfei came a little closer, he saw a man cleave open its head to extract a still bloody orange soulgem.

“Aah, just my luck! The soulgem of a class five stone ox! That’ll sell for good money!”

“Ain’t that the case, I thought it was just a class four soulbeast at first, not a class five one. How many months has it been since the last one! If I’d known earlier, I’d have run faster...”

“Forget about it. With your strength, you’d probably be unable to even scratch the soulbeast’s hide. In fact, I reckon the soulbeast would’ve killed you with one stomp. In any case, the one who struck first was the captain of the Cutthroat Mercenaries, Wang Kun. You think you could beat those Soul Ancestors? Or even fight them?”

“Tsk, I was only just saying. I’d never dare try to fight captain Wang Kun. That guy’s soul armament was crazy enough to split

that class five soulbeast's head in two even though they're the same level of strength. Their mercenaries are famous for being frontliners anyway. I'd never dare even annoy them."

"....."

Bai Yunfei looked at the man everyone was talking about. He was dressed in gray robes meant for battle. Like his sleeves, his eyebrows were rather short on his stalwart face. The blade in his hand was a blade that looked like it was almost snapped in half. It was as if it had originally been a longsword but had become a 'shortsword' when it snapped at the half point.

A smile was on the man's face when he pulled the soulgem out of the soulbeast's carcass. Hopping down, he said, "The meat of a stone ox is quite the rare delicacy! If no one is in disagreement, then please, let us all feast tonight on its meat!!"

"Oooohhhhhh!!!!" Everyone let loose a happy whoop of agreement. Eating its flesh wasn't a half-bad compromise in exchange for not getting the soulgem.

With that, several men came forward with tools in hand. They started to dissect and disassemble the corpse. From how they worked, they were old hands at harvesting soulbeasts.

Since he hadn't witnessed what appeared to be a brilliant fight, Bai Yunfei felt disappointed. Turning around, he and the other non-interested parties went back to the town.

But... of the group that wasn't interested in the feast, three people deviated from their original routes to move slowly behind Bai Yunfei, pretending like they were going back to the same place.

This didn't go unnoticed by Wang Kun, who was cleaning the blood away from his body. Peering at the ones following Bai Yunfei, he narrowed his eyes and spoke a few words to the ones dissecting the body. He then headed for the small town.

.....

In a small and dark alleyway, Bai Yunfei was dusting the dirt off his strawhat while walking. He was just about to leave the alleyway when he came face to face with someone.

“Oh, it’s you?” Bai Yunfei remarked upon realizing it was Wang Kun, the one who killed the soulbeast just a few minutes ago.

Surprised for some strange reason, the man replied, “You know me?”

“Haha, I only just watched you kill that class five soulbeast several minutes ago. What a great show of strength.”

“Aha, you flatter me too much. I am Wang Kun, might I know your name?”

“Bai Yunfei,” Bai Yunfei nodded, “I’m afraid I’ve some friends to meet with, so I’ll be saying goodbye here.”

“Ah... alright, be safe then, brother Bai.” Wang Kun stood aside to let him pass.

When Bai Yunfei was nearly out of sight, Wang Kun looked at his back with confusion, “So he had friends with him, I had thought he was just a naive kid, but... did those three give up?”

“I could’ve sworn I saw them follow him into this alley though...” Doubt ran deep in Wang Kun’s eyes. Walking a little bit deeper into the alley, he turned a corner and came across the three would-be ‘bandits.’ They were knocked out on the ground.

Surprised, he turned back to look where Bai Yunfei had gone.

“Haha, I see, so he was hiding his strength? If he can beat three late-stage Soul Sprites so easily, then he’s definitely stronger than he appears.

“I shouldn’t poke my nose into his business...”

# Chapter 367: A Two Year Summary and an Unordinary Situation

---

The fact that he was accosted by three ‘bandits’ was not much of a bother to Bai Yunfei. People of that sort were common. In the soul cultivator world, they were an abundance.

Three late-stage Soul Sprites wasn’t a problem to begin with. To be even more accurate, even three Soul Ancestors wouldn’t have been a threat to Bai Yunfei.

Just two years ago, he was able to kill an early-stage Soul Exalt, and today... Bai Yunfei was sure he’d be able to kill a few more, even if he hadn’t tried yet.

Two years had done Bai Yunfei well. He was now a late-stage Soul Ancestor.

He advanced from a mid-stage Soul Ancestor to a late-stage, and the entire Crafting School was shocked at how fast he improved. By the end of two years, Bai Yunfei had surpassed Jiang Fan in strength, becoming the fastest growing student of the Crafting School in a hundred years. His feats, however, were limited to only the Crafting School, so no one outside of it knew about them.

After the events in Mo City, everyone in the world of soul cultivators knew that Zi Jin had an outstanding disciple. Him killing a Soul Exalt as a mid-stage Soul Ancestor attracted the eyes and ears of many people, making them all believe Bai Yunfei to be someone that’d skyrocket through the list of upcoming prodigies in the coming years.

Sadly, these hopeful spectators heard nothing more about Bai Yunfei after the events in Mo City, and after two years, no one even mentioned Bai Yunfei’s name.

Aside from the Upgrade Technique and the Cultivating Pendant helping him with his training, the biggest contributor to Bai

Yunfei's rise in strength was the heaven tier technique, the Dual Flame Arts.

It seemed as though this technique, which had been created by a predecessor of the Crafting School, was tailor-made for Bai Yunfei. He had found it difficult to train with it at first, but after half a year of excruciating training, he had managed to make some leeway. Through this achievement, he was able to attain even higher levels of strength, and in a year, he was able to reach the late-stage Soul Ancestor realm.

Yes, about half a year ago—

No, about four months ago, Bai Yunfei left the Crafting School to head for Praestia Pass, so it was more accurate to say it took him up to only last year to become as strong as he was now.

The Dual Flame Arts was unfortunately not enough to help Bai Yunfei breakthrough the bottleneck of a Soul Exalt.

If it was that easy to make the advancement, the term 'bottleneck' simply wouldn't exist.

The unordinary act of becoming a Soul Exalt was something the average soul cultivator would need twenty to thirty years in order to succeed. If they were talented, perhaps a little over ten years would suffice.

Of course, those who were considered 'geniuses' were of a different nature entirely. There were a great deal of people of that category who were able to make a breakthrough in less than ten years.

The fact that Bai Yunfei's progression halted at the late-stage Soul Ancestor level gave Zi Jin and the others a feeling of respite. His progression up to that point was a pleasant surprise, but him getting any stronger was a serious point of concern to them. Every realm of strength was the byproduct of both strength and experience. It required self-discipline and preparation in order to

advance. To try and break through without either one would be akin to building a house without properly setting the foundation.

The majority of the past two years were spent trying to grow even stronger. Thus, his crafting skill had been neglected. That didn't mean to say Bai Yunfei didn't work on his crafting. Thanks to the Dual Flame Arts, his success while crafting went up by a substantial amount, and in that time, he was able to craft a plethora of soul armaments.

With his current strength, he was able to craft mid-earth tier soul armaments, but nothing higher.

However, the Crafting School had its regulations, and these regulations stated that all students of the school had to contribute a portion of their soul armaments based on the amount of materials they borrowed from the school stock. Bai Yunfei was no exception to this rule. Aside from the few soul armaments he used frequently, Bai Yunfei had to give away the newer ones he made, but that wasn't too much of a loss.

He simply couldn't use a good amount of the soul armaments, so losing them wasn't a problem. Bai Yunfei kept the more powerful soul armaments, and he spent many days trying his best to study and upgrade them...

What Bai Yunfei had said to Zhang Yunpeng about him coming to the Soulbeast Forest was in fact true. He really was here as an order from his master, Zi Jin. Normally, students of the Crafting School were forbidden from going to the Soulbeast Forest unless they were a Soul Exalt, but Bai Yunfei was by no means normal. Zi Jin felt him to be more than ready to tackle on the forest, so he had Bai Yunfei head straight there in hopes that he could find a soulbeast to contract.

However, Bai Yunfei had been given a secondary order from his master.

Unless Bai Yunfei became a Soul Exalt, he was not to leave the

## Soulbeast Forest...

Neither of the two orders were contested by Bai Yunfei. On the contrary, the Soulbeast Forest had interested Bai Yunfei, and he was excited to visit it. Ever since Jiang Fan had come back a year ago with a six-tailed firefox, Bai Yunfei had been extremely envious of him. He longed to see the day where he'd find a soulbeast, so when the master commanded him to go, Bai Yunfei went without a word. He embarked on this dangerous trip.

On the topic of soulbeast partners, most of the elders back in the Crafting School actually had one, but they rarely came out. For example, Bai Yunfei once saw Huangfu Nan's soulbeast partner, which was a rather inconspicuous winged tortoise.

On the other hand, Bai Yunfei had heard rumors that elder Cang Yu's soulbeast had died twenty years ago...

.....

Back in the inn where Zhang Yunpeng and the others were, Bai Yunfei was about to find a room to retire for the night when he coincidentally met up with the group again. Together, they talked with each other over a nice meal before finally resting for the night.

Later that night, Bai Yunfei was startled awake by the furious roar of a soulbeast. When he rushed out of his room, he realized that it was yet another soulbeast invasion.

This time, the ones who would take the brunt of this invasion would be Wang Kun and his group, who were still celebrating around a bonfire just outside the town.

The soulbeasts this time were two early-stage class five soulbeasts that could fly!!

Bai Yunfei hadn't even gotten close to the outskirts of town when the battle started. The soul cultivators there were panicked at first, but they quickly fell into rhythm when faced with the soulbeasts.

Despite not having any Soul Exalts, they still had plenty of ways to fight a monster that could fly. In time, rope darts and bursts of energy soared from the ground in an attempt to either ensnare or straight-up kill the soulbeasts.

On the other side, Wang Kun slammed his sword down, beheading the other soulbeast when it had dived at him.

Those who weren't fighting, like Bai Yunfei, only watched the fight. There was no point in joining the fight, and once the battle was over, they'd return back to their rooms to rest.

Something like this wasn't new to such people.

In just the span of a single day, two soulbeasts came to attack. Bai Yunfei had to admit, this place deserved to be called the Soulbeast Forest. What the empire called the soulbeasts from the mountains or forest were quite rare to come across, but that wasn't true here.

There wasn't a need to go hunting for any soulbeast, they'd come straight to the doorstep of the town instead.

A disparity existed between the soulbeasts here and the soulbeasts Bai Yunfei was familiar with. Soulbeasts such as the red magiboar, the quickshade bird, and even the riverchurning rat Hong Yin introduced to him back in Jadewillow City. The soulbeasts he had seen today didn't seem to hold much sentience and were more primal in nature. Aside from the ones soul cultivators raised, soulbeasts wouldn't have much sentience until they joined the sixth class.

.....

Bai Yunfei stayed within the town for two more days since Zhang Yunpeng's friend still wasn't here. For the most part, he studied the map of the forest to the best of his ability, but there was a problem. Since the map was more detailed, his mind hurt even more due to its complexity.

At the very least, he understood a decent portion of the more



relevant places.

These two days were peculiar in one aspect; the soulbeasts never stopped coming. With the introduction of the first two attacks, there was a total of ten attacks over the course of three days. The very weakest soulbeast was only a class four one, and the strongest one had been a late-stage class five soulbeast which took the combined might of Wang Kun and another mercenary group to kill it before it could enter the town.

At first, Bai Yunfei thought these attacks were normal, but with each attack, Bai Yunfei noticed that the atmosphere in the town was starting to change. No longer were people feeling at ease like they had been three days ago.

Many of them now wore pensive looks on their faces.

Somehow, it seemed as though something unusual was slowly creeping up on them...

## Chapter 368: An Unexpected Crisis!

---

In the afternoon on the fourth day Bai Yunfei had been in this town—

After finishing a night's worth of training, Bai Yunfei walked down to get some food when he saw Zhang Yunpeng and the others already there. Shouting out to them, Bai Yunfei moved for their table.

“Eh? Brother Zhang, this monkey is...” Only after sitting down did Bai Yunfei realize the golden monkey sitting on the stool next to Zhang Yunpeng. Its hands were holding an apple that it was trying to bite. When Zhang Yunpeng called out to Bai Yunfei before, the monkey had bared its teeth at Bai Yunfei in some sort of greeting.

“Haha, this is my soulbeast partner, Xiao Kong. It's a mid-stage class five golden-eyed macaque.” Zhang Yunpeng affectionately scratched the monkey's head.

This time, the monkey stopped moving when it was introduced. Standing up on the stool, it arched its back slightly at the waist as if bowing to to say, “Please treat me well.”

“Err...” Slightly astonished that the monkey would even bow, Bai Yunfei coughed once to hide his emotions, “Haha, nice to meet you, Xiao Kong...”

“A golden-eyed macaque? Is it related to the golden-eyed ape?” The eyes of the macaque were golden in color, causing Bai Yunfei to think back to the golden-eyed ape he had met back in Jadewillow City. It had originally been the soulbeast puppet of one of the Beast Taming School members, but Hong Ying ‘stole’ it later.

“Oh? You know about the golden-eyed ape, brother Bai?”

“Yes. I've met one before, but it was only a class five.”

“Well, the two share a bit of the same blood since they’re known to live with one another, but there’s a stark difference between the two if you disregard their affinity for metal. The golden-eyed ape is powerful but slow while the golden-eyed macaque is quick and nimble.”

“Why haven’t I seen this macaque before?”

“Haha, that’s because I let it play around in the Soulbeast Forest. This place is its home, so it was excited to go back when we got here. Xiao Kong only came back to me this morning.”

“I see...” Bai Yunfei nodded, but something was still bugging him, “It went into the forest by itself? Aren’t you afraid that someone else might capture it?”

“That’s not too much of a concern,” Zhang Yunpeng pointed at the golden band around Xiao Kong’s left arm. “It’s normal for most soul cultivators to give their soulbeasts something to mark them as contracted. Furthermore, it’s customary to not make contracts with already contracted soulbeasts. Should anything happen to Xiao Kong, the bond I share with it would let me know right away.”

It was all making sense now. Bai Yunfei had already noticed several soul cultivators’ soulbeasts. Each one of them had at least one piece of article on their being. Prior to this, Bai Yunfei had only thought it to be some sort of fashion statement.

“Ah, has there been any news of your friend? Haven’t you heard anything about him in the past two days? Or has something come up?”

An apologetic look appeared on Zhang Yunpeng’s face, “I... I’m not sure. My friend has a habit of doing as he pleases, I’m sorry to say...”

“I bet you that guy is lost somewhere!” Suddenly, Kun spoke from his seat, “I told you all that we should’ve had him travel with

me or let him go first! He wasn't here when I was, and I didn't meet him on the road, who knows where he could be...

“But still, his sense of direction has always been crappy. If he missed his turn, he'll just go all the way around again. He should be here within the next day or two.”

Noticing the confusion on Bai Yunfei's face, Zhang Yunpeng smiled, “Our last companion is Kun's good friend. They grew up together and are basically family. Kun's right, however, it should only take one or two days more before he arrives.

Clarity struck Bai Yunfei when Kun made mention that this person's sense of direction was quite off. Feeling nothing but sympathetic camaraderie, Bai Yunfei replied, “That's no problem. I'm fine with waiting...”

The conversation after that was quite light as they ate their meal, but just as Bai Yunfei was about to drink the rest of his congee...

“Eh?” In the midst of Zhang Yunpeng's explanation of the terrain in the Soulbeast Forest, Bai Yunfei's eyebrows perked up. The congee in his bowl was rippling in an increasing staccato. Unsure of what this meant, Bai Yunfei thought for a moment.

Then, he felt it!

The ground underneath him was shaking!

“What's going on?”

The question had only just been asked when a loud roar followed almost immediately afterwards.

“Another attack?”

Then his soulsense warned him of the incoming danger, “This... this isn't right! We should take a look outside!!”

Zhang Yunpeng was the next to notice the situation. Blanching in the face as he felt the tremors, he rose to his feet, but Bai Yunfei was already running out of the inn.

“Hey...” Ye Zi looked first at the running Bai Yunfei and then back to Zhang Yunpeng. From what she could see, Zhang Yunpeng had indeed noticed something was amiss as well, but...

“Yunpeng, is Yunfei’s soulsense stronger than yours!?” Kun exploded with a question.

“Now’s not the time for that. Hurry up and get outside!” Zhang Yunpeng rushed out of the inn.

.....

When Bai Yunfei leaped onto the roof of the inn, the figures of several others were just starting to climb up as well. They all looked off in the direction of the source of the tremors.

What caught everyone’s eyes were two small blurs of blue and purple running toward the town with all their might. Aura blazed around their bodies as they ran, and they looked... extremely beaten up!!

“Isn’t that... isn’t that the captain of the Violet Bolt Mercenaries!?”

“It is! That’s ‘Thunderlord’ Xing Lei!! An early-stage Soul Exalt! He looks... beaten up?!”

“And him, to the side! That’s ‘Frostblade’ Zhao Lengya, captain of the Frozen Heaven Mercenaries! He’s a late-stage Soul Exalt! So why... so why does he look like he’s about to fall over!?”

Cries of shock followed the confirmation of the two people running toward the village. Meanwhile, the one named Xing Lei managed to let loose a loud warning:

“Code black! Code black! A... a wave is here!!”

His warning was amplified due to the energy put into it, making it loud enough for everyone in the town to hear loud and clear.

Several of the townspeople instantly went white in the face while others, like Bai Yunfei, looked clueless to what was going on.

Several people nearby quickly explained the situation since they realized the severity of the situation.

A wave... was when soulbeasts gathered together to strike like a tidal wave!!

Farther away in the deep thickets of the Soulbeast Forest, two giant blobs of black could be seen. The tremors were originating from these blobs and were quickly increasing in magnitude.

When the blobs drew closer and closer to the town, everyone could see that they were filled with soulbeasts!!

Soulbeasts of every form and color charged in one after another with nothing but loud and terrifying roars coming from them. Not only were they coming in large droves, they were coming in fast as well! Not even a minute had passed since Bai Yunfei first saw them, yet the wave was already halfway to the town!

“God dammit! Dammit all! How could this happen!? Why did a wave of soulbeasts decide to attack now of all times!?”

A stream of curses erupted from the mouth of a nearby soul cultivator, drawing the attention of everyone and starting a chain reaction of flustered cries.

“What’s going on!? What’s happening here!?”

“A soulbeast wave! They only happen once every hundred years!”

“Class three, class four... and even class five! Why are there so many of them!?”

“Good heavens! What’s that in the middle?! It... it looks like a class six three-eyed devil!! A class six soulbeast!”

“.....”

One after another, each soul cultivator started to pale as the situation sunk in. Not even saying a single word, some of them were already starting to run away as fast as possible...

All of a sudden, a powerful burst of soulforce came from the sky

above the town. Looking up, everyone saw two streaks of green and red flying across the sky!

With everyone's attention on him, the elderly man flying in the red light looked down at everyone. "If you don't wish to die, prepare to fight!"

# Chapter 369: A Wave of Soulbeasts!

---

“If you wish to run, then run for the gates before they close! But, in accordance to the rules of the guild, those who run will forever be barred from our services! Those who stay and fight will be rewarded by the officials of Praestia Pass two times what they’ve killed!”

Each word spoken by this elderly man was clearly heard by the crowd below.

“Just running away blindly won’t save you from a soulbeast wave! Reinforcements from Praestia Pass will come to fight the wave off!”

“Make your decision!” He paused to give everyone a moment.

These two men flying overhead were the ones in charge of the guild in this small town. They were the strongest people the town had to offer.

The man who had spoken was a late-stage Soul Exalt, and the person in green next to him was a mid-stage Soul Exalt. The Braves Guild had been founded by the officials of Praestia Pass, so it went without saying that the workers of the guild were also officials.

Furthermore, they were people of the Tianhun School. The words the old man had spoken also represented the Tianhun School.

A few precious seconds passed before almost a thousand roars of laughter echoed through the town.

“Hah! A soulbeast wave that comes once every several hundred years? Since I was so lucky to see it, why should I run? We who go into the Soulbeast Forest now just need to stay here and the soulbeasts will come running to us! I’ll kill them all to my heart’s content!!”

“Well said! A soulbeast wave? So what! We’re over a thousand



men strong! Are we really going to let soulbeasts trample us!?”

“There’s too many soulbeasts to even consider running away! Everyone, fighting together will secure our lives! We’ve no shortage of strong people here! We’ll push these soulbeasts back and restore peace to this town!”

“Those who’re Soul Warriors and under, take all the commoners into the guild! Think before you act!”

“Cutthroat Mercenaries! Prepare for battle!”

“Hear me, Sky Soaring Mercenaries! Prepare for battle!”

“We of the Iron Fist Mercenaries, stand at attention and prepare to fight!”

“There’s no escape for us, only battle!”

The sanctity of a soul cultivator was not so easily shaken, especially those who managed to overcome their fears to reach this place. The braves were no stranger to the dangers of soulbeasts, and they feared less than what a regular soul cultivator might.

Indeed, what they saw in front of them wasn’t enough to make them flee in terror.

Fleeing wasn’t the best option to begin with. Sticking together was the most optimal strategy, and with two airborne Soul Exalts, morale was at an all time high.

There were, of course, dissenters; people who didn’t contain the same amount of confidence as the others, but they were small in number and had already fled.

The frontmost part of the soulbeast wave was already near the gates of the town where the soul cultivators were priming themselves for a fight. Leading the front of the wave were two giant flying soulbeasts!

A late-stage class five, armored owl!

And a late-stage class five, four-winged elephant!

Both soulbeasts were of abnormal sizes. The armored owl had a wingspan almost fifty meters long and the four-winged elephant was practically a mountain! They both flew low to the ground, but not toward the same destination. The four-winged elephant was flying to the left borders of the town while the armored owl was heading straight for the gates!

These soulbeasts weren't aiming for the town, so the two didn't slow when they approached the town.

However, the armored owl was clearly being blocked by the people in the town and felt that these humans posed a threat. Rather than take a detour around the town, it let loose a shrill hoot and immediately flew in for an attack!

"Hmph!" The gray-robed elder who had spoken to the crowd first made his move. Nodding to the other man next to him, the two sped straight for the two soulbeasts!

An ominous glint was in the owl's eyes as it sped up. Its entire body was filled with a metallic light as it gathered the elemental metal in the world to serve as armor. From head to tail, its entire body was basked in a golden light that made the owl look like one giant arrow, aiming to strike down the elder blocking its flight!

"I can see fear in its eyes. What on earth is happening in the forest to cause it to run away in such a panic?" The elder muttered. He had a pensive look in his eyes. He didn't look as though he cared that he was on the verge of being attacked.

He disregarded those thoughts, "Whatever the reason, I cannot allow you to enter the city. You'll be dying here!"

His right hand stretched up, summoning a one-and-a-half-meter-long longsword of unusual shape. There was a hum of energy as it started to light up in a blaze of glorious fire. When all the elemental fire was fully gathered, the man was ready to strike. Raising his sword even higher, he delivered a mighty slash to the owl!

“Clink!!”

The metallic clang of sword hitting metal was made evident as the old man’s sword slammed onto the owl’s head!

“Crack...” There was a distinct cracking sound when the bright red light from the elder’s sword pushed its way into the owl’s armor. The red line continued to push its way through the owl and its armor. Without another screech, the owl was bisected in two!

Simultaneously, there was another flare of energy accompanied by an earth-shaking explosion. Turning their heads, everyone saw the four-winged elephant smash into a crater ten meters deep. It didn’t get back up.

The elder in green stood above the crater by borrowing the power of the elemental winds. Slowly bringing back his right hand, he moved back to the other elder’s side.

These two class five soulbeasts had been killed in single strikes!!

“Don’t worry about the sides of the town, focus on defending the front! Don’t let any of them storm the town! We must protect the town from the soulbeasts at all costs!” The elder in gray commanded before jettisoning off for the wave of soulbeasts.

Slaying the two soulbeasts in a single move had motivated all the soul cultivators who witnessed the act. Shouting in unison with one another, they began to channel their own soulforce and elements before following the two elders into battle.

“How... how strong!!”

Bai Yunfei’s eyes slowly drifted away from the corpse of the armored owl. He looked back at the two Soul Exalts walking in the air. His eyes were shining bright. This was the first time he’d ever seen or even heard of a soulbeast wave, so his reaction was slower than most. Taking in the sight of the soul cultivators already charging into battle, he looked at Zhang Yunpeng, “Boss Zhang, what should we do?”

“What to do?” Zhang Yunpeng repeated with a smile, “We fight, of course! Don’t tell me you want to run away?”

He wasn’t the only person raring to go for a fight. Even Kun and Zhou Feng looked like they’d burst into action any second now, and Ye Zi radiated a similar look of impatience.

No one seemed to want to run away in this group.

Extending his arm, Zhang Yunpeng retrieved his two-meter-long metallic staff, “Will you be fighting, brother Bai?”

“Haha, do you think I’m some sort of coward, boss Zhang?” A laugh involuntarily escaped Bai Yunfei’s mouth, “Since I’ve joined your team, of course I’ll help you fight this battle! There’s already so many soul cultivators here, so defending the town together is the best option anyways.”

“Haha! Alright then! My opinion of you hasn’t been wrong, brother Bai! Let us fight and kill and be merry then! An opportunity like this comes only once in a lifetime!” Whooping loudly, Zhang Yunpeng brought his staff up and started the charge, leading his team into battle.

The battle between soulbeast and humanity was already breaking out when Zhang Yunpeng and his team joined the fray. The combined powers of over a thousand soul cultivators was equivalent to an iron wall that the soulbeasts simply couldn’t tear down, so they fought viciously to open a hole in the wall.

However, the soul cultivators couldn’t simply contain the entirety of the soulbeast wave. The town was small, but the wall of soul cultivators could only guard the front of the town. Thus, plenty of soulbeasts still managed to slip through the sides and enter the town from the back.

“Xiao Kong and I are heading for the front, Kun and Zhou Feng, you two follow me! Ye Zi, you’ll be providing support! Xiao Yan and brother Bai, since you two are weaker, you’ll wait in the back;

kill any soulbeast you can, like the ones that are injured already!” A list of orders started to be relayed as they approached the battlefield. “Don’t die! Reinforcements will be coming soon. We just need to protect the town, so ignore the soulbeasts running to the sides!

“Everyone clear? We’ll b—wha? Brother Bai, what are you doing?” Right as Zhang Yunpeng was about to charge forward to start fighting, he realized that Bai Yunfei had suddenly stopped moving.

“The perimeter...” Bai Yunfei’s eyes scanned the area around them for a moment before looking to the where some of the soulbeasts were running to. “Oh no! Xiao Yi!”

“Brother Bai, what are yo—” Confused, Zhang Yunpeng was about to ask for clarification when Bai Yunfei’s next action took the words out of his mouth.

Bai Yunfei waved his hand once, retrieving a bright-green long sword that hovered by his side. Leaping onto the sword in a flash of light, he and the sword then took off into the sky in a burst of green light!

“Tha—” Kun’s eyes were wide open as he stared down the green trail left behind by Bai Yunfei, “Fly—flying sword? Is he... is he running away!?”

Zhou Feng shook his head, “I don’t think so. Didn’t you see where he’s flying off to?” A bewildered expression was on his face a well.

“The direction?” Kun repeated before realizing what Zhou Feng meant, “That direction is... oh! Don’t tell me Bai Yunfei’s planning to...”

“He said ‘Xiao Yi’ just now, didn’t he? Isn’t that the name of the kid who wanted some stargrass a few days ago?” Zhang Yunpeng interjected, “Is... is he planning on saving that village?!”

# Chapter 370: Battle Determination

---

Up in the sky, the elder in green had just bisected another three early-stage class five bee giants in two. His eyes caught the sight of Bai Yunfei flying in a different direction, causing him to mutter, “A flying soul armament? It’s not a very weak one either...”

“But only a late-stage Soul Sprite? Is he the heir to a major family? What is he...”

“Forget about him and focus on fighting.” The other Soul Exalt cut in as he delivered another sword stroke to the crowd of soulbeasts in front of him. Finding time to speak as he brought his sword back, he continued, “We don’t have time to think about people flying away right now. The warnings of this sudden wave were far too subtle. The officials didn’t care about it at first. We’re the first line of defense, so we must protect even a small town like this! Reinforcements will come quickly! There will be enough to stop the wave!”

The elder in green paused for a moment, studying the torrent of soulbeasts. “There has to be several tens of thousands of soulbeasts here, a soulbeast wave indeed... legends have it that the last one two hundred years ago resulted in the deaths of more than half the people in Beast Suppression Pass. I never imagined that I’d be the one fighting against a wave...”

He sighed, but his movements didn’t waver. Three blades of wind later, the elder managed to save several soul cultivators who were about to die to a soulbeast.

Not much time had passed since the battle first started, but the battleground was unbelievably fierce with roars and explosions coming from everywhere. Some soul cultivators were charging forward to clash with soulbeasts without reason, but most soul cultivators were well-versed in fighting in conjunction with others. Many of them were in teams that emphasized team

fighting, allowing them to fight in ways that covered both offense and defense, not allowing any soulbeasts to advance.

But... this was only the start of the battle...

.....

Twenty kilometers away from the town, a village of thirty could be seen.

This area was where the most basic commoners gathered, the lowest of the low. Denizens who even Beast Suppression City didn't care to protect the land they lived on. The only places they could live in peace were the places where no other human would dare live or even set foot.

Already over a hundred years in age, this village stood strong with the villagers living a very rudimentary life.

Despite living in proximity to the Soulbeast Forest like the braves, the villagers built their village in a remote area near the entrance of the forest where soulbeasts seldom left. A soulbeast or two might attack every month, but when banded together, the villagers were still strong enough to chase off or even kill a class one or two soulbeast.

When a class three soulbeast arrived, all they could do was run and hide, hoping that the soulbeast would 'have its fun' by destroying the village and going back to the forest when it was done.

The past few days in the village had deviated from the norm. In just the span of two days alone, three separate soulbeasts were seen roaming around. Two more soulbeasts walked around the edge of the village, and one time, a single soulbeast walked straight into the village. It was stronger than what any of the villagers had ever seen before. It completely destroyed two huts and injured several people before walking straight through the village.

Today, the villagers were horrified to discover that a great drove

of soulbeasts were coming their way like a tsunami!

The signs came in the form of an earthquake at first. Another person from the western part of the village was quick enough to notice a drove of soulbeasts in the general area. Due to the relative distance between them and the village, the villagers thought they would be safe for now.

In time, they realized that the wave of soulbeast was only growing bigger and bigger. Eventually, they could determine that the soulbeasts were less than a kilometer away from the village!

And the wave was still growing too!

By the time all of the villagers had gathered in the center plaza, some of the soulbeasts near the edge of the town were already starting to move!

At last, a soulbeast was within the village. A soulbeast, shaped like a rhinoceros, slammed into a hut in the western part of the village, shattering it into pieces. Some debris from the hut struck down an unfortunate few people.

“Mommy... I’m scared...” A young girl bawled as she held the robes of her mother.

“Don’t be afraid, little one. Mommy is here. Daddy will protect us...” Her mother replied quietly, but her voice betrayed the fear she was feeling. It wavered with each word she said and her eyes reflected her terror.

The elderly, women, and children were all hiding in the central most part of the village while all available men were standing guard with weapons at the entrances. All of them were pale with fear. Some of them were even shaking as they clenched their weapons.

Yet, the men were determined.

A house could be torn down and rebuilt, but the lives of their loved ones could not. For that reason, they had to fight!



Xiao Yi was among the children hiding with their mother's. He was being held by a middle-aged woman whose complexion was even worse off than the others due to her ailments, but her hands still held tightly to the hands of her son with amazing strength. "Don't be afraid, Xiao Yi. We'll be fine."

"Okay!" He replied. "You too, mom! Xiao Yi will definitely protect you! We'll all be okay! I still need to get you medicine. Big brother Bai Yunfei already said that he'll bring back some stargrass, so we just need to wait for him to come back and you'll be better!"

As he spoke, his head turned to look in the direction of the Town of the Braves, but all he could see was a horrifying black swarm of soulbeasts...

"Eh? What is... that?" Suddenly, Xiao Yi's eyes widened just marginally when he caught sight of something strange. A spark of green light was flying over to them, approaching at a frightfully fast speed!

Before he could even cry out a warning, the light had already landed on the ground nearby!

"What... what's going on?!" The sudden descent of the green light startled everyone nearby. With all eyes drawn to the light, everyone stared with bated breaths and anxiety-filled faces.

.....

"Phew... am I on time? That's good. The wave hasn't reached here yet..." A single figure came out of the green light, muttering to himself as he inspected the area.

Of the villagers, Xiao Yi was the first to recognize this person. "Big brother Bai Yunfei, it's you!!" He cried out in elation.

Hearing the voice, Bai Yunfei turned to look at Xiao Yi with a smile. "Hey, Xiao Yi. Are you alright?"

"I'm fine!"

“That’s good.” Bai Yunfei remarked. “This must be your mother?” He nodded at the woman behind him.

“Yep!” Xiao Yi nodded, “Mom, this is the big brother Bai Yunfei I told you about!”

Noticing that the mother and son’s hands were still being held tightly with one another, Bai Yunfei understood the situation the village was in. “Xiao Yi, stay with your mother and protect her well.”

“Of course!” An earnest nod was given.

“Haha...” With that taken care of, Bai Yunfei turned to the rest of the villagers who were still looking at him. “Don’t be alarmed, everybody. I came here to help. As long as you can protect this center, I’ll take care of the rest.”

Before anyone could say anything, Bai Yunfei leaped into the air and landed several hundred meters away near the entrance of the forest.

On the way here, Bai Yunfei was worried about what would greet him when he arrived. He thought that village would be in chaos with the soulbeasts attacking, but it seemed that his worries were misplaced.

Despite the relative state of calm the village was experiencing, Bai Yunfei was still doubtful. He originally planned on grabbing Xiao Yi and his mother and taking them away from this place, but his plans had changed.

He couldn’t just take the mother and son away, he’d have to protect the entire village to the best of his ability.

He wouldn’t go as far as to protect the village with his life, but expending all of his energy was a good compromise. As long as he possessed the energy, he wouldn’t allow any soulbeast to harm anyone standing behind him.

Cracking his knuckles with a satisfying pop, Bai Yunfei started to

mutter to himself. “It’s a good thing that this is the very edge of the soulbeast wave. It won’t be as crazy here as is in the town...

“This will be a good test to see how strong I’ve gotten in the last two years!”

The Fire-tipped Spear materialized with a swing of his right hand. Pointing its tip at the incoming soulbeast, Bai Yunfei was ready to fight—

The soulbeasts would face his determination to battle!

# Chapter 371: A One Man Wall!

---

“Roar!!”

The bestial roar of a tiger reverberated through the forest before that tiger pounced straight for Bai Yunfei. It was a violet-striped thunder tiger; a relatively weak soulbeast due to it being a late-stage class three soulbeast.

When it noticed a single human not running away from it, the tiger decided to continue on its path to attack it. With a pounce and a roar, it threw itself upon Bai Yunfei!

“You’re just a senseless beast that only knows how to kill humans. You’ll be dying today!” Faced with the bloody maw of the incoming tiger, Bai Yunfei’s eyes narrowed together. He icily stared at it. With a grunt, he slightly shifted his foot back and waited for a claw to swing at him. With the Fire-tipped Spear whistling forward, he jabbed it into the right side of the tiger’s hip!

“Pow!” There was a muffled pop before the giant tiger flew backwards through the air. Blood sprinkled out of the wound left by Bai Yunfei’s spear, and with a resounding crash, the tiger fell to the ground.

It didn’t get back up!

As soon as he smashed the first soulbeast back, another three mid-stage class four soulbeasts assaulted him. The spear in Bai Yunfei’s hand twirled violently before lashing out thrice.

“Whoosh!”

“Whoosh!”

“Whoosh!”

The spear efficiently stabbed the throats of the three soulbeasts.

On the third stab, the explosive effect of the spear activated and blew the three soulbeasts into bloody pieces!

The bloody fragments of its fellow soulbeasts still hadn't fallen to the ground when another mid-stage class four soulbeast came from the right side to attack. Shifting his feet just slightly, Bai Yunfei flew twenty meters away and sent the soulbeast to its death with a single kick.

His right arm extended out, revealing the Compliant Rope that was hidden within his sleeve. It flew forward before wrapping around the claws of a two-headed vulture before it could dive into Bai Yunfei. Even though it wasn't near enough to harm the villagers, Bai Yunfei decided to play it safe and kill the vulture. Whether it be a ground-roaming soulbeast or a sky-faring one, Bai Yunfei wouldn't permit any soulbeast to encroach on the village!

With the rope tightening around his clenched fist, Bai Yunfei gave a mighty pull. The force of his pull was so much that the two-headed vulture didn't even have the time to flap its wings. With barely even a squawk, it crashed into the ground and was ultimately reduced to paste!

"An early-stage class five stinger elephant!" While he was dealing with the two-headed vulture, another giant soulbeast was about to crush several male villagers to death!

Bai Yunfei only recognized the soulbeast because of its stinger. When Bai Yunfei identified it, the elephant let loose a mighty roar before it swung its tail with its tip ready to stab into Bai Yunfei. Flying forward like a brilliant bolt of violet lightning, the stinger looked as though it would pierce straight through him!

The elephant's trunk was brought up, and after concentrating enough elemental earth, the trunk shot out a beam of light!

"A long-ranged attack!" A long-range attack was quite different from a close one. Bai Yunfei could opt to dodge a close attack, but a long-range attack meant that he had no choice but to top it, lest it harm the villagers behind him. Following a pulsation of his Violet Soul Ring, the Cataclysmic Seal flew into view and immediately

erected a ten-meter-wide barrier to stop the beam.

“Boom boom!!” Two simultaneous explosions rocked the village.

The area where Bai Yunfei had been was obscured by the dust kicked up by the explosions. Just two seconds later, when everyone thought that a momentary break would ensue, the dust was illuminated and blown away by a figure in red!

Landing to the right of the elephant, Bai Yunfei swapped his spear to his left hand and pulled his hand back in preparation to punch.

Then, he punched!

“Bang!!”

The first sound heard was the explosion of a fist meeting flesh, and the second was of the mournful cry of the elephant. Following these two sounds, everyone could see a dark indentation in the shape of a fist in the elephant’s hide. Inch by inch, this indentation grew like ripples in calm water.

Then, like a cannonball, the elephant flew off its feet toward the soulbeasts behind it, taking several of them along for the ride before finally crashing to the ground.

Bai Yunfei’s next course of action was to jump into the air, but when he did, three large ducks suddenly opened their bills. Elemental fire started to gather in the space between their bills, preparing to be fired...

“Early-stage class five cannon ducks! They’re also long-range attack beasts!” Bai Yunfei cursed to himself. Rather than panicking, the five fingers on his right hand bent slightly to hold the newly-formed ball of elemental fire made by his Ardent Sun Glove. When it fully formed, he threw it at the three ducks as hard as he could!

“Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!” Three separate daggers of fire were formed from the sphere of fire and shot into their own

individual trajectories!

Despite being made from elemental fire, the three flying daggers looked as real as anything else. They were elemental fire in solid form. The three flying daggers whistled through the air and made contact with the elemental fire being readied by the three ducks!

“Boom! Boom! Boom!!” The flying daggers blew up in a splendid visual of sparks and elemental fire. The ensuing explosion took off the heads of their respective targets, and the remaining corpses fell lifelessly to the ground!

A flying dagger soul skill, the Burstfire Daggers!

This was a type of ‘flying dagger’ outlined in the Flying Dagger Compendium. It couldn’t be ‘crafted’ due since it needed to be formed by elemental fire alone, but forming one was harder than it looked since it required a mastery of both soulforce and elemental fire.

Thanks to the Dual Flame Arts and the Art of Firebending, Bai Yunfei was able to accomplish this otherwise impossible task.

One of the greatest features of this dagger was the fact that it was intangible! It could be formed at will and would explode upon contact for an utterly powerful blow!!

If Bai Yunfei combined this flying dagger with the additional effect of his Ardent Sun Glove, the power would increase even more!

“Tzk!” His spear slammed down to skewer a centipede-like soulbeast burrowing through the ground.

Bai Yunfei looked around. There didn’t seem to be any soulbeasts within a hundred meters...

In no time at all, the first round of soulbeasts had been killed refreshingly quick!

Of course, this was only the beginning...

Bai Yunfei only had ten seconds to rest before another few dozen soulbeasts came forward!

Bai Yunfei looked at the tens of thousands of soulbeasts to the west, and then glanced back at the dozens of soulbeasts in front of him.

“Good thing this place is the most ‘relaxed’ part of the wave! Let’s go!”

With spear in hand and the Cataclysmic Seal protecting his side, Bai Yunfei rushed to meet the first soulbeast head-on!

Whichever soulbeast came forward first would end up as Bai Yunfei’s target. He would defend himself with the Cataclysmic Seal and would return any attack with his Fire-tipped Spear. Whenever a soulbeast was stabbed straight through with the spear, Bai Yunfei would try to activate the spear’s additional effects once the cooldown was down. Bai Yunfei had flying daggers of all shapes and size ready to beat down any soulbeast trying who tried to attack or escape into the village.

It took Bai Yunfei ten minutes to beat back the second round of soulbeasts, but no breathing room was given before the third round was upon him!!

Bai Yunfei had to fight more soulbeasts each round. Luckily, there were many weaker soulbeasts, more than half the soulbeasts were class four at most. All the class five soulbeasts he saw now were of the early and mid-stage. He had only seen a single late-stage class five soulbeast since the battle had begun.

A snake-tailed scorpion took a single Eighty-one Fold Fist Force from Bai Yunfei before being beaten into the ground.

The area around Bai Yunfei was like an invisible maelstrom. Any soulbeast that dared enter the ‘zone,’ a circle with a two-hundred-meter circumference, was struck down without mercy. Any soulbeast that tried to enter the village was slaughtered straight



away!

“Boom!!” A single Flame-winged Dagger brought down a mid-stage class five cavern bat and smote it into ashes, leaving behind only a red soulgem on the ground.

“Huuu... hu...” Several gasps for breath came from Bai Yunfei. He wiped away the sweat on his forehead and tried to regain his breath, but he was exhausted. None of the soulbeasts were on the same level of strength as he was, but two hours of constant fighting was taking its toll on his body. He was feeling the consequences of battle even as someone who had more soulforce than the average soul cultivator at his level.

Bai Yunfei sucked in a deep breath of air in relief when he noticed that no soulbeasts were coming toward the village for now. He was trying hard to regain his soulforce and looked down at his left hand with a slight smile.

On the ring finger of his left hand sat a milky-white jade ring shaped like a small cloud.

It was Tang Xinyun’s soulbound armament, the Yun’s Soul Ring.

Prior to his departure from the Crafting School, Tang Xinyun gave him the ring. She said if he wore the ring, it would feel as if she was traveling by his side...

“Skreee!!”

A voice...

No, a high-pitched shrill broke Bai Yunfei from his thoughts. Looking up, Bai Yunfei could see a purple mist and a dark-green ‘stream’ rushing toward the village!

“Violetmist bats! And poisonous jumping rats!!”

The pupils in Bai Yunfei’s eyes contracted in recognition of the two soulbeasts. Of the two soulbeasts, neither were very strong, the strongest being class four at the very most, but the problem lay

with their numbers.

There may very well be hundreds or thousands of these soulbeasts!

This time, Bai Yunfei couldn't rely on the Fire-tipped Spear, the Flameblade Bracer, or the flying daggers. He had to deal with this problem in a different way.

It took two seconds for Bai Yunfei to come up with a solution. Since he couldn't use the enlarging effect of the Cataclysmic Seal to deal with these soulbeasts, Bai Yunfei decided to go with another option.

He smiled.

“Since that's the case, it's a good time to see how strong 'that' skill is!!”

# Chapter 372: Dual Desert Eagles and Gun Fu

---

When Bai Yunfei was preparing to depart from the Crafting School and head to the Soulbeast Forest, he was gifted a scroll from his master, Zi Jin. The scroll contained information about many soulbeasts. It was akin to an encyclopedia. Every soulbeast recorded inside was meticulously researched.

The violetmist bat was a soulbeast of the lightning affinity. While it could absorb elemental lightning, it couldn't use it as a form of attack. Instead, what it used to attack was poison! It could expel a large amount of purple powder from its purple fur with a tinge of elemental lightning to strengthen the poison!

Violetmist bats were only as big as one's palm, so the poison they carried wasn't by any means a large amount, but what it lacked in poison it made up with numbers! They didn't gather in trifling amounts of hundreds, but in the thousands! Thousands of violetmist bats could sprinkle their poison in a concentrated area to kill absolutely anything near them!

Of the many soulbeasts in the forest, there were a few soulbeasts that weren't affected by its poison at all. The poisonous jumping rat was one of those few soulbeasts. This water affinity soulbeast was adept in poison as well! A poison constantly festered within these soulbeasts. It was dark-green in color and could evaporate into a poisonous fog! Furthermore, these rats could inject poison in people via their fangs. These rats were commonly seen hopping forward and were well-suited to travel with the violetmist bats. Wherever the violetmist bats were, the poisonous jumping rats were not too far away!

Today, Bai Yunfei was the one unfortunate enough to face thousands of both species.

While he was fortunate that they were only class four soulbeasts, there was still far too many of them...

The average Soul Ancestor would have to flee if they didn't want to die if faced with this swarm. Even a Soul Exalt would have a headache trying to deal with this problem.

This problem was something that Bai Yunfei could solve. Of the many solutions available to him, the easiest one would be to use the Cataclysmic Seal and smash the swarm. Through this method, not even a housefly would be able to escape.

However, this method possessed a flaw.

Using the Cataclysmic Seal to smash everything required more soulforce than he'd like to give and was slightly overkill for this situation.

Plus, he had yet another solution that'd fit the bill.

"Well then, how about I try out 'that' then!"

Bai Yunfei's eyes lit up at the prospect of testing out 'that.' His lips curled into a smile as he watched the incoming soulbeasts that were traveling by air and by land. His left hand shook once to put away the Fire-tipped Spear. Then, as a sign of warm-up for what he was about to do, Bai Yunfei cracked his neck and narrowed his eyes.

Both of his hands shook before he raised them parallel to the ground.

One hand held a red soul armament while the other held a violet soul armament.

The soul armaments Bai Yunfei was holding in his hands wouldn't be recognized by any person in this world, but if he was in the other world, everyone would recognize what they were.

What Bai Yunfei carried was a pair of pistols!

That's right. Bai Yunfei was holding a pair of pistols!

Anyone from the other world would be able to recognize the model of these pistols as well, for they possessed a mighty name.

## The Desert Eagle!

Author Note: I won't describe the Desert Eagle since the descriptions on Wikipedia were a bit boring to me. Should any reader have interest, please take a look yourself. Just know that Bai Yunfei is using them.

These were the new 'soul armaments' that Bai Yunfei had spent the last two years 'designing!' At last, he had finished them! His tribulations had been many and hard, but he was able to recreate one from his memories of the model.

There was a difference between the Desert Eagle he was using and the ones from his memories.

For example, his used a completely different type of bullet...

The Desert Eagle in his left hand shined with a violet light, indicating that it was made primarily from materials favoring the lightning element (hereby known as the 'Lightning Eagle'). The one in his right exuded a faint amount of elemental fire, making it a soul armament of the fire affinity (hereby known as the 'Fire Eagle').

These two 'Desert Eagles' that Bai Yunfei had crafted could be called his biggest profit in the field of crafting. He had spent the most time crafting them with many iterations and failures.

He ultimately found a rare type of material that'd help him craft a better version of the soul armaments. After asking his master, Zi Jin, those materials were found and given to him to craft with.

In the end, only three successful Desert Eagles were made with the limited materials he had. There was still one more, the 'Golden Desert Eagle,' but that one exploded when he tried upgrading it past +10. Thus, he didn't upgrade the next two Desert Eagles beyond +10.

As mentioned before, the strongest soul armament Bai Yunfei was capable of making was only a mid-earth tier soul armament.

These two Desert Eagles were both mid-earth tier soul armaments, but since they were upgraded to +10, their attack power was as strong as a high-earth tier soul armament.

But...

It seemed nigh impossible for Bai Yunfei to ward off the thousands of soulbeasts coming at him with just these two pistols alone. Even though the pistols shot bullets made of elemental energy rather than solid material, an infinite amount of ammunition still wouldn't be enough.

There was something in these two pistols that gave Bai Yunfei confidence. Confidence that stemmed from the memories of when he first used 'that' with the Desert Eagles...

.....

Bai Yunfei looked to the incoming swarm of soulbeasts while his hands tightly gripped the dual Desert Eagles. He closed his eyes and slowly exhaled. His right foot took half a step back while his left hand tilted forty-five degrees down so that the muzzle pointed at the ground. His right arm was held to his side at ear-level for him to aim and fire.

Anyone that looked at him now would remark that his posture was strange.

The swarm of rats was already within a hundred meters of Bai Yunfei, ready to drown him in the waves of soulbeasts!

That was when Bai Yunfei struck!

Without even opening his eyes, Bai Yunfei directed his legs to move in a strange way, as if trying to sway between two points within a very small radius. While his swaying movement looked very 'subtle,' his entire person had somehow turned blurry!!

Simultaneously, red and violet balls of light suddenly shot forth from his figure. Like marbles, these balls of light flew forward with frightening speed!

In the blink of an eye, a ‘barrage of bullets’ filled a small circular portion of air in front of Bai Yunfei, flying straight for the swarm!

“Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang...”

A series of concentrated pops could be heard as the ‘bullets’ made from elemental energy tore through any soulbeasts they touched and then the next two or three soulbeasts after! It didn’t matter if the bullets hit a bat or a rat. The bullets destroyed and even reduced the soulbeasts to nothing but ashes after they struck!

In no time at all, more than a hundred soulbeasts had been shot to death. Due to the nature of their deaths, the bats and rats left behind a mist of blood in the air and on the ground!

This was the armament skill Bai Yunfei had invented, gun fu!!

With his impeccable movements, his extreme accuracy and soulsense, and his unlimited bullet-shooting Desert Eagles, Bai Yunfei could take on the swarm without any gaps in his technique!

The wave of soulbeasts stepped over the remnants of the first few, who had been shot to death, with shrill cries as they stormed toward Bai Yunfei, but before ten meters of distance could be crossed, the next wave of soulbeasts were blown apart. Bats dropped from the sky, leaving behind a mist of blood, giving off an extremely eerie sight.

It didn’t matter where the soulbeasts were coming from. They were shot relentlessly and in great numbers. Only those who were fortunate enough to be outside of a hundred-meter radius of Bai Yunfei were spared.

Eventually, the soulbeasts surrounded Bai Yunfei in a large circle. The fact that there was such an empty circle within this swarm of soulbeasts was more than enough to demonstrate the capabilities of Bai Yunfei’s gun fu!

From the countless barrage of elemental bullets being fired, the ones that were violet in color were unmistakably faster than the

red ones. The soulbeasts who were trying to run past Bai Yunfei were shot then, even if they were outside the hundred-meter radius.

The only sanctuary of peace was just the village itself. The bullets of the Desert Eagles covered every other inch of the area. It didn't matter if they were aimed at the sky or the earth...

Not even a minute after the swarm had tried to get past Bai Yunfei, all several thousand soulbeasts were dead—just like that!



# Chapter 373: Dual Flame Arts: Coil!

---

Bai Yunfei stood still within the circle with both arms crossed over each other. A wisp of light was starting to disappear from the two Desert Eagles now that he had stopped firing.

From start to finish, Bai Yunfei hadn't moved more than half a meter from his original spot, and everything within twenty meters of him was without blood.

Beyond those twenty meters was a bloodbath—corpses and blood pooled everywhere!

Two seconds after things had died down, Bai Yunfei's eyes twitched open. Observing the area around him, he looked pleased.

“Used about a third of my soulforce and feels like I just used an Eighty-one Fold Fist Force if I'm not wrong... that's a good result!” Bai Yunfei clutched his Desert Eagles in excitement.

“If that's the case, then I've gained a powerful move for dealing with many enemies. As long as the enemies aren't too strong, they won't be able to stop this move...”

Today was the first day he had tried out his gun fu in actual combat. The results were very pleasing to see.

“Clack.”

His left hand shifted down to reveal the ‘ammunition clip’ of his Lightning Eagle. There was a faint glow from his Violet Soul Ring as soulforce flowed out of the ring and into the clip, refilling it with a new violet luster. Now that the clip had been refuelled, Bai Yunfei tapped the handle of the Lightning Eagle on the clip and pushed it back into the pistol with a clack.

The Fire Eagle was a fire type soul armament. Thus, Bai Yunfei could shoot bullets made from elemental fire straight from his body. However, the Lightning Eagle couldn't do this. It required a special ‘ammunition clip’ made from a lightning type primal stone.

Then by using soulforce to feed the clip, even more ‘bullets’ could be made.

Of the two Deagles, the Fire Eagle technically contained an ‘infinite bullets.’ The Lightning Eagle, while technically housing an infinite stock of bullets as well, had to be reloaded every so often, but reloading didn’t take much time at all.

Like the Lightning Eagle, the Fire Eagle had a clip, but it was in a constant state of being maxed out, so there wasn’t a need to craft any special clips to reload the gun. If Bai Yunfei really wanted to, he could install another elemental clip in his gun to shoot different types of elements, but the power behind those bullets would be weaker since he wasn’t trained in other types of elements.

“Boom!!!”

An ear-deafening explosion reverberated through the air with an accompanying tremor reverberating through the ground. Bai Yunfei’s Eyebrows lifted up in surprise as he turned to the source, only to see a ball of red light form on the horizon.

From what he could see, the red light was taking the shape of a mushroom cloud—

Someone was clearly using a super-strong fire move.

“What an intense battle they’re having over there!” Bai Yunfei sighed, but then he whirled around, “Are the reinforcements here? I didn’t notice them before...”

A large bubble of soulforce was radiating from the direction of the city. All sorts of varying fluctuations of soulforce and elemental energy could be felt for ten kilometers. The strongest of Beast Suppression City had already been deployed and fighting, but due to his concentration, Bai Yunfei hadn’t noticed them until now.

Another wave of soulbeasts was rapidly advancing from several kilometers away, making Bai Yunfei quite glad that the village was

located so far away. If the wave were to hit here rather than there, Bai Yunfei doubted that he'd have the strength to fend them off.

That didn't mean his fight was over just yet. Another small wave of soulbeasts was on its way to the village, forcing Bai Yunfei to run to the west to fight it. Compared to the first soulbeast wave, the amount of soulbeasts coming now was drastically smaller.

"It's over so fast!?" Elation filled Bai Yunfei as he swept the field in front of him with his soulforce.

"This is it... this is the last push!" He thought after two seconds.

As soon as Bai Yunfei's mind fill with glee, another occurrence immediately swept the emotion off his face. He looked up and stared off into the distance without being able to say anything.

"But... but why! Why is something like this showing up only now!?"

Bai Yunfei's nervousness was palpable even with his strength. "If that thing runs over to the village, there won't be anything left of it!" he remarked after looking back at the village.

"Tsk!!"

"Is this the final test? Then bring it on! I can't let something like this scare me! I'll use the Cataclysmic Seal if I have too!" The more he thought to himself, the more determined he felt. The next wave of soulbeasts was nearly within range now, filling Bai Yunfei's eyes with an indomitable willpower, "Good thing this wave is the slowest of them all, so... I'll take care of them first!"

Lifting the two Desert Eagles, Bai Yunfei began to fire at the soulbeasts.

"Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang..."

The red and violet bullets felt more like an individual stream of light than bullets being shot from Bai Yunfei's pistols. In the blink of an eye, another barrage of bullets was already upon the

soulbeasts charging at him. He hadn't revealed another technique of his gun fu, but his rate of fire was much faster and his power was unwavering.

Of these next two hundred soulbeasts, the weakest of the bunch was only a late-stage class four while the strongest were ten late-stage class fives!

When the first barrage struck the soulbeasts, the first ten soulbeasts were reduced to nothing but holes. Some managed to evade with only a few non-fatal wounds while two of the mid-stage class five soulbeasts managed to completely evade all of the bullets!

“Roar!!” From the middle of the barrage, a mid-stage class five tiger let loose a furious roar. A ton of green energy was forming in the space between its jaws.

This was a unique move of the tiger, a roar that could fire off elemental power!

“Bang!!”

Before the tiger could complete its move, an elemental bullet the size of a peanut struck it without warning. The bullet shot into the tiger's jaw and soon made its way out the other side!

Compared to the bullets from before, this lightning bullet was both stronger and faster!

Lightning Eagle stats:

Equipment Grade: Mid Earth  
Elemental Affinity: Lightning  
Upgrade Level: +10  
Attack: 1001  
Additional Attack: 520  
Soul Compatibility: 10%  
+10 Additional Effect: 8% chance to fire a bullet twice as fast and strong.  
Upgrade Requirement: 105 Soulpoints

The fact that the additional effect of the Lightning Eagle had activated didn't seem to catch Bai Yunfei's attention. He continued to let loose bullet after bullet.

Meanwhile, ten bursts of energy were headed in his direction.

Without dodging, Bai Yunfei directed the Cataclysmic Seal to provide a barrier to protect him from the ten bursts.

With countless of bullets aimed at it, another mid-stage class five soulbeast only managed another dozen meters before collapsing to the ground. In just a few seconds, another twenty soulbeasts were struck by the fire bullets.

At last, this round of soulbeasts had finally managed to make it within a hundred meters of Bai Yunfei. At the helm of this group was a golden monitor lizard; any bullet that made contact with its skin was brushed aside, leaving behind only a spark on its seemingly impenetrable scales!!

Despite the imperviousness of its scales, the bullets seemed like they were hurting the lizard. Each time a bullet struck, the lizard would cry out in pain, but these injuries were very small since the lizard continued forward. The eyes of lizard became more bloodshot with each bullet that landed. It seemed like it wished to tear Bai Yunfei from limb to limb.

Subjugating this next round of soulbeasts would be difficult with just these two Desert Eagles. Storing away the two pistols, Bai Yunfei chose not to take out another one of his soul armaments. Instead, he clenched his fists and brought them to his sides. He looked at the soulbeasts and smirked.

“Well then, let's try this move!”

As if responding to his remark, the Cataclysmic Seal shuddered. A fireball the size of an egg flew out. It was the second fireseed essence!

The fireseed transferred resting spots from the Cataclysmic Seal

to Bai Yunfei, powering him up. Feeling the power course through him, Bai Yunfei began to perform a series of complex hand seals. A powerful aura of soulforce exuded from his hand seals in response to his gestures. In just seconds, dozens of hand seals were formed and the powerful elemental fire being melded by them became more and more visible. Before, Bai Yunfei's strength had remained obscured by a mysterious power, but when he started to go form the seals, his strength was revealed to be that of a late-stage Soul Ancestor!

“Dual Flame Arts: ‘Coil’!”

Bai Yunfei shouted aloud as he finished the final seal, and his figure immediately vanished from sight!

The next second, he was on top of the golden monitor lizard's head!

What he had used wasn't the Wave Treading Steps. His figure didn't blur which was a common trait of that skill.

He had instantaneously moved to where the soulbeast was fifty meters away!

The flames that circled Bai Yunfei distorted the air around him with their intense heat. When closely studied, one would be able to see that the flames weren't a single unbroken chain of fire; instead, they were two halves! The color to the flame segments were different as well; the way the two streams of elemental fire behaved together clearly revealed that one was different from the other, like the Jing and the Wei rivers.

“Boom!!”

As soon Bai Yunfei appeared on the golden monitor lizard, he delivered an Eighty-one Fold Fist Force to its head.

“Crack!”

Following the collision, the lizard's head was slammed into the ground, reduced to nothing but paste!!

“Whoosh!” With his right hand came the Fire-tipped Spear, and since the lizard was dead, Bai Yunfei moved on to kill other soulbeasts!

“Roar... boom... bang...”

With each roar came a different explosion as Bai Yunfei killed soulbeast after soulbeast with his spear. Not a single soulbeast was able to get ten meters behind him even the late-stage class five soulbeasts. At most, it only took him three strikes to fully kill each one!!

This round of soulbeasts was stronger than the previous ones, but they died just as quickly!

The strength Bai Yunfei was displaying was no different than that of an... early-stage Soul Exalt!!

# Chapter 374: The Final 'Mountain' of a Soulbeast!

---

The Dual Flame Arts was the invention of a predecessor of the Crafting Schools. It required two fireseed essences and was separated into two chapters.

The first chapter emphasized the 'training' needed to use two fireseeds and how to increase one's strength.

The second chapter emphasized the way to 'battle.' As its name implied, this chapter focused on how to fight using the technique.

The two fireseed essences could support one another and stimulate the body due to the conflict between the two, causing the body to power up even more.

There were two different forms explained in the battle chapter that required the two fireseeds to stimulate the body.

The first form was 'coil.' By adjusting the frequency and intensity of the two fireseeds, elemental fire would wrap around the body and collide to bring forth unbelievable power. In this form, the user would be able to break their limits and increase their strength—the form Bai Yunfei was in right now.

Normally, Bai Yunfei possessed the strength of a late-stage Soul Ancestor, but in this form, he could break the limits and advance past the bottleneck he faced to attain the strength of an early-stage Soul Exalt!

An effect like this really emphasized just how perverse the Dual Flame Arts was.

However, soul skills that had power-boosting effects also came with side-effects. The backlash of a power-boosting soul skill was an extremely important thing to watch for.

But the side-effects for the Dual Flame Arts were practically nil!



In the coil form, Bai Yunfei could persist for half an hour before he'd have to return his second fireseed to the Cataclysmic Seal. Not only did this ignore the backlash that'd normally come to roost, his body wouldn't suffer any effects from using the skill!

This was only if Bai Yunfei remembered to cancel the coil form before it was too late—before he used up all of his soulforce.

The last time Bai Yunfei had used of this form, he had been so caught up in the euphoric feeling of his newfound power that he lost himself to the feeling and used up all his soulforce, leaving him bedridden for a whole day and night...

The Bai Yunfei of today was no stranger to this form. The power he received from breaking through to become a Soul Exalt was already familiar to him. That much could be seen from how quickly he dispatched the soulbeasts.

The step that divided a late-stage Soul Ancestor and a Soul Exalt was essentially the same as the step that was needed to cross from the earth to the heavens. With so much power filling his body, Bai Yunfei felt as though he'd never be able to use it all. His control over elemental fire was far more powerful, and he didn't even need to use the elemental fire in the world, the amount of elemental fire in his body was all he needed.

The speed that came with his newfound strength... the power... the soulsense... everything...

He felt so powerful!

Only one word could be used to describe this feeling: ecstatic!

.....

“Boom!!”

There was another explosion as a burst of elemental fire erupted in the air. Bai Yunfei speared a late-stage class four scythe mantis through the chest before its body was rendered into ashes. Then, in a burst of wind, the ashes scattered over the earth...

Five minutes.

It took just five minutes for over a hundred class four soulbeasts, dozens of class five soulbeasts, and nearly a dozen late-stage class five soulbeasts to be reduced to corpses!

In a blur of shadows, Bai Yunfei stepped away from the battlefield to return to his spot in front of the village. A pair of ordinary-looking shoes could be seen on his feet, glowing slightly purple when he moved.

When he came to a rest, the shoes started to dim in color before returning to their original gray color.

The purple light symbolized elemental lightning. For Bai Yunfei, who focused on training in elemental fire, the fact that elemental lightning could even form underneath his feet could clearly be said to be because of the boots.

In other words, it could clearly be said that these boots were also soul armaments of the lightning affinity.

The speed Bai Yunfei was capable of moving at was partially due to the newfound strength when he broke his limits and partially because of these boots.

Boot stats:

Equipment Grade: Mid Earth

Elemental Affinity: Lightning

Upgrade Level: +10

Defense: 900

Additional Attack: 460

Soul Compatibility: 10%

+10 Additional Effect: Increase speed by 100% for one second in exchange for soulforce.

Cooldown of 1 second

Upgrade Requirement: 105 Soulpoints

Author Note: The boots come in a pair since it'd be rather unsuitable for them to have separate effects. Please try not to be too serious.

The one second duration effect was very compatible with the short-burst nature of lightning. The fact that the boots had a cooldown of one second also meant that only one second was needed in between uses for another burst of speed, which meant it was an extremely powerful effect.

Usage of this effect to move felt anachronic in nature, bizarre and strange. At first, Bai Yunfei wanted to call this technique the "Lightning Step," but it felt rather ordinary to say. After thinking about the instantaneous movement, Bai Yunfei figured that people would perceive this movement as 'flashes.'

With that reasoning in mind, he came up with a proper name for this technique—

The Flash Step!!

Consequently, these boots were named the 'Flash Lightning Boots.'

.....

Any other soul cultivator would have been in utter shock after watching these two hundred soulbeasts get slaughtered, but Bai Yunfei's face didn't seem to share those feelings of relief or joy. Without dispelling the coil around him, Bai Yunfei charged straight at the pack of soulbeasts with his spear.

Roughly a minute later, Bai Yunfei's eyes lit up, "It's here!"

"Crack! Crack! Pop! Pop!"

A series of pops and cracks echoed from deeper within the forest—sounds that seemed as if the trees themselves were breaking. Due to the dirt the soulbeasts had kicked up in their rush here, Bai Yunfei was only able to see a large shadow slowly meandering toward him!

The tremors of the earth were starting to get even worse. The trees in front of him were swaying crazily and the black shadow was getting closer and closer.

Finally, a giant mountain towered right in front of him!

A mountain!

One that was two hundred meters tall and a hundred meters wide! There were several large jagged stones and dozens of trees rooted on its back!

No matter how one looked at this thing, it was a mountain, but it was moving!

The palpitations were small, but the smallest of footsteps could clearly be seen on the ground behind it!

“A hillbeast...” Bai Yunfei grunted. The signs were there for him to see it, but no matter how he prepared himself to feel, it was still hard to hide his surprise.

A hillbeast was a soulbeast with the earth element. Like its name implied, it was basically a mountain!

No one knew the origins of these types of soulbeasts nor were they spotted out in the wild often. This was due to the fact that for eighty percent of their lives, hillbeasts tended to ‘hibernate.’

When they hibernate, all presence of their existence vanishes, making them another mountain in the landscape. Even if someone were to step or prance all over their bodies, hillbeasts wouldn’t react. In normal situations, it wouldn’t be strange for them to wake up once every two or three hundred years, but only so that they could relocate and continue their slumber elsewhere.

This way, they could continue their existences as part of a mountain range.

Only one appeared in front of Bai Yunfei today, but it’d be more accurate to say one ‘mountain’ appeared right in front of him.

These hillbeasts weren't meant to appear in places where there weren't any soulbeasts, yet this one was heading straight for the village! Should it be left unchecked, only razed ground and death would be left in its wake.

“Mid-stage class six...” Bai Yunfei muttered. “That’s the same as a mid-stage Soul Exalt. I can’t fight against it but... how am I going to stop it!?”

# Chapter 375: The Hillbeast

---

The real body of the hillbeast hides within its core, making the outer layer of its body the ‘armor’. After years over years of existence with elemental earth converging at its core, the outermost layers became as hard as regular stone while the inner layers grow progressively harder. When a hillbeasts wants to move, it’d use its elemental earth to make countless of stone formations to act as its legs.

The more Bai Yunfei looked at the hillbeast, the more information about it came to mind. Hillbeasts were very slow to begin with, so Bai Yunfei had plenty of time to think.

“If its real body is at its center....then I’ll try using my own strength to stop it! If I can’t, then I’ll have the Cataclysmic Seal break it apart....” Bai Yunfei began to plan out his course of action.

Bai Yunfei wasn’t too worried about being able to stop this soulbeast or not. Having the perverse Cataclysmic Seal was a guarantee to stopping the hillbeast already. But the biggest load Bai Yunfei had was that he knew the hillbeast was the final soulbeast to fight.

With those two facts, Bai Yunfei decided that now was the time to test his own strength and see just how far he could take himself with the +13 effect of the Cataclysmic Seal.

Concentrating his strength to his feet, Bai Yunfei leapt up ten meters into the air. A flash of red light converged underneath his feet, and with a tap, Bai Yunfei leapt up yet again.

Skywalking!

A feat only Soul Exalts were capable of. By converging elemental energy to the feet for just one moment, they could materialize a foothold to step on. When Bai Yunfei was in his ‘coil’ form, Skywalking became possible.

One hop after another, Bai Yunfei ascended into the skies towards the slow-moving hillbeast. After about a kilometer of traveling in this fashion, Bai Yunfei came to a stop just two hundred meters away from the hillbeast. Still a hundred meters up in the air, Bai Yunfei observed the hillbeast, only to think that he felt like an insignificant speck of sand next to it.

He quirked his lips. For a moment, he didn't know how exactly to start this fight off.

“Let's try this then....”

His right hand went up. Palm facing upwards, the Ardent Sun Glove lit up brilliantly with light as elemental fire started to converge and spin on top of his palm. With a 'bang', it turned into a fireball five meters in radius above his head.

“Here we go!!”

Like a conducting baton, his right hand twirled and pointed at the giant mountain, commanding the fireball to fly straight for the incoming hillbeast!

“Boom!!!!”

Stone and dirt flew up into the air following an ear-deafening explosion. Persisting for several seconds before clearing away, the dust soon showed a thirty meter deep crater on the hillbeast's body, but.....the hillbeast hadn't stopped at all!!

In fact, it didn't even seem like it had even noticed it was attacked!

“Tsk! So even that wasn't enough?” Bai Yunfei clicked his tongue. Returning the Fire-tipped Spear to his right hand, Bai Yunfei started his descent down to that crater, and with arms that bulged furiously, he stabbed down at its center with the spear!

For the sake of guaranteeing that the explosion effect would activate, Bai Yunfei used the Ninefold Stab, thus increasing its power and burying the spear halfway into the hillbeast!

“Boom!” Another explosion.

This time, the crater had been opened another ten meters!

“Still not enough?!” Twisting his hand, the Fire-tipped Spear disappeared back into his ring. Instead of using the spear, he brought up both hands to punch!

Eighty-one Fold Fist Force!

“Boom!!” With the third explosion, the crater grew bigger yet again!!

A strong amount of recoil came springing back at him, causing Bai Yunfei to fall back in surprise; the recoil had brought him back twenty meters!

Having stabilized himself with elemental fire gripping his feet to the ground, Bai Yunfei was just about to continue his assault when he felt something was coming.

Hastily bringing up the Cataclysmic Seal, Bai Yunfei protected himself with the barrier provided to him.

Just as he did so, an abnormally strong amount of elemental earth was starting to form from the crater he made. The sounds of crumbling could be heard before countless stalagmites shot forth from the ground to stab at Bai Yunfei like arrows!!

No sooner was the barrier up completely did the stalagmites rain down onto its entire surface!

“Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang....”

Like hail onto a hard surface, Bai Yunfei’s entire person was obscured by the amount of stalagmites coming down on his person. Whenever one barrage of stalagmites was jettisoned out from the ground, another volley was already being prepared to be fired at Bai Yunfei in one continuous motion. In no time, hundreds....and even thousands of stalagmites had been fired!

These stalagmites were being controlled as well. If Bai Yunfei



went to the side, they'd turn and chase after him!

Each one that struck his barrier hadn't even time to fall before the next one was already coming up behind it. In practically seconds, the entire barrier was turned into a giant stone ball with how many stalagmites were stabbed into it, trapping Bai Yunfei in its center!

"Boom!!" From within the sphere, a furious explosion of red light pierced through the cracks before Bai Yunfei's Fire-tipped Spear came stabbing out from it. In an instant, Bai Yunfei broke free from his confines and flew a thousand meters backwards to land safely in the air.

"That was close—never thought that the hillbeast would attack back so seriously. I nearly ate it back there...." Bai Yunfei muttered from behind the safety of his barrier, goosebumps covering both his arms.

But when Bai Yunfei looked back to the hillbeast, his eyes flew wide open in shock—on the 'body' of the hillbeast, the three craters Bai Yunfei had inflicted onto it was....was gone!!

It looked as though they hadn't existed to begin with, and the hillbeast had always that same pristine mountain shape!

"Hoouuuu...."

A muffled but deep roar erupted through the air, startling Bai Yunfei.

This roar came from the hillbeast!

"Is it angry?" Bai Yunfei smirked, "So that means my attack did do something...."

"But you're still not stopping!!" Bai Yunfei sighed. The hillbeast in front of him was finally starting to speed up, "Then I'll just have to break you to pieces!"

With an eye to the Cataclysmic Seal, Bai Yunfei looked back to

the hillbeast. A brilliant glint appeared in his eyes. “I highly doubt that my +13 effect won’t do anything to you! I’ve still ten minutes left to my ‘coil’ form....and then some!”

Seemingly determined to test out his one ultimate move by the end of today and having the ‘coil’ form still, Bai Yunfei was without fear for anything else.

Brandishing his right hand to summon his Tempest Sword, Bai Yunfei flew up into the skies rather than by Skywalking.

His speed on the Tempest Sword allowed Bai Yunfei to reach the area a hundred meters above the hillbeast in record time. Upon seeing the orange light from the hillbeast start to glow again, Bai Yunfei narrowed his eyes and started to go through several complex hand seals.

Hand seal after hand seal, Bai Yunfei’s hands was like a blur in between movement. A terribly strong amount of aura was starting to exude forth from his body, and then when his hands landed upon the very last hand seal, the soulforce in his body had immediately turned into....elemental fire!

# Chapter 376: Coil x Dual Dragons!!

---

The final seal made by Bai Yunfei's fingers preceded the change that came over the fire. Expanding in size, the flames swelled in intensity before flowing out from Bai Yunfei's body in large amounts.

Only seconds went by as the powerful aura started to stabilize. But rather than have one single strand of elemental fire, there were two! Both fluctuated with powerful elemental fire, but both had their own rhythmic differences that refused to mix with one another, thus resulting in the sight in front of Bai Yunfei.

“Houuu.....”

A low grumble came from the hillbeast. Somehow, there was a tinge of nervousness in its roar, and perhaps just a little bit of....fear?!

“Clang! Clang! Clang....”

One after another, resonating sounds of elemental earth being gathered clamored all over the hillbeast's 'body'. The area where Bai Yunfei was had the most elemental earth bubbling in it, and before long, stalagmites even bigger and more numerous than the ones before started to fly towards Bai Yunfei!

“Bzzz.....”

For just one brief moment, the hillbeast came to a stop amidst a very loud buzz. Countless of stone spikes came flying out from its body and through the air at frightening speeds, threatening to cover every single inch of area Bai Yunfei could possibly escape to in larger numbers than before!

But Bai Yunfei was already finishing up the very last of the hand seals by this point. Upon the very final one, Bai Yunfei's eyes lit up excitedly before he brought his hands to his side so that they were at forty-five degree angles to his side. Clenching tightly, the two

streams of elemental fire started to bubble and flow through his left and right arms. As they flowed, they started to coil around his arms and then converge at his fists like forming a bubble.

“Bang....bang....”

The rhythmic beating of the two fireseed essences within his body brought a light to Bai Yunfei's eyes. At times, the fireseeds would flow forward, and in other times, it'd flow backwards, like it was following a pulsating tempo. As if two dragons were rising up within him, the elemental fire exploded in power, threatening to tear loose from his body with a roar to fill the area with its terrifying strength.

The whistling of the stone spikes coming from the hillbeast was almost continuous. Shooting one after another, each stone spike was mixed with each other so closely that it was more like a fluid stream of spikes. Not a single gap could be seen in between the spikes, and with the orange glow infusing them, the entire thing looked like a giant stone dragon threatening to swallow Bai Yunfei whole!

Bai Yunfei was unswayed by this attack. Even with how threatening it looked, Bai Yunfei stared unflinchingly at it with the elemental fire still rising in intensity with each passing second....

“This is it, here we go!”

Finally, Bai Yunfei let loose an angry roar. The burning fire wrapped around his arms shook, and with a final bang, his arms thrust forward!!

In the moment his arms punched out, the two streams of elemental fire charged forth. They extended from his fists as one long stream a meter thick and still growing in length to howl and roar furiously, and to the hillbeast, it surely looked as though two giant fire dragons were coming straight at it!!

By twenty meters, the two fire dragons blasted into the barrage

of stone spikes. Upon the union of the two, the two streams started to twist and turn around each other! The resulting explosion was extremely fierce, and the fires and stones that sloughed off the two was extremely terrifying to look at!

“Boom!!!”

Another explosion rocked the area as the two dragons vied for supremacy. One red, and one orange fought fiercely for some time before finally, one side won over the other.

In a final burst of fire, the two red dragons joined together to become one giant flame pillar and devoured the earth dragon whole!

When the two sides first struck against each other, the stone dragon looked as though it had the advantage at first.

But when the two fire dragons joined together, the earth dragon was vanquished almost instantly!! With the earth dragon defeated, any stone spikes that were far enough away from the dragon fell to the ground, while those stones still intact in the fire dragon fell down in the form of lava to pour down onto the ground like rain!

Even with the prior clash, the fire dragon hadn't slowed down in speed at all. Separating again into two, the fire dragons rotated in place as they traveled through the air, the intensity of the heat was actually growing stronger and stronger.....with nothing that could stop its indomitable force!

“Boom!!” Following a small explosion of stone and rubble, the two fire dragons slammed straight into the hillbeast's waist!! So ear-deafening was the explosion that even the earth beneath the hillbeast shook with sound! The two fire dragons colliding with the hillbeast had been so brilliant in light that it felt as though the sun itself was emitting a bright red light with fires that spread across the entire mountain in a flash!

Like a bonfire, the entirety of the hillbeast's body was engulfed

into flames!

This powerful move of Bai Yunfei had a name.

The Dual Dragons!!

.....

Faced with such a powerful force attacking him, the hillbeast came to a sudden and complete stop for the very first time!

“Whew....” On top of his Tempest Sword, Bai Yunfei let out a sigh of relief when he saw the hillbeast had stopped moving. Of all the times he practiced this one move, today’s usage had been the best so far!

“Just as I thought, it takes a real fight to really see me at my best. What a huge improvement this was.....” He remarked while rubbing his hands.

“Houuuu!!!”

Suddenly, a loud roar of a soulbeast brought Bai Yunfei out from his thoughts. Stunned that the hillbeast could still move, Bai Yunfei looked down at wide eyes to see the flaming mountain start moving again towards him!

“It...it can still move?!” He screamed to himself, “But how....but how?!”

The power behind his Dual Dragons was by no means weak, and Bai Yunfei had been confident in its ability to accomplish its task. So while he muttered to himself about the hillbeast, a wave of indignation and fury washed over his eyes. Giving a death glare at the hillbeast, Bai Yunfei began to go through another series of hand seals while saying, “I doubt you won’t go down, take this! Dual Fla—”

“Hou....”

Right as Bai Yunfei was about to activate the second form of the Dual Flame Arts, the hillbeast let loose another roar. But this time,

it was far weaker in tone, and filled with pain and anguish!

“Eh?” Pausing in his hand seals, Bai Yunfei gave a closer look at the struggling hillbeast on the ground. For twenty seconds the hillbeast continued to struggle, but at the second after that, it came to a pause. Two seconds later, it faltered, and then right under Bai Yunfei’s eyes, the mountain peaks on its body....collapsed!!

It was like if an actual mountain was crumbling. Piece by piece, the hillbeast’s body crumbled and gave way like in a landslide. The body that must’ve took the hillbeast so many years to form was ultimately reduced to stone!

“I....” Even after several seconds passed from when the aura of the hillbeast vanished, Bai Yunfei didn’t talk.

As things appeared, the hillbeast had been in its final death throes from when Bai Yunfei’s Dual Dragons smashed into it!

“Haha! So that’s how it is! I’ve said it before, but as long as I’ve the Dual Dragons in this ‘coil’ form, a mid-stage class six soulbeast is no match for me!!”

With a hearty laugh, Bai Yunfei stared at the ‘corpse’ of the hillbeast. Knowing that time was just about up, Bai Yunfei released the ‘coil’ form with a slap of his hand to his chest, expelling the second fireseed from it back into the Cataclysmic Seal.

Once the form fully dissipated away from Bai Yunfei, his power levels dropped straight back down to that of a late-stage Soul Ancestor. The drop of strength had always left Bai Yunfei feeling dissatisfied since he could feel the powerful soulforce drain away from him.

The Violet Soul Ring on his right hand flashed once, signifying the activation of its effects to transfer its stockpiled 2000 soulpoints back into Bai Yunfei’s body and restoring his reserves back to a workable state.

Still standing on his sword, Bai Yunfei looked over the entire area

to where the Soulbeast Forest was. The ‘path’ left behind by the hillbeast had dug a hundred meter ditch in the ground behind it and ruined all the trees in sight.

But no other soulbeasts were in sight either.

He looked to the west of the Soulbeast Forest; no soulbeasts were coming out from that direction as well.

It would seem that the soulbeast wave was coming to an end....

He let out a sigh of relief. “Phew....it’s finally over, I wonder how the guild wil—”

“Roar!!!!”

Just as he was about to turn back to the direction of the Braves guild, the ear-piercing roar of a beast suddenly forced him to pause!

This sound wasn’t coming from the front, but from the...back!!



# Chapter 377: 'Long', Swordsman of the Three Swords Style

---

Whirling around, Bai Yunfei stared off to where a large group of soulbeasts were now rushing towards him from the opposite direction. “Pah! How did I forget that this could happen?”

While the soulbeast wave did indeed stop, that only meant that no more soulbeasts were coming out from the Soulbeast Forest. The group of soulbeasts that had detached themselves from the main wave heading towards the village and town were previously heading straight for the gates to Praestia Pass were now on their way back!!

Since the strongest of Praestia Pass knew that it'd only be a matter of time before the soulbeasts try to invade the city, they mobilized the forces to drive the soulbeasts away. And after stopping the brunt of the forces, all that was left was to slaughter the rest of the soulbeasts there.

The superiority of numbers the soulbeast had over the humans wasn't too big of an advantage. The people of Praestia Pass were strong, thus the name of their city being named as such. Having lived in such close proximity to the Soulbeast Forest, it was only natural that the forces would contain people who'd be able to fight off the soulbeasts. In the long history of the city, the amount of soulbeast waves was plenty, and no matter how bitter or terrifying it was, the Praestia Pass stood steadfast against the trials of time. Today would be no exception.

A great deal of the soulbeasts were already killed within the sparse several hours that had transpired. The soul cultivators had now the upper hand, and the soulbeasts—who were running away from the Soulbeast Forest in fear of something—were now starting to wake up to the situation. Countless of their brethren were dead; this wasn't something that could be ignored so easily.

So thus, the soulbeasts began to flee.

The wave that had been so tirelessly going forwards was now starting to flee the other direction. Due to the chaotic nature that had been their battle, the still quite scared soulbeasts ran off in any direction available to them. They needn't return to the forest by the official path, so as long as they could escape, they'd be able to make their ways back to the forest eventual.

But with this randomized pattern of fleeing, that made the village an inevitable destination for plenty of soulbeasts to run to....

.....

Having been so caught up in trying to save the village from the soulbeasts in the front, Bai Yunfei had completely forgotten about the ones in the back. One would say that his understanding and experience with soulbeast waves was lacking, so there was a missing piece in what Bai Yunfei should've thought of beforehand. As a result, Bai Yunfei was now in for a rude awakening in the form of a hundred soulbeasts within several hundred meters from the southern entrance!!

"Tsk! I only just cleaned up the front gates and now they're coming in from the back! Can't I ever catch a break?!" An exasperated sigh escaped from Bai Yunfei's lips due to his grievances. Fueling the Tempest Sword with his soulforce, Bai Yunfei flew off towards the south in a blaze of green light.

Bai Yunfei's speedy reaction and sword could only get him so far. The soulbeasts themselves weren't slow by any means either, and so before Bai Yunfei could reach them, a class five wind-seeking leopard was already at the helm leading the charge. Injured in many places of its body, the leopard was still somehow able to attain frightening speeds due to the green light under its paws!

"Roar!!!"

The panther roared furiously as it discovered that the village was

in the way of its escape route. Unwilling to make a detour, it opened its jaws wide. There was a burst of faint green light, and in the next moment, the hut that was in front of it was blown apart.

Amidst the sounds of the hut being blasted apart, some of the villagers started to cry out in fear.

“Hey, bastard! Don’t break the houses!!”

In his anger from forgetting about these soulbeasts, Bai Yunfei was already at a boiling point. The beginning destruction of the village was all his fault, so his fury had multiplied exponentially. The Lightning Eagle appeared in his left hand in an instant to fire off a lightning bullet at the leopard’s head, only to have the leopard dodge it.

Bai Yunfei was above the village by now, making him only just a hundred meters or so away from the leopard. Just as he was about to fire another shot, the look on his face changed drastically, causing him to call out, “Cataclysmic Seal, forward!”

The reason for his sudden deviation in attack was due to the soulbeast behind the leopard. A class five goldwinged deer had flapped its wings so that several beams of elemental metal as sharp as knives shot out from them to fly towards a nearby house. No sooner did it pierce straight through it did the beams continue onwards to the center of the village!

The Cataclysmic Seal wasn’t being used for offense, but for defense, as one could tell. Before the beams of elemental metal could strike down the heads of the terrorized villagers, a barrier of orange immediately erected itself over them all, protecting them from any external harm.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!” The beams struck uselessly against the barrier and fell down, unable to fly any more.

Relief flooded Bai Yunfei’s mind. Now that the villagers were safe, he could continue his assault. Already over the airspace of the

southern entrance, Bai Yunfei was about to attack when he realized something, “Who’s...”

From the eastern entrance, a single figure in purple was flying over to the village with the speed of lightning almost through to head into group of soulbeasts!!

.....

In the moment when Bai Yunfei protected the villagers with the barrier, a purple streak of light came bursting forth from the eastern entrance. The figure’s right hand now had a blade about the length of a meter from handle to tip, and a vertical height of about two fingers (imagine a katana). Placing it in between his mouth, the figure then brought out another two identical swords to put in his left and right hands!

The figure was already just twenty meters to the right of the leopard by this point. With a twitch of his arms, soulforce began to flood into the person’s swords in the form of elemental lightning that coiled around his blades. On the other side, the leopard was getting ready to use its elemental wind in preparation against the person.

“Three Swords Style....Demon Cutter!!”

A guttural growl came from the the man’s mouth despite his grip on the sword’s hilt. In a flash of light where the man’s speed practically doubled, he reappeared on the other side of the leopard without even a blur to be seen of where he used to be!

"So fast! So damn fast!!"

That was what Bai Yunfei thought first when he saw the person move. The move at which this person was moving at was far faster than when Bai Yunfei would use the Flash Step!

“Tzk!!”

Fresh blood escaped from the leopard’s mouth as three separate cut wounds appeared on its body, slicing it down the middle!

A late-stage class five wind-chasing leopard, even in an injured state, had been killed so quickly that it hadn't even the time to even twitch!

“Three Swords Style....Ninety-nine Lightnings!”

Another deep growl.

The two hands reversed the direction of the swords they were holding before the man started to rotate on the spot!!

“Swish! Swish! Swish! Swish....”

The only thing that could be seen from this man were slashes of purple light that soared off in every direction—even the ground to leave behind scorched cut marks—to strike down the incoming soulbeasts!

“Tzk! Tzk! Tzk....” Blood blossomed out like a rose from the bodies of the soulbeasts unable to dodge the man's lightning quick attacks. About ninety percent of the soulbeasts had been cut down by the blades, causing them to howl in pain before tumbling to the ground, and some of them had simply been sliced straight in half!

“Three Swords Style....Lightning Flash Slash!”

Once about only ten percent of the soulbeasts were left, the man stopped his spinning and immediately flew to where the goldwinged deer was in a flash of purple light. Then in another flash of purple light, the man leapt ten meters away to where a mid-stage class five giant armored beetle was. When he arrived there, the goldwinged deer fell to the ground in a mess of blood and gore....

There was about seven flashes of light that seemed to refract the surrounding light from the man, and after the man came to a stop, seven soulbeasts were all suddenly cut in two!!

.....

“This....this is....” Still speechless, all Bai Yunfei could do was

watch this male come walking towards him.

From the group of almost a hundred soulbeasts—half of them being class five ones—this single man had single-handedly killed them all!

Now that this person was no longer moving at speeds beyond Bai Yunfei's comfort level, his very person and personal effects could now be seen. He was about 1.8 meters tall and wore black short-sleeved robes the same color as his hair. His face was sharp as if chiseled from stone, and his eyes were perceptive, giving him the look of a very 'determined and steadfast' person.

Bai Yunfei finally realized where he was when the man drew closer to him. Stepping down from his sword onto the ground, he cupped his hands in thanks. "Friend, I thank you for helping me."

"No need for thanks," The man nodded calmly. He gave an odd look at the barrier still protecting the villagers behind Bai Yunfei, and then to the direction of the Soulbeast Forest, "what I did wasn't as good as what you've done."

It seemed that he saw Bai Yunfei's battle with the soulbeasts earlier. Or at the very least, the last part of it.

"This one is named Bai Yunfei, might I know your name....?"

"Long." The man gave a one worded name.

"Er....Long?" Bai Yunfei repeated; this person seriously had a one worded name!

The clues began to all fall in place.

"Are you the one Kun and the others are waiting for?!"

"Eh?" This time, Long was the one to look on in surprise. "Do you know Kun?"

His question served as confirmation to Bai Yunfei's guess. Since he met Kun earlier, people with one worded names no longer surprised him. "I met with Zhang Yunpeng, Kun and the others a

while ago in the Town of the Braves, I'll be joining your team for a while to go into the Soulbeast Forest. We've been waiting for you the past few days...."

"Oh...." Long nodded. "Where's the others?"

"They're all back in the town to help the others fend off the soulbeast wave," Bai Yunfei pointed off towards the direction of the guild, "there's a lot of strong people in that direction, you should be able to find them."

Before Long could say anything more, Bai Yunfei moved a hand up to stop him and to point behind him, "We should finish off the rest of the soulbeasts here before we talk any more."

From the southwest, two groups of hundreds of soulbeasts were starting their rampage down towards the village.

"Alright." Long nodded.

Brandishing his right arm, the Fire-tipped Spear appeared for Bai Yunfei to wield. Giving Long a look, the two of them nodded in conjunction.

Pressing off against the ground, they began their own rampage towards the two groups of soulbeasts....

# Chapter 378: The Final Battle

---

The incoming group of soulbeasts were coming in two major groups. Between the two, a little over two hundred soulbeasts were gathered with class fours and fives taking up about half their numbers. If it was just Bai Yunfei fighting these groups, even his gun fu wouldn't be able to cover such a large expanse of area the soulbeasts were covering. Unlike the grouped together soulbeasts like before, these ones were all over the place. Any person would be hard pressed to go from one spot to the next in order to take down all of the soulbeasts.

Unless Bai Yunfei reactivated the 'coil' form or made the Cataclysmic Seal grow big, him being able to kill all the soulbeasts would be a pretty difficult question to answer.

So it was fortunate that Long was here with him. His strength was equivalent to Bai Yunfei as a late-stage Soul Ancestor, and with his outstanding abilities, his strength was definitely beyond that of any other average soul cultivator his level. Presumably, those three swords he was using were of mid-earth tier quality.

Armed with their respective weapons, the two soul cultivators charged straight for the soulbeasts. Bai Yunfei toted his Lightning Eagle to fire off several rounds at the dozen class four soulbeasts. Clashing with the other soulbeasts as he did, Bai Yunfei's other arm wielded the Fire-tipped Spear to battle furiously with any soulbeast willing to engage in close combat with him.

This time, Long didn't use the 'Ninety-nine Lightnings' like he did before to kill all those soulbeasts. It was clearly a move not meant to be used with reckless abandon. On the other hand, the 'Lightning Flash Slash' was used to charge straight into the group and behead a dozen soulbeasts in one stroke. Then in another bolt of purple light, Long killed another few soulbeasts in a flurry of blood.



This way of fighting wasn't unfamiliar to Bai Yunfei since that was how he had fought for the last two hours to halt the advances of the soulbeasts. Each time a soulbeast came up, he'd stab at it with his spear. The class five soulbeasts took some more effort to kill, and there were a few soulbeasts that managed to step far enough into the village, but Bai Yunfei would kill those off with a flying dagger or two.

“Swish!”

Only having just stabbed a soulbeast through, Bai Yunfei heard the sound of whistling from behind, causing him to quirk his eyes. Shifting his feet just half a meter to the right with the Wave Treading Steps, Bai Yunfei watched as a sharp green blade swish down, leaving behind a deep hole in the ground where it struck.

His new foe was a mid-stage mantis ant. This particular species possessed the body of an ant the size of a large boar and had long bladed arms like a praying mantis.

When its first move failed to land, the mantis ant immediately struck again, this time a horizontal stroke at Bai Yunfei's midriff.

In response, Bai Yunfei held his spear vertical to his body to block the strike. After the second strike had been blocked, Bai Yunfei was surprised to see the mantis ant try again with a downward stroke on his head, but he responded in kind. Lifting his left arm, he blocked the arm with his Returner Bracer with a “clang”.

Then, there was only a small screech from the ant before it was sent flying away from Bai Yunfei in a flash!

+10 Additional effect of the Returner Bracer, activated!

30% chance to deflect 15% of the damage done. The damage dealt cannot exceed the defensive power of this equipment and cannot deflect long-ranged attacks.

Chasing up to the ant, Bai Yunfei lashed out with his fist rather than his spear since it was a little too close for that. Unwilling to

give up the chance, Bai Yunfei's left hand immediately activated the Ninefold Fist Force to deliver a blow on the still flying mantis ant.

“Bang!!” Came the explosion. A huge indentation formed on the carapace of the ant, but not deep enough to be fatal. Due to its body being sent even farther away thanks to the punch, and the positioning of everyone there, the ant found itself flying for Long who was fighting a little farther away!

“Skreee!!” Realizing that it was heading ‘straight’ for Long, the ant lifted its long arms up into the air to make use of this opportunity to strike down Long!

Bai Yunfei was prepared for this. At some point prior to the ant's screeching, the Fire-tipped Spear had already transferred to his left hand so that he could hold onto the Fire Eagle with his right.

“Click.”

The trigger was pressed, and with a bang, a single bullet of elemental fire shot straight for the mantis ant.

“Skreee!” The ant screeched again upon notice of the incoming attack. A flurry of green light exploded forth from its body and towards its small legs, resulting in a green whirlwind to appear beneath it. It pushed the ant several inches away in a successful evasion of the bullet while also aiding the ant's next strike at Long!

Since he had been so concentrated on fighting the soulbeasts in front of him, Long was caught off guard by the fact that a soulbeast from Bai Yunfei's side was suddenly coming towards him. As soon as he realized an attack was on him, he turned his head just in time to see the soulbeast shift several inches to the side, and then a small bullet filled with elemental fire graze past the soulbeast and towards himself!

The pupils in his eyes rapidly dilated; this type of attack from Bai Yunfei was completely unexpected to him, and he hadn't the time

to dodge this ‘fatal’ strike from him!

Would Long meet his unexpected demise at the hands of his supposed comrade?!

Of course not!

No sooner did Bai Yunfei see the mantis ant dodge the bullet for it to head for Long did he smile, as if unworried about the fact that it was about to kill his fellow soul cultivator.

“Swoosh!” The displacement of wind could be felt around Long’s ears in the next moment. Just as he was just about to resign himself to what came next, he realized that the bullet that had only been just inches away from his eyes had without warning turned slightly to the left!

There was a muffled sound of flesh being penetrated before the mantis ant was heard screeching again. Looking at the ant, Long was surprised to see that the fire bullet had somehow shot into the ant’s head and out its back as if it had eyes!

“Thud!!!” The mantis ant collapsed onto the ground and spasmed for several moments before finally dying....

“Wh--what...?” Long’s mind went blank. He saw what just happened in front of him, but his mind was unable to completely comprehend it.

It wasn’t until Bai Yunfei dispatched another two soulbeasts trying to take advantage of his distracted self with his guns that Long realized where he was. With just a quick look at the Fire Eagle in Bai Yunfei’s hand, Long suppressed his curiosity and began to fight again.

What should’ve been impossible to do was without a doubt due to the special effect of the Fire Eagle!

Fire Eagle stats:

Equipment Grade: Mid Earth

Elemental Affinity: Fire

Upgrade Level: +10

Attack: 950

Additional Attack: 500

Soul Compatibility: 10%

+10 Additional Effect: Upon ascertaining a target within a 500 meter radius, the next shot will have the 'homing' effect applied to it.

Cooldown of five minutes.

Upgrade Requirement: 100 Soulpoints

Its effect was different than the Lightning Eagle in that it had to be manually activated rather than by chance. Furthermore, its effect was the ultimate 'homing' effect!

This meant that as long as he used his soulsense to target something, he could activate the effect with a fire bullet to chase it down! The bullet would chase its foe down until it hit or was blocked!

The only drawback to this effect was its relatively long cooldown time, so Bai Yunfei tried not to use it too often.

.....

Ten minutes later, Bai Yunfei and Long were both finishing up the rest of their soulbeasts. Not a single one had managed to make it into the village yet, but due to the outbreak of elemental power in the battle, two of the houses on the outer rim of the village were destroyed.

Not even able to take a break, the two soul cultivators spotted a flock of soulbeasts head towards them. Injured they were, but the soulbeasts were coming with great speeds still!

“Damnit!” This flock of soulbeasts coming at them now made the situation even worse than when they were first fighting the two groups of soulbeasts since the area of coverage was now even bigger than before!

“We’ve no choice but to attack with all we got!”

Glancing at each other, the two men nodded and then sped towards the soulbeast with even more soulforce blazing from them than before.

.....

“Gun fu!!”

.....

“Three Swords Style....Five Hundred Lightnings!”

# Chapter 379: The Subsiding Wave of Beasts

---

The sun was setting now to make way for dusk.

Corpses and blood littered the expanse of land between the Soulbeast Forest and Beast Suppression Pass, painting a scene not unlike the hells made by an asura. Amongst the countless corpses of soulbeast laid the bodies of several soul cultivators in between, but they numbered few in comparison and were not easily seen.

Mournful cries of soulbeasts would occasionally ring out from the direction of the Town of the Braves, followed by a burst of elemental power. Aside from that, there was only eerie silence to be heard.

The soulbeast wave this time ended in a complete victory for the soul cultivators. Not a single soulbeast had made it into the city and the rest of the soulbeasts had fled back into the forest. Rather than chase them, the soul cultivators chose to stay behind to clean up the field.

.....

On the eastern edge of the battlefield in a nameless village.

At the center of the village, the earthen barrier of the Cataclysmic Seal was still holding strong. Though the villagers were huddled together at first, not a single one of them moved from their original spots and were rooted where they were to look off to the west in absolute shock.

Underneath the setting sun, two small 'mountains' about the height of a two story house were piled up on the western edge of the village about two hundred meters away. Two figures sat at the very top of the mountains, looking as if they were resting.

The majority of the houses in the western part of the village was totally destroyed, and some of the carcasses of several soulbeasts could be seen soaking the grounds of the village with their blood.

But the farther one went west in the village, the more corpses that could be seen ones or maybe even smaller groups.

In fact.....the small mountains that were formed near the village was formed by the carcasses of a great deal of soulbeasts!!

On the mountain to the left, a red spear could be seen stabbed down into the peak of it, and a person leaning against the spear could be seen going through several hand seals. A faint red outline surrounded his body with specks of red light slowly permeating his body—it was Bai Yunfei.

On the other mountain sat a person with two blades placed neatly next to him while he meticulously cleaned off the third blade in his hand. It was Long.

Ten minutes had already passed since the battle had finished, but not a word was spoken between the two, and neither did either of the two look to see what the other was doing. In this moment, all they were trying to do was recover their spent soulforce.

It wasn't until another ten minutes when the two finally finished what they were doing. Long was just cleaning off his final blade and Bai Yunfei had only just opened his eyes and cracked the muscles in his neck when the two nodded in satisfaction at how much soulforce they recovered.

“Long,” Bai Yunfei spoke first, “thank you for your help....if not for you, I wouldn't have been able to save the village.”

“Thank me?” Long gave a surprised look at the town behind him, “Are you from the village?”

“Not at all, I've nothing to do with this village,” Bai Yunfei shook his head, “You aren't from the village either, but didn't you come to their aid without hesitation as well?”

The lips to Long's face twitched upwards into a small smile, “Then there's no need to say thanks to me. I was only doing what I could. If I thought it was too dangerous, I would've left a long time

ago.”

Bai Yunfei chose to look to the corpses of the soulbeasts around them, “Brother Long, your strength is really admirable. Are those three swords of yours mid-earth tier?”

“You’ve good eyes, brother Bai, they are indeed as you say. I managed to get them after a lot of trouble, but it was worth it. Half the power I showed today was because of these three swords.” Long stroked the sword in his hand before storing it away. He looked at the mountain beneath Bai Yunfei’s feet with a curious light in his own eyes. Long’s strength was surprising to Bai Yunfei, but Bai Yunfei’s strength was absolutely stunning to Long.

In the long arduous battle they just had, the strongest adversaries Long managed to kill were only three late-stage class five soulbeasts, and two of those three were already injured to begin with. The rest of the soulbeasts he killed were of low levelled strengths despite the numbers, but he managed to endure through it all with all his strength.

What Bai Yunfei went through was far harder than what Long did, however. He didn’t have the time to pay close attention to Bai Yunfei, but Long was certain that at least a dozen late-stage class five soulbeasts were killed by Bai Yunfei. But most importantly....the three-eyed firebear Bai Yunfei killed at one point was without a doubt an early-stage class six!

Fleeing was a very real thought to Long when the bear first showed up. He was confident in his abilities to kill a late-stage class five soulbeast, but class six soulbeasts was where his confidence stopped. The differences between the two classes was extremely vast, and Long himself wasn’t capable of crossing the two realms in confidence.

But then Bai Yunfei went and killed the bear with an instantaneous strike! In that short moment of time, Long clearly felt Bai Yunfei’s strength spike drastically to levels comparable to a



Soul Exalt before killing the bear as swiftly as a bolt of lightning!

A curious light was in Long's eyes as he regarded Bai Yunfei who was walking back towards the village. Bai Yunfei was an enigma to him, with that strength of his. Practically anyone would be filled with admiration for such a powerful person.

Long sighed. He didn't know just how Kun and the others managed to invite such a person into their team, but now that Bai Yunfei was here, their trip into the Soulbeast Forest would most likely be a peaceful one....

.....

At the center of the village, Bai Yunfei waved his hand to dismiss the barrier. Reclaiming the Cataclysmic back into his ring, Bai Yunfei smiled at the still shocked villagers, "Now that everything's done and taken care of, is everyone alright?"

"Thud, thud, thud...."

Under Bai Yunfei's startled eyes, each of the hundred villagers suddenly fell to their knees in worship.

"Wha—what are you all doing?" Heart skipping a beat, Bai Yunfei immediately moved to lift up the village elder to his feet.

"Our thanks to the hero, Bai Yunfei, for saving our lives!" The elderly man's quivering voice spoke out as Bai Yunfei tried to pick him up, only for him to fall back down to his knees to kowtow his head to the ground again.

"Thank you for saving our lives!" The other villagers behind the elder followed suit.

Bai Yunfei didn't know what to do in this case since he couldn't force them back to their feet, so he waited for them to finish their acts of gratitude before helping the elder again to his feet. "Please don't be like this, everyone get up on your feet."

Despite standing up now, the elder stooped at the waist, as if

afraid to look Bai Yunfei in the eye. “You are our benefactor, Lord soul cultivator. If a mighty person is willing to risk your life and lower yourselves to save the lives of us commoners, then we must do what we can to show our gratitude....”

“Your words are too much, elder. I didn’t risk my life at all, I only did what I was able to do; I couldn’t let people die while I could save them.” Bai Yunfei smiled, “It’s a shame that I wasn’t able to save the village completely....”

With how intense the battle was, stopping the soulbeasts from reaching the village proved far too hard for either Bai Yunfei or Long to prevent, resulting in several of the houses to be totally destroyed. Aside from the several dozen houses in the center, the entire western side of the village was in ruins, and several of the eastern houses had been riddled with stray elemental power.

The elder shook his head. “Houses can always be rebuilt. The fact that we villagers are still alive is the greatest fortune we could have....”

“Yes, that too,” Bai Yunfei nodded, “then lets all tidy up the broken pieces of the houses, we can talk more later.”

## Chapter 380: A Rendezvous

---

After bringing Xiao Yu and his mother to their house, Bai Yunfei watched the other villagers start to help clean up the mess around the village before returning to the small corpse mountain where Long was still standing on.

Walking to his side, Bai Yunfei spoke, “Long, why don’t you head back to Zhang Yunpeng and the others first? I’ll stay here and guard the place a little longer.”

An eye of Long traveled over to the villager, “Why? Are you worried that a soulbeast will come and injure any of the villagers?”

“Yes.”

“As a powerful soul cultivator, is there really a need to pay so much attention to the life or death of a commoner you don’t know?”

“Soul cultivators are only just people with stronger powers,” Bai Yunfei narrowed his eyes, “Weren’t we all commoner once before? Brother Long, do you think that the life of a soul cultivator is worth more than that of a commoner?”

“Haha, not at all, that’s not what I meant.” Long hurried to respond to Bai Yunfei, “What I wanted to say was....I was feeling the same way you are, brother Bai.”

“Found him! Bai Yunfei’s over there! Ahh? That’s....brother Long is there too!!”

Just then, the silvery voice of Ye Zi was heard from some ways away, causing Long to smile, “Looks like we don’t need to look for them; they found us first...”

Turning to look, Bai Yunfei saw three males and two females coming towards them with greater speeds than before.

The one leading at the front was Zhang Yunpeng.

When the five came into eyesight, they were all surprised to see the mountain of soulbeasts there. But their eyes quickly landed upon Bai Yunfei and Long, “Brothers Long and Bai, are you two alright? What brought you two together?”

“Haha, boss Zhang, do we look like anything’s wrong?” Bai Yunfei laughed. “I was fortunate enough to have Long lend me a hand to help protect this village.”

Long nodded his head at Zhang Yunpeng and the rest of the group, “I just got here when the wave was just starting to retreat. I saw the battle taking place here, so I figured I’d help out.”

“You two...” Kun looked off to the village first, and then the corpses of the soulbeasts all around them, “Did you two kill all those soulbeasts....?”

“That pile over here is mine,” Long nodded at the pile of soulbeasts next to his foot. “the pile over there is Bai Yunfei’s.” He gestured to another pile.

“Oh, and the ones over there is his work as well.” Then he pointed to the northern part of the village.

“.....” The mouths of everyone there dropped open in surprise.

“How did....how did you two ki—oh! Bai Yunfei, your aura.....” Eyes widening first at the amount of corpses, Ye Zi suddenly pointed a finger at Bai Yunfei, “You’re not a late-stage Soul Sprite! You’re....you’re a....”

Her remark led to Zhang Yunpeng realizing the same thing as well, causing the entire group to focus their attention on Bai Yunfei.

“What do you mean late-stage Soul Sprite? Ye Zi, what are you talking about?” Long asked, unsure of what was going on here.

Bai Yunfei hadn’t bothered to hide his strength after the battle was over since Long was already more than aware of how strong he was. And because of that, he forgot about hiding his strength when

Zhang Yunpeng and the others got here, “Well....my apologies, everyone. I was hiding my strength earlier, but I really meant no harm in that.”

“Oh....haha, don’t worry, brother Bai. I can understand.” Of the six, Zhang Yunpeng was the first to respond with a wave of his hand. “But...” He started with a sigh, “I never imagined that brother Bai would be so powerful, seems like I was lucky in asking you to join our team!”

“Bai Yunfei, are you really a late-stage Soul Ancestor?! You’re as strong as Long! That’s....that’s just ridiculous isn’t it?!” Wide-eyed in disbelief, Kun gave Bai Yunfei an incredulous look, “How old are you anyways?! You don’t look any older than twenty-five—I bet I’m older by a good five or six years—so how are you so powerful?!”

“Actually, how were you even hiding your strength? I never even noticed it!”

“I was just using a secret technique of mine, that’s all.” Bai Yunfei answered nonchalantly, “Boss Zhang, how’s the town?”

“No major damages has been accounted for so far,” Zhang Yunpeng began, “but part of the town outskirts was totally destroyed. A good amount of the people were hurt as well, so they’re undergoing treatment while the others are cleaning up the place.”

It was then that Bai Yunfei noticed the wounded state of the team. Almost everyone but Han Yan was covered head to toe with wounds; with Kun being the bloodiest. He had a terrifying wound on his left shoulder—while treated—that looked like it hadn’t been fully cleaned up yet. In comparison, Han Yan had the least amount of wounds and stood behind the others as though she was being protected. But it also meant that it was her who had set to cleaning the wounds of everyone.

“Ah, where’s Xiao Kong? I don’t see him around?” He suddenly realized that Zhang Yunpeng’s soulbeast was nowhere to be seen.

“Xiao Kong’s back at the town to collect several of the soulbeast corpses we killed. With the wave died down, there’s plenty of profit to be had, and maybe a reward from the Tianhun School.”

“Oh.” Bai Yunfei nodded. The ones who were responsible for the Braves guild said something along the same lines before. Those who killed soulbeasts would be rewarded twofold by the Tianhun School!

Then Bai Yunfei couldn’t help but look at the massive pile of soulbeasts in front of him in joy.

If the Tianhun School were to deliver up on their promises, then Bai Yunfei was in for a huge amount of profit! But....the amount of soulbeasts he killed here was practically up to the several thousands, if not ten thousand, gathering all those soulgems wouldn’t be an easy task at all!

Clearly, Zhang Yunpeng and his group didn’t see this as a ‘problem’ at all. All the soulbeasts on the ground was a profit waiting to be made, so all that needed to be discussed was how to most efficiently gather all the soulgems.

“Eh?” Just then, Bai Yunfei realized something. Looking up towards the direction of the Soulbeast Suppression Pass, his observation was soon shared by Zhang Yunpeng and the others.

Up in the skies, three figures were flying towards them with breakneck speeds. Of the three figures, the two behind were skywalking at speeds slightly slower than the one in front. With each step they took, they could travel dozens of meters at a time.

And at the front of the group was an elderly man in purple whose hands was behind his back and was flying easily through the air as if being pulled by an invisible force!

“The power of flight....that’s a Soul King!!”

It wasn’t the two Soul Exalts skywalking that caught the attention of the group, but the Soul King up front!!

# Chapter 381: A Request

---

Under the stunned eyes of everyone, the three figures dropped down from the skies. Glancing around the area, a wave of surprise flickered across the eyes of the Soul King for just a brief moment before coming to a stop just several meters above the ground in front of Bai Yunfei's group.

“That's....that' the vice lord-mayor of Beast Suppression City, senior Xia Zhengyan!” Recognition of the man was almost instantaneous from Zhang Yunpeng.

At his warning, everyone else was quick to pay attention. Bowing their heads to the Soul King—as courtesy dictated—, they all spoke, “We pay our respects to senior Xia!”

“Haha...no need, no need.” Xia Zhengyan nodded. Still browsing over the people in front of him with his eyes, he spoke again, “How unexpected to meet a group of young heroes here. Is your group responsible for the battle here?”

“If I may, senior Xia, the five of us only just came from the Town of the Braves a while ago. The ones who actually fought here are these two.” Zhang Yunpeng pointed at Bai Yunfei and Long.

Under Xia Zhengyan's watch, even Long had to pull back his normally cold expression. “I only arrived here when the wave was just starting to subside. Brother Bai was the one fighting here from the very beginning.”

“Oh?” Surprise bloomed on the elder's face as he turned to face Bai Yunfei. “You've been fighting off all the soulbeasts here from the very beginning? Are you also the one responsible for killing the class six hillbeast?”

Him knowing that piece of information meant that Xia Zhengyan was a very informative person; but that was to be expected with him being a Soul King. He was amongst the beings who could use

their soulsense in ways to detect individual beings in great clarity no matter how big of a battle was taking place.

“I am.” Bai Yunfei replied.

Zhang Yunpeng and the others exhaled sharply. None of them had the full scope of what went on in this place, and so they were surprised to hear that Bai Yunfei had managed to kill a mid-stage class six soulbeast.

“What’s your name?” Xia Zhengyan spoke. On the outside, his facial appearance was calm, but on the inside, he was very much surprised at what he had just heard. This youngling in front of him was only a late-stage Soul Ancestor—a feat that was already very praiseworthy for his age—but it was by no means a level strong enough to kill a mid-stage class six soulbeast.

“I am called Bai Yunfei, senior.”

“Bai Yunfei....” Thinkin for a back with a pensive expression, clarity then appeared afterwards, “Could you be the disciple of the old headmaster of the Crafting School, Zi Jin?”

Since his identity was known now to the elder, Bai Yunfei saw no reason to deny it, “My master is indeed Zi Jin.”

“Haha, so you’re the favored student of his. No wonder you’re as strong as you are.” Xia Zhengyan chuckled. “A few dozen years ago, senior Zi Jin came to the Soulbeast Forest himself. He was only an early-stage Soul Exalt, but I was blessed in being able to witness the power and grace he wielded then. Is he still doing well?”

“Thank you for your concern, senior Xia, my master is still well and healthy.” Bai Yunfei could hear the tonal shift taking place within Xia Zhengyan and concluded once again that his master was truly an amazing person to have his name known even here.

“Hero Bai, to have defended this area from harm and soulbeast by yourself is a great contribution to our Beast Suppression Pass



and Tianhun Empire as a whole. This old man truly cannot thank you enough....”

This sudden change in Xia Zhengyan brought about a flutter of the heart in Bai Yunfei. Since when was he meant to be treated like such a hero? Quickly waving his hands, Bai Yunfei spoke, “Senior Xia's words are far too serious. Protecting the denizens of our empire from the soulbeast wave should be expected. To even talk about contributions is far too much; this junior feels terrified just talking about it.....”

“Haha, what a modest one you are. A very admirable trait to have....” Xia Zhengyan laughed. “You must be tired from your battle, young hero. Do not worry about cleaning up this area, this old man will have several of my men harvest the soulgems for you and arrange for the Tianhun School to issue out the appropriate reward in several days time.”

Bai Yunfei smiled. That would alleviate his troubles by a great deal. “Then, I thank you for your troubles, senior Xia.” He clasped his hands together.

“Haha, it is to be expected, nothing more,” Xia Zhengyan smiled again, “furthermore, the strength you’ve shown in this battle is extraordinary to say the least. If you have any request of me, then I will do anything within my power of the Tianhun School to honor it.”

“That....there’s no need for that....” Bai Yunfei wanted to refuse at first; accepting rewards wasn’t always a good thing in some cases. But then he suddenly thought of something and hurried to rectify his words, “Actually, this junior has one small request. This junior hopes that senior Xia will see to hear it.”

“Oh? What is it, there’s no harm in voicing your thoughts.”

Bai Yunfei pointed to the village not too far away, “These villagers here have no home within Beast Suppression City and were forced to live within the outskirts of the Soulbeast Forest, a

dangerous place to even visit. If it's possible, I hope that senior Xia will see to having shelter allocated to these villagers to live in peace and security within the city."

Not a single person listening to Bai Yunfei was able to hide their surprise at his request, Xia Zhengyan included.

"Is that the case?" He spoke, "Were you two aware of this?"

The second question was asked to the two Soul Exalts behind them, who both gave a slight shake of their heads in denial. That much wasn't strange, however. The living space of the lowest dregs of society wouldn't make its way to the ears of the strong, and as the vice lord-mayor, Xia Zhengyan normally had other soul cultivators deal with administration and management. In extension to that, commoners would be hired to oversee management of other commoners.

"Hmph! A matter like this was unresolved after so much time?! Investigate to see who's responsible for this oversight when we get back immediately!" Xia Zhengyan spat, scaring the two Soul Exalts just enough to have them start to shiver.

He turned back to Bai Yunfei with a smile, "Haha, what a blunder my Beast Suppression Pass has made. Rest assured, hero, the commoners are the root of our empire; we will send out men to escort them to safety."

"Thank you very much then, senior Xia." He hesitated for a moment, "Then, if this junior could request for one more thing..."

"Eh? Speak what's on your mind, hero."

"There is a sick villager woman who needs some stargrass for her illness. I hope senior Xia will have some..."

"Haha, a small matter. Rest assured, hero Bai, I will resolve this problem as quickly as possible."

"Thank you very much, senior Xia," Bai Yunfei smiled, "this junior has no more requests then."

“Well....” Xia Zhengyan looked on in surprise. “Were you only going to request for aid for the villagers, not yourself? Haha....no wonder you’re the disciple of Zi Jin. A kindhearted soul, how befitting of a young hero.”

“Senior Xia is too kind.” Bai Yunfei replied modestly.

“Very well then. This old man will head out first to oversee some other matters. You should all head back and rest. I will send some people over here to take care of matters.” Now that the wave was over, Xia Zhengyan was ready to go back to his normal tasks.

With a nod of his head, he and the other two Soul Exalts turned to leave.

## Chapter 382: Becoming Famous Again

---

Up in the skies, the three men were flying back towards Beast Suppression City when one of the two Soul Exalts asked, “Vice lord-mayor, is that young man really....the disciple rumored to be taken in by headmaster Zi Jin two years ago?”

“There shouldn’t be any mistake. Would there really be a person brave enough to pretend to be someone else?” The other Soul Exalt spoke, “But...was that mid-stage class six hillbeast really killed by him alone? Isn’t that just a little too unbelievable?”

A while back, the three of them were fighting the brunt of the soulbeast wave with the other soul cultivators. The aura of the hillbeast had naturally caught their attention, but before they could rally enough soul cultivators to head over to fight it, its aura was snuffed away shortly afterwards, causing no small amount of shock. Only Xia Zhengyan was able to sense what had gone on with his soulsense, so he came over to the area as soon as the battle was over.

“If he couldn’t do the impossible, then he’d be a mockery of a disciple of senior Zi Jin.” Xia Zhengyan explained, “I heard two years ago he managed to kill an early-stage Soul Exalt as a mid-stage Soul Ancestor. How surprising it is to see his strength increased by such a large amount, and to do something like this no less....

“In the future, our world will have yet another young prodigy....”

.....

Once Xia Zhengyan and the others had flown away, Bai Yunfei turned around to look at the others, only to start when he realized everyone was looking curiously at him, as if looking at a strange new thing.

“Er....what are you all looking at?” Bai Yunfei touched at his

body unconsciously, thinking that there was something on him.

“Brother Bai....are...are you really from the Crafting School?” The first to speak was the youngest one there, Han Yan, who stared incredulously at him with curious eyes.

“Ah, so that’s what they’re surprised about....”

“Haha, I am indeed a student there.”

“And disciple to headmaster Zi Jin?”

“Yes.”

“Haha!! Your strength is terrifying, brother Bai, your identity too!” Unexpectedly, Kun started to roar with laughter. He slapped Bai Yunfei on the shoulder with a grumble then, “You really led us blind! You didn’t tell us anything about yourself in the beginning, why the secrets? Were you afraid we’d be scared of you?”

“That...er...haha....” Bai Yunfei chuckled sheepishly. In truth, he was in fact thinking about that, but he wasn’t going to say that out loud.

“What wonders,” Zhang Yunpeng sighed, “so you’re the very same Bai Yunfei I heard about from two years ago. Rumors from the Forest Pass Province had you pegged as a very capable person, but I never connected the thoughts even after hearing your name...”

Long gave a strange look at Bai Yunfei. Inwardly, he was thinking that for someone to have so many soul armaments and strength like Bai Yunfei, it was almost expected for him to be someone like that.

“Well, enough is enough. We should go back and rest. I’m tired after today’s battle, will probably need two or three days to fully heal.” Ye Zi stretched her arms.

Zhang Yunpeng nodded, “Ye Zi is right. Since senior Xia was more than kind enough to have people gather the soulgems for us,

we can go ahead and rest up.”

“You guys can head back first. I’ll stay here for a little while longer.” Bai Yunfei pointed to the back of the village, “I want to notify the village of a few things and wait for the officials to come over.”

Ye Zi was taken back at this. “Wow! Bai Yunfei, you’re really....is there a need to do this much?”

“Haha, one should finish what they started, for the sake of the mind and heart.” Bai Yunfei laughed. Turning towards the village, he waved his hand in farewell, “I’ll be leaving first, see you all soon.”

“Hey, Bai...”

Looking as though she wanted to say something more, Ye Zi found herself being stopped by a hand on her shoulder. “Forget it,” It was Long, “let’s not bother him for now and head on our own way....”

.....

.....

Three days went by after the soulbeast wave.

The plains from where the soulbeast wave took place was now completely devoid of soulbeasts. And with the rain from yesterday, a good portion of the blood was already washed away. However, the craters and ditches left from the battle were still there, and it would perhaps take several months before they would fade with age.

Nonetheless, everything was back to normal; or at least, there wasn’t anything different in regards to the lives of the denizens of Beast Suppression City. After the brief moment of panic that came with the soulbeast wave, the situation quickly mellowed back to normal. This situation wasn’t something they could really do anything about in any case.

Still, news of what transpired here spread like wildfire throughout the world of soul cultivators. The battle that had been so intense and fierce made its way throughout the entire empire and even to the ears of the current ruler of the empire and current head of the Tianhun School, Wu Hong. No sooner did he hear of the news did he immediately dispatch several men to investigate the matter.

In this single soulbeast wave, several tens of thousand soulbeasts were killed. On the other hand, Beast Suppression Pass had roughly ten thousand soul cultivators fighting for them, and over a thousand of them were killed, five Soul Exalts included....

Of this one battle, only one name stood out heads beyond the rest. From the rumors, it was said that this person fought by himself to protect the lives of every single villager by killing almost ten thousand soulbeasts by himself; of those ten thousand soulbeasts, a few dozen of them were late-stage class fives, and one of them was even a mid-stage class six! And a hillbeast to boot!!

But what was a hillbeast?

Those who were in the know were absolutely shocked to hear of it. Those who didn't were even more shocked as soon as they learned of it. The fact that this hillbeast was a wild soulbeast of the legends was extremely surprising to hear appear in the wave, and it was without a doubt even more surprising to hear that it could even be stopped by someone!!

And then came the final kicker. The one who had killed the hillbeast was only a late-stage Soul Ancestor!!

It was an impossibility. An improbable feat that simply no one could believe their ears when they heard and dismissed it to be mere hearsay.

But when they heard the name of the one responsible, everyone went silent as what seemed to be so improbable was suddenly starting to seem to be true....

The name of the one responsible was none other than....Bai Yunfei!! The very same disciple of headmaster Zi Jin of the Crafting School from several years ago!!

Two years ago, Bai Yunfei 'disappeared' off the face of the empire. And now, two years later, he was back, and with even bigger news than before!

Time may have gone by, but news about Bai Yunfei this time made its way all over the empire, recementing him as an important figure to all soul cultivators.

However, news of his gallantry spread without Bai Yunfei's knowledge due to the fact that he started his journey into the Soulbeast Forest with Zhang Yunpeng just two days afterwards....



# Chapter 383: The Unusual Soulbeast Forest

---

“Swish....swish....”

The ambient sound of footsteps whispered softly through the forests as a man-sized figure came out from the thickets. Then, seven figures came out into view. Side by side, they stopped right in front of a giant tree with the leader holding onto a gray scroll to inspect.

Of the seven, five of them were males and two of them were females.

Bai Yunfei and Zhang Yunpeng were leading the group.

“Boss Zhang, this should be the class two area, shouldn’t it?” Bai Yunfei asked after a brief estimation of the area.

Zhang Yunpeng looked around. “Should be,” he nodded, “we must’ve only just crossed from the class one zone. Getting to the class three zone should take some time then....”

Already half a month went by since Bai Yunfei and the others first entered the forest, but only to the class one area. But while the area was said to have plenty of class one soulbeasts, Bai Yunfei and his group came across a decent amount of class four soulbeasts.

This was without a doubt due to the influence of the soulbeast wave. Many of the soulbeasts had managed to flee back to the forest, but not all of them went back to their original hunting grounds. Some decided to make new homes in even the class one area.

In other words, differentiating areas by classes was no longer useable. It was a temporarily defunct classification for the time being.

Even the detailed notes and markings on Bai Yunfei’s map with warnings and information on certain spots of the forest was for the most part useless. At most, he could only use the map to take a look

at the topography.

“With how we’re going right now, how long will it take for us to reach the class five area?” Bai Yunfei asked, brushing an insect off from his shoulder.

Zhang Yunpeng shrugged, “If this was before, it’d take two months for us to reach the class four area, and maybe a month or two after that to reach the class five area....but with how it is now, I can’t even make a rough estimate anymore. It’s unclear if we’ll come across any soulbeast that might try to bar our way either.”

“Well now....” Bai Yunfei nodded in understanding, “boss Zhang, forgive me for being blunt, but your group came here today to search for a purple-crowned snake. You also said before that you gained some information on its whereabouts, but now that the soulbeast wave has changed some things....do you perhaps have a better method of locating it?”

Zhang Yunpeng’s face darkened a bit at that. The fact that he was unable to locate the snake now wasn’t lost on him, it was just that he was reluctant to give up the search.

“Sigh....you’re right, brother Bai. Up to this point, I’ve been using just my eyes alone to look for the snake, but the forest is far too big and the soulbeasts far too many. To find a specific class of soulbeast is practically impossible....but, I can’t wait around for the next piece of information on its whereabouts. I have to try now, no matter if I fail or not!!”

On the second day after the soulbeast wave ended, Zhang Yunpeng had actually started to ask around the place, asking if any purple-crowned snake had appeared during the battle. It was in his hopes that one had actually appeared, but unfortunately for him, the only one he found was a class four one, which didn’t help him at all.

Perhaps a class five purple-crowned snake did appear, but the one responsible for killing it had already left the town....

In either case, Zhang Yunpeng decided with a heavy heart to try his luck in the Soulbeast Forest in hopes of finding one.

“Senior, please don’t feel discouraged. It’s not like there’s no hope; a purple-crowned snake might be rare, but there has to be plenty of them in the forest. We’ve only been searching for a few months, we’ll definitely be able to find one. It’s just maybe....we’d be able to find one as in the class two and three areas? Didn’t we come across one of the nests of a class five purple-crowned snake yesterday?” Ye Zi spoke up in comfort to Zhang Yunpeng while giving Bai Yunfei a small look, denoting that Bai Yunfei shouldn’t depress him anymore with words.

“Haha, Ye Zi has a point. Don’t feel so negative about things, boss Zhang. I’m sure we’ll be able to find one soon.” Bai Yunfei gave a small smile, thinking that he didn’t say anything wrong. But nonetheless, he followed Ye Zi’s warning and stayed silent after that to avoid making Zhang Yunpeng any more depressed.

“Ah, don’t worry about me, everyone. I won’t give up so easily.” Zhang Yunpeng managed to smile. “Thank you all for be so willing to enter the Soulbeast Forest with me during such a chaotic time. Succeed or not, I, Zhang Yunpeng, give you all my utmost thanks!”

“Hey now, what’s up with this talk? We’re brothers, not strangers!” Kun slapped Zhang Yunpeng on the shoulder, “We’re only in the class one area of the forest, if we keep it up, we’ll be able to find that snake in no time.”

Everyone else nodded in agreement, earning a flash of emotions to flicker across Zhang Yunpeng’s eyes. “You’re right, let’s get moving then!”

But before they could actually get moving again, Zhang Yunpeng and Long suddenly raised their hands to stop everyone in their tracks. Likewise, Bai Yunfei’s eyebrows narrowed together.

“A class five soulbeast,” Long explained to the others, “let me handle this.”

He took two steps forward with all three of his swords in his hands. Placing one of them in his mouth, he lifted his hands so that they rose in front of the blade in his mouth and held the swords vertically parallel to the ground.

“Roar!!” Before he could go any further than two steps, a roar from beyond the trees erupted outwards followed by a tremendous shadow leaping towards them--it was a mid-stage class five soulbeast, a stalking panther!

“Three Swords Style....Tiger Hunt!!”

Its speed was fast, but Long was even faster! Recklessly, the soulbeast was already three meters up into the air when Long's person disappeared from view, only to reappear behind the leopard with his back arched and his arms by his side so that the swords pointed downwards.

Blood was dripping from the swords.

“Tzk!!”

Blood splattered out from the panther's mouth followed by a horrible roar. With a mighty crash, the panther fell to the ground just two meters away from the group. Elemental lightning was even seen flowing from the orifices of the panther as it spasmed and and twitched before death took hold of it.

“....”A silent thought of praise for Long was had from Bai Yunfei. Each time Long moved, he was like lightning in speed and could deliver victory with just a single move with style and power.

“Sigh, another mid-stage class five soulbeast....we're only in the class two area. If any weaker team were to try to enter the forest now, it won't be pretty for them.” Kun gave a sigh as he looked at the corpse of the panther.

There were actually plenty of soul cultivators within the forest right now. They wanted to take advantage of the situation to come in and kill some more soulbeasts, since more of them would be

there. The bigger the risks, the better the rewards.

On the inverse, it also meant that there'd be plenty of soul cultivators who'd most likely lose their lives here in the class one and two areas.

And so the group continued onwards. From the class two area, they eventually made their way into the class three area. It took them about twenty days of traveling in order to get there, but there weren't any soulbeasts on the way.

According to Zhang Yunpeng, this was what the class one area would normally feel like.

It was only after they reached the class four area that Bai Yunfei felt a very clear discrepancy. For the sake of avoiding trouble, Bai Yunfei and the group traveled carefully, but slowly. In what was originally the area for class four soulbeasts to roam, class five soulbeasts were no in abundance here. As a result, the group was in no rush to get to the class five area and spent another ten days or so looking for a purple-crowned snake here.

But even until the very last day, they came up empty-handed....

Then at last, when three months of travel was spent in the forest, Bai Yunfei and the group finally arrived in one of the more dangerous parts of the forest, the class five area.

# Chapter 384: Fighting a Pack of Wolves

---

“Howl!!”

A wolf’s howl echoed through the silent night, shattering the tranquility that was there before.

Within the depths of the class five area of the Soulbeast Forest, countless lights of elemental power flashed throughout the forest.

“Damnit!! Don’t let it call for its pack! If we don’t leave right after we kill it, we’re going to be in danger!!”

A hurried voice spoke out from one of the dazzling flashes of light; it was Zhang Yunpeng.

“Bang!!”

Lifting a pistol up, Bai Yunfei aimed it towards the giant lunarwind wolf that was howling and fired off a shot. A bullet of fire traveled with explosive speeds towards the wolf, but as it approached, the wolf’s entire body flashed green for a split moment before moving almost effortlessly towards the side to dodge it. However, the bullet didn’t fly onwards in its original path and swerved around to chase after the wolf!

Growling at the homing bullet, the wolf stood its ground rather than attempt to dodge again. Greenish light started to brighten its right paw in preparation for an attack, and when the bullet was within range, it swiped at it with astounding speeds!

“Bang!!”

Like the blossoming of a flower, the fire bullet exploded outwards in a flurry of elemental fire before being scattered away by the elemental wind gathered by the wolf.

The homing bullet fired from the Fire Eagle had been dispersed without trouble!!

“Tsk! It’s very close to becoming an early-stage class six soulbeast

if the Fire Eagle can't even harm it!" Annoyance flashed across Bai Yunfei's mind as he blocked a claw swipe from another mid-stage class five gale wolf. With a kick, he sent the wolf flying away before slamming the spear in his left hand across another wolf trying to ambush him. The Fire Eagle in his right hand disappeared back into his right hand so he could swap the spear back to it, and with a mighty stab, he speared a third wolf straight through its body from the right.

"Swoosh! Swoosh! Swoosh!"

Three separate blades of wind came for his head from behind, prompting Bai Yunfei to twirl his spear around to block it. Just barely managing to block all three blades, Bai Yunfei was then quickly assaulted by three more gale wolves.

"Tsk! There's even more of them now!" Before he could even finish off the first three mid-stage class five wolves, another two were already surrounding him from behind.

He'd kill one wolf in an instant, but another two would quickly take its place....

.....

"Starlight!!"

From behind, a deep growl made itself known to Bai Yunfei's ears just in time for him to turn around to see Zhang Yunpeng leap up into the skies. Twirling his golden staff fast enough to blur its shape, Zhang Yunpeng shot down a dozen golden flashes of light onto the pack of wolves. These golden flashes of light looked slightly similar to how the stars in the skies were like, and with several banging sounds, half of the wolves were struck by the lights.

"Eek!!" From another direction, a golden shadow shot forth from wolf to wolf in the surviving half of the wolf pack. Thrashing outwards with its muscular arms, five separate flashes of elemental

metal immediately tore apart at the throat of a wolf. It leapt into the middle of the wolf pack right after, and with each swing of its arm, yet another wolf would fall prey to it.

Zhang Yunpeng's macaque soulbeast was taking part in the battle!

On the other side of the battlefield, Zhou Feng and Kun were wielding a dagger and longsword to protect Ye Zi and Han Yan from the incoming wolves around them.

To the north, several flashes of purple arced out one after another as Long was killing the dozens of wolves around him by himself.

Truly, this battle was a chaotic one....

The team had already experienced plenty of class five soulbeasts during their time in this part of the forest, but this particular one was the most difficult. By complete accident, the team had somehow stumbled upon the resting grounds of a pack of gale and lunarwind wolves, leading to them being ambushed before any preliminary preparations could be made. At first, there was only thirty of them to worry about with just a late-stage class five soulbeast and a mid-stage class five soulbeast, but then halfway through the battle, the wolf leader had summoned the rest of its pack with its howl!

Then came hundreds of class five gale wolves, thrusting them all into a long and arduous battle.

Unfortunately for Bai Yunfei, the most optimal time for him to use his gun fu had been missed when all of the wolves were surrounding him. Even more importantly, the pack leader as currently staring down Bai Yunfei without at all dropping its guard. Consequentially, this left Bai Yunfei with no room to try and land a fatal shot on the wolf, no matter how much he tried.

Another ten minutes or so went by before Bai Yunfei started to



feel as though he was trying to fight off a second coming of the soulbeast wave. Furthermore, they were in the Soulbeast Forest, making this situation even more dangerous than before!!

“Boom!!”

Activating the explosion effect of the spear once another wolf was caught on it, Bai Yunfei killed off the wolves surrounding it before taking the opportunity to try and ambush the pack leader again.

Concentrated on his task, Bai Yunfei maintained a very stoic expression on his face despite the slightly rushed spear stroke. His situation right now might be slightly worse for wear, but it wasn't unsalvageable just yet since he hadn't used his Cataclysmic Seal just yet.

Gaining experience through battle was the entire point of why he was even here in the first place; if he used the Dual Flame Arts or the Cataclysmic Seal to resolve his problems, then that'd ruin the entire point of his trip.

On the other hand, Zhang Yunpeng and his team were by no means as calm. Without his ability to recover soulforce and improve it to several levels higher than it should be, a dragged out battle was not optimal at all. Some of them were already starting to tire.

“Howl!!!”

Loud and clear, a wolf's howl was heard once again. This time, from farther away.

Despite the distance, every person there—Bai Yunfei included—stiffened in fear, “A....class six soulbeast!!

“It's about time, can't delay any more!” Sensing the tremendous amount of soulforce, Bai Yunfei decided to end the battle. Class six soulbeasts weren't soulbeasts that could be killed at a whim, and with practically a thousand class five gale wolves, this battle was a

mini soulbeast wave in itself!!

“We can’t stick around, get ready to leave, everyone!” Bai Yunfei yelled aloud. Stepping forward, he leapt ten meters into the air with his Fire-tipped Spear disappearing back into his ring. In its place, the Cataclysmic Seal flew overhead with his second fireseed already wafting into his chest. Going through a series of hand seals, Bai Yunfei immediately felt the soulforce within him start to explode in intensity.

“There’s no time to waste, I’ll finish this off in a minute! Dual Flame Arts....’Coil’!!”

Now at the final moments of his hand seals, Bai Yunfei waited for the ‘coil’ form start to manifest over himself.

Due to his airborne status, the hundred wolves there immediately made him a target for their sharp claw swipes to strike him down.

“Bang!”

But with one explosive sound, Bai Yunfei was seen shooting straight up into the air as if he was leaping! His feet pushed off a flash of red light with each step, sending him even higher and higher up into the skies!

“Boom! Boom! Boom!”

The blades of elemental wind exploded one after another as Bai Yunfei appeared almost instantaneously right in front of the pack leader!!

The wolf was caught completely off guard. Unable to even understand how Bai Yunfei was even able to move so fast, the wolf didn’t even have enough time to react as Bai Yunfei lashed out with a punch befitting that of a Soul Exalt.

As soon as the deed was done, Bai Yunfei’s right hand waved around to collect the wolf’s body into his ring. Without a skip in his step, the class five wolves surrounding him were then struck

down before they could properly defend themselves.

.....

“Three Swords Style.....Five Hundred Lightnings!!”

“Starfall!!”

“Hundred Blades Slash!”

.....

On the other end of the battlefield, Zhang Yunpeng and the others were using their strongest moves as well. Faced with overwhelming numbers, the group was forced to retreat or be killed. Without the pack leader alive anymore, the wolf pack wouldn't be as threatening.

Many of the wolves were already starting to show signs of cowering when faced against Bai Yunfei.

“Now!!”

Giving the command, Bai Yunfei shot towards the group to convene with them before running through the opening on the right to escape....

# Chapter 385: Suddenly, A Purple-crowned Snake!

---

It wasn't until the group could no longer feel the auras of their pursuers that they stopped running.

By then, an hour had already passed.

"Is everyone alright?" Bai Yunfei asked from his position as the rearguard of the group. Everyone was resting by a small mountain to catch their breaths.

"I'm....I'm good..." Kun shook his hand dismissively from his seat next to a tree trunk. Still, his face had a delighted look on it. "That was....brilliant! Utterly brilliant! Haha, I've never fought so hard in my life before, no wonder this place is called the Soulbeast Forest! I never felt so excited before!"

"Ah, stow it, you. We nearly lost our lives there and here you are trying to play hero." Zhou Feng hissed, his right hand trying to clean the nasty-looking wound on his left shoulder.

"Ah! Brother Zhou! You're injured!! Here....let me take care of that for you...." Yelping in realization of his pain, Han Yan moved swiftly to his side. With a concentrated expression, she placed both hands onto his wounds. A wave of bluish light started to gather forth underneath her palms, and with time, the wound was completely basked in the glow—this was a very basic form of Hydrotherapy.

"Ah!! It hurts! Lil' Yan, my sister, I'm hurt too! Come save me! It feels like my arm's about to snap off...." Kun cried out as he clutched at his arm.

"Then amputate it, what are you crying for?" Ye Zi kicked at him in mock anger.

The fact that they could play around like this meant that everything was fine. Relieved, Bai Yunfei shook his head and

walked to a nearby tree to start recovering his own soulforce.

Up above them, the foliage in the trees rustled slightly, revealing a small golden monkey that leapt down onto Zhang Yunpeng's shoulder. Scratching its head as it communicated to him, Zhang Yunpeng later turned around to face the group, "The wolves gave up the chase. We should be able to rest here for now. We might've lost a lot of energy, but we're not in danger yet."

Having no one to object, the group began to rest.

"Hey, Bai Yunfei, that move you used earlier...."

Feeling quite bored, Kun suddenly started to spark up conversation with Bai Yunfei, "I know Long said so before, but aren't you just a little too strong? Becoming a Soul Exalt in an instant....good Gods, I've never heard of such a terrifying soul skill before. In fact, I can't even see any signs of backlash from you?! How in the world did you achieve that...?"

"I'm sure it's a secret of the Crafting School, a powerful secret that only the disciples of the elders are privy to learn probably. Have you forgotten just who brother Bai is?" Zhang Yunpeng spoke up.

Bai Yunfei gave a noncommittal nod of his head.

"Wow! The Crafting School's amazing! I have to admit, I'm pretty jealous!" Giving a wistful sigh, Kun shook his head and refocused on his recuperation efforts.

Bai Yunfei looked back to Zhang Yunpeng who was looking at the map even while he was resting, "Boss Zhang, where do you plan to look now?"

"Sigh....we've been in the class five area for about a month now, but we've already looked through a good portion of the place without even a trace of the snake. I'd like to go deeper in to look, but what do you all think?" Zhang Yunpeng folded the map back up with a sigh.

“Deeper in? Into the class six area? Yunpeng....are you really considering it?” Zhou Feng asked in concern.

Zhang Yunpeng sighed. “By this point, we can only give it a try. We can look for another month in the northwest part of the forest, but if we can’t find anything, then....let’s give up. I can’t put you guys in any more danger on my behalf.”

The rest of the group went silent. Indeed, exploring the class five area for an entire month was already very taxing for the group. Some of the members were already unable to guarantee their own safety by their own strength, and that terrifying battle they were just in was proof of how dangerous it was getting. Aside from Bai Yunfei, the rest of the group had only managed to escape from that battle by the skin of their teeth.

So the fact that Bai Yunfei was able to bail them out made them all extremely grateful that they invited Bai Yunfei into their team.

“That settles it then! We continue for another month!” Ye Zi announced, “Don’t feel so negative, senior. Who’s to say we won’t find the purple-crowned snake? Don’t you worry, no matter how dangerous it gets, we’ll be right there behind you. I’m confident that we’ll be able to save your wife!”

The smiles and nods going around the group led to Zhang Yunpeng smiling himself, “Thank you everyone. With you guys as my friends, I feel that I’ve used up all the luck in my life!”

“Eh? That can’t be right, I remember you saying before that having sister-in-law as your wife was the biggest stroke of luck in your life.”

“Er, I mean....”

“Haha...”

Even as an ‘outsider’ to the group, Bai Yunfei felt warmth radiate from himself as he watched the group laugh with one another.

To have friends like those was truly a rare thing.

Friends....

Bai Yunfei looked up at the starry canopy above him with a small smile. He hadn't even a single friend in his life until he turned eighteen. But right now....the figures of several people flowed through his mind one after another.

The smile grew wider by a fraction of an inch.

He had plenty of friends now.

"Brother Bai, what do you have planned now?" Zhang Yunpeng asked, "what I mean is, it may very well take us another month before we return to town. Are you willing to come with us?"

"Well, I wasn't planning on leaving the Soulbeast Forest just yet." He shook his head, "I was thinking that I should stay here a little longer. And if possible, I'll probably take a look into the class six area...."

"The class six area!!" Everyone was shocked to hear that. "Haha, you're a courageous one, brother Bai! The class six area is something I can't even think about," Zhang Yunpeng sighed, "even those teams with Soul Exalts as leaders wouldn't go into the class six area so easily."

"But if it's brother Bai, I'm sure he'd be fine. He killed a mid-stage class six soulbeast after all." Long spoke.

"That's true." Zhang Yunpeng nodded sagely. "But still. I hope you won't find it offensive if I say this, but you might want to hold off on going to the class six area for now. The soulbeast wave only just happened, so we're not sure just how that'll affect the class six area. Prudence and patience is key here."

"But of course," Bai Yunfei laughed, "thanks for the warning, though. I'll be sure to be careful."

"It was destiny that brought you into our team, brother Bai. If we meet again in the future, I'll hope that you'll come visit my Shining Star School, I'll be sure to repay this favor to you then."

“Haha, if there’s a chance I’ll vi—”

“Tschss!!!!”

Suddenly, a piercing hiss filled the air, interrupting Bai Yunfei’s speech and sending everyone else into shock.

It was an extremely distinct sound with how it sounded halfway to being the hissing of a snake and the crowing of a chicken. Not only that, the pitch was slightly off-key, but it was loud enough to be heard for hundreds of meters around. But after this sound was heard, it was as though a chain reaction was had, as all of the soulbeasts in the forest immediately started to howl, hiss, and jeer, as if they were....afraid?

Bai Yunfei narrowed his eyes. This was not a normal response to the crying of a soulbeast. He turned around, ready to ask Zhang Yunpeng of his thoughts, only to see the man facing towards the direction of the soulbeast’s cry with an expression mixed in between excitement and shock.

“Boss Zhang, what’s wrong?”

“This sound....there’s no mistaking it, it’s a purple-crowned snake! That’s the cry of a purple-crowned snake!”

“What?!” Everyone cried out in surprise and leapt to their feet.

“We’ve finally found one?” A smile crept over onto Bai Yunfei’s face. Rising to his feet, Bai Yunfei turned to the rest of the group, “Then what are we doing here? Let’s chase after it!”

.....

Heading for the source of the cry, everyone ran at dreadfully fast speeds. Without needing to stop, it only took the group ten minutes around to reach their destination when Zhang Yunpeng’s face grew anxious, as if just realizing that they were going in the wrong direction. Another cry from the soulbeast came from the front along with a burst of elemental power.



“Over there!!”

Pointing northwest, Bai Yunfei ran towards a small mountain from where the purple-crowned snake was currently behind.

Running the short distance around the mountain, the group chased after Bai Yunfei before finally being stopped by Long, “It’s fighting another soulbeast! And judging from its aura, it’s a....”

“Early-stage class six soulbeast! Both of them!” Bai Yunfei finished his sentence.

That was news to be surprised about. Blanching as they felt the aura of the soulbeasts for themselves, everyone found themselves involuntarily slowing down a notch.

Upon seeing the hesitation on Zhang Yunpeng’s face, Bai Yunfei spoke, “Everyone’s low on soulforce, so let’s take a look at the situation first. There might be two class six soulbeasts, but if they’re fighting each other, we’ve a chance still.”

“Brother Bai’s right. Let’s observe the situation for now. An early-stage class six purple-crowned snake is what we’re after. If we can wait for the right moment, we’ll be able to get what we want!” Zhang Yunpeng’s eyes lit up.

Everyone else nodded in agreement.

The group came to a stop on top of the mountain, hidden behind a giant rock that they used for cover while they peeped down on the situation. But when Zhang Yunpeng saw just who the snake was fighting, his eyes widened in fear.

“That’s....that’s a three-eyed bloodlion!!”

## Chapter 386: Three-eyed Bloodlion!

---

Just about a kilometer away from the mountain, an area of a hundred meters circumference was completely obliterated. Where trees once stood, craters and rubble was all that remained from the result of battle between the two soulbeasts. Two glows, purple and red, flickered and glowed in the night, illuminating the skies like two candle wicks so that the nearby area was made completely visible.

Of the two soulbeasts, one of them was about two meters thick, and almost fifty meters long. It was a large snake with three large horns on the top of its head, forming the shape of a purple-colored flash crown. Its entire body was washed with purple light, and whenever it opened its mouth to hiss, several streaks of purple lightning would spark outwards. Plenty of elemental lightning was already fully manifested in the form of lightning bolts that arced around the area around it, turning it into an electric field.

This was without a doubt the soulbeast Zhang Yunpeng was looking for, the purple-crowned snake.

Not too far away from the purple-crowned snake was the other soulbeast, a being with crimson-red light flickering off its body like the tongues to fire. From far away, the silhouette of the soulbeast made it resemble the shape of a large bison, but at a closer look, the large mane of a lion was clearly visible.

But the most particular detail about the soulbeast was the fact that it had three eyes!!

The fur on its body was red like fire--no—, it'd be more accurate to say that it was like red like blood.

It was an abnormally strange sight, but at the same time, it was also a very intimidating one. Not only did it give off a tyrannical feeling when looked at, there was also the nauseating stench of blood coming off from it.

This soulbeast was a particularly rare breed, a three-eyed bloodlion!!

The bloodlion was moving swiftly this way and that to weave in between the tail strikes of the purple-crowned snake. Each successful dodge was accompanied by an attempt to strike down the snake, but its claws only managed to spark against its purple scales.

From how the two soulbeasts were fighting, their auras pegged them both as early-stage class six soulbeasts! That was the equivalent to a Soul Exalt!

To demonstrate the parallels between the two, this bloodlion was skywalking just like a soul cultivator to dance and dodge the snake's strikes. With each paw stomp, there'd be a flash of elemental fire, and then the bloodlion would leap nimbly up into the sky again.

.....

"Its...it's a three-eyed bloodlion!!" Terror filled Zhang Yunpeng's eyes, "It's here! It's here!! Why of all things is that here?!"

His reaction took the rest of the group off guard. No one expected him to react so strongly, and so randomly, to this soulbeast. Not only was he terror-stricken, the man had also taken several steps back in his fear--so much that if not for Zhou Feng grabbing onto him, Zhang Yunpeng would've fallen off the mountain they were on.

"Boss Zhang, what's wrong? What do you mean by 'it'? Just what...." Bai Yunfei started, but halfway through his words, a random thought flashed into his mind, "boss Zhang, don't tell me this three-eyed bloodlion...."

The rest of the group was slowly coming to the same conclusion Bai Yunfei had and were staring at Zhang Yunpeng for confirmation.

Somehow managing to bring his fear into control, Zhang Yunpeng exhaled slowly, but his arms could still be seen trembling on their own. Looking back up at the two fighting soulbeasts, Zhang Yunpeng spoke quiveringly, “Yes....this three-eyed bloodlion is the very same one I met five years ago!! I’m not wrong. I’d never forget this bloodlion! This aura, its sickening aura, and its cut-off tail!”

Everyone looked back to the bloodlion, except for Han Yan whose strength wasn’t high enough for her to see to clearly.

But as Zhang Yunpeng described, the bloodlion that was still dodging the snake’s attack had indeed a short tail!

It was....unexpected. Not only did they come across a purple-crowned snake, it was fighting against the very same soulbeast that once killed off the team Zhang Yunpeng was in, the three-eyed bloodlion!!

Needless to say, it was a coincidental meeting of massive proportions.

Almost too massive to even believe.

But nonetheless, Zhang Yunpeng’s current state of emotions could hardly be blamed on him.

“Brother, calm down!! Did you forget what our goal is?! The snake’s right in front of us, we need to find a way to get its head and bring it back to save your wife!!” Grabbing hold of his shoulders, Ye Zi shook him furiously so as to try and wake him up.

Her treatment was clearly effective on the man, as Zhang Yunpeng’s eyes seemed to clear up a bit. While still not fully recovered, the traumatized look in on his face was abated to some degree.

“Don’t you worry, Yunpeng. You’re not the same person you were those years ago. You’re far stronger than before, and you’ve with us to help you fight this time! We might not all be strong

enough, but we've Long, a late-stage Soul Ancestor! And there's Bai Yunfei, the class six soulbeast slayer! We'll definitely get that purple-crowned snake!" Kun slapped Zhang Yunpeng on the shoulder in motivation.

"But....it's a class six soulbeast! The bloodlion will definitely be stronger than it was three years ago! Back then, it was an early-stage class six, it'll definitely be a mid-stage class six soulbeast now...." Zhang Yunpeng spoke.

After a while of surveying the battlefield, Long spoke, "But isn't it fighting the purple-crowned snake on even grounds right now? Seems like a chance to me if they're both equal strengths, we'll just wait for the right moment and seize advantage! When both sides are hurt, we might even be able to get both the snake and the lion's body! We'll be getting revenge for your lost friends along with helping your wife."

"....."

Zhang Yunpeng was silent, and his fists were clenched tight. Watching the two soulbeasts fight, his fists subconsciously clenched tightly into itself before the right fist was raised up in front of his face. Closing his eyes, he breathed in, and breathed out. In, and out.

Then he opened his eyes again. This time, with determination rather than fear.

"Alright, you make a good point! It took us hell to find this purple-crowned snake, we're not going to let it go by without a fight!" His voice boomed. "Long's right, we have our best chance when the two soulbeasts are fighting! We'll approach it carefully, and wait for when both sides are critically injured or when one of them are dead. We must get that purple-crowned snake!"

"Zhou Feng and Kun, you two aren't strong enough, so try not to get involved if you can. Actually, I probably won't be much help either. Long, I'll be counting on you! And if things get really bad,

we may need your help, brother Bai....” As he was speaking, he noticed Bai Yunfei was looking off to the side, “Brother Bai, we’ll have to rely on yo--brother Bai?”

“Ah? Oh, don’t worry, I’ll do my best to help you get that snake!” Somewhat in a daze before he was spoken to, it took two calls to him before Bai Yunfei replied.

But still, an odd light flickered in his eyes.

“Alright, hide your auras and get ready to close in!”

.....

Due to the chaotic influx of elemental force, the group was able to advance closer to the battlefield without much trouble. Roughly ten minutes later, they stopped two hundred meters from the two.

From his spot behind a tree trunk, Zhang Yunpeng whispered to the others, “Alright, we’ll hide here and wait f—”

“Roarr!!!”

Before he could even finish his sentence, the loud roar of a lion immediately cut into his sentence, causing everyone to shiver slightly from the amount of elemental fire washing over them. A shrill hiss was heard within this roar, and just slightly after that, everyone felt the aura of the snake drop drastically!

Blanching, Zhang Yunpeng turned to look at the fight, only to see the snake on the ground.

But its head wasn’t in one piece. The lower half the snake’s mandible had been completely torn off from its head!!

All that was a small segment of the jaw that hung uselessly near its neck--even the forked tongue of the snake had been ripped out!

Blood gushed out like a small river from the snake’s jaws as it stood in front of the three-eyed bloodlion.

On the other side, the bloodlion raised its head up to the skies to let loose a loud roar!

## Chapter 387: A Sudden Breakthrough!

---

Without any warning whatsoever, the purple-crowned snake had been killed by the bloodlion!!

Having thought that the battle would take a longer amount of time before a victor could be determined, everyone was completely caught off guard by the sudden victory.

“It’s...it’s dead!!”

It only took a few short breaths before the aura of the snake to fully disappear. With the rest of its body crashing to the ground, the snake moved no more.

Whitening in the face, Zhang Yunpeng made a hurried note to the others.

“The innards of a purple-crowned snake are only harvestable for ten minutes after its death, it’s completely useless after that!!

“It’s crown is extremely useful as a tonic ingredient as well, it’s as precious as a soulgem! We have to act now, or else the bloodlion’s going to eat it!”

What he said brought Bai Yunfei back to reality from what he was thinking. Looking at the freshly-killed snake, and then back to the bloodlion with a doubtful look.

“We can’t wait any longer, Long, let’s go!!” Biting his lips, Zhang Yunpeng ordered the group forward. Withdrawing his golden staff from his ring, he moved to lead the charge with Long.

“Got it!” With a nod of his own, Long immediately took out his three swords. Alongside Zhou Feng and Kun, the four of them were now all ready to strike.

“Hold on, something’s not ri—”

A warning came forth from Bai Yunfei, but it was too late.

Zhang Yunpeng and the others were already charging out

towards the bloodlion!!

In an instant, Long's eyes flashed once with light before elemental lightning burst forth from his body. Dashing forward while Zhou Feng and Kun as support behind them, Long and Zhang Yunpeng moved out with Ye Zi and Han Yan watching anxiously behind them.

“Tsk!” Clicking his tongue, Bai Yunfei drew out his Fire-tipped Spear. Dashing forward with the aid of the elemental fire underneath his feet, Bai Yunfei rushed straight for Long to fight the bloodlion with him while Zhang Yunpeng charged towards the left to the purple-crowned snake.

“Roarrrr!”

A roar erupted from the bloodlion when the five came out from their hiding spots. Previously closed when the soulbeast was enjoying the ‘bloodbath’, the third eye of the bloodlion’s opened up, revealing a scarlet pupil within it.

But the strange thing was....when the eye opened up, the blood on its body started to move towards its eye, as if attracted to it.

The blood was being...absorbed into its third eye!!

Not even ten seconds went by before all of the blood on the bloodlion vanished without a trace! It had been such a startling sight that Ye Zi and Han Yan couldn’t help but gasp in fright.

Done cleaning itself of the blood, the bloodlion turned its head to look at Bai Yunfei and the others. Long was the first to strike with both his arms in an X formation with each other so that the blades ran in an intersection. Elemental lightning surged through his body in large amounts, increasing his momentum to deliver an astonishingly fast strike!!

“Three Swords Style....Demon Slash!!”

A blade of lightning let loose from each of his three blades to fly towards the bloodlion.



“Tzzk!!”

A spurt of blood flew into the air but....it was Long's blood, not the bloodlion!

Still standing in its original position, the bloodlion didn't even look like it had moved a muscle. But from his position behind Long after he was thrown backwards gave Bai Yunfei a clear perspective of what had happened. After Long made his move, the bloodlion had merely swiped one of its paws to break through the elemental lightning infused Demon Slash move and then graze Long's body with the followup.

If not for Long managing to move just enough out of the way, the move would've killed him. But even then, this small moment of contact did enough to heavily injure him.

“Roarr!!”

Again, the bloodlion roared, but it was Bai Yunfei who was attacking this time, and in triplets!

Doppelgangers!

Thanks to the +12 effect of the Fire-tipped Spear, he was able to call out two additional doppelgangers to stab at the head, waist, and tail of the bloodlion!

Roaring furiously, it swung its shortened tail like a whip to slap against one of the incoming spears. With a pop, the doppelganger was swept aside to hit the other doppelganger aiming for its waist!!

With two of the doppelgangers swept aside in one tail strike, this left the bloodlion free to swipe at the third Bai Yunfei with a single claw swipe, as one might try to take down a fly.

There was a clanging sound as the claw struck against the spear, the force being large enough to cause Bai Yunfei to lose his sense of balance. By usage of the Wave Treading Steps, Bai Yunfei was able to orientate himself and move away from danger next to Long's side.

“Swoosh! Swoosh!!”

Two distinct poofing sounds were heard when the bloodlion lashed out with another two claw strikes.

And just like that, the two doppelgangers were completely dispelled!!

“Long, are you alright?” Worried about Long’s physical health, Bai Yunfei knelt down by his side.

“I’m....I’m fine....” Waving Bai Yunfei away, Long tried his best to stand back up, the three claw marks on his upper waist made it difficult for him to do so. Despite his best efforts to staunch the bleeding, the several seconds it took to do so took long enough for a puddle of blood to form underneath him.

From his position ten meters away from the bloodlion, Long had a look of disbelief on his face. “But....but how though?! The bloodlion is a...mid-stage class six!”

In just one instant, the battle prowess of the bloodlion was revealed not to be an early-stage class six soulbeast, but a mid-stage class six!!

“It brokethrough.....it brokethrough during the battle with the purple-crowned snake!” Bai Yunfei exclaimed, “It became a mid-stage class six soulbeast during that fight!”

“Im...impossible...!”

“It is what it is, we can’t say it’s impossible.” Replied Bai Yunfei. His eyes never wandered away from the bloodlion, “Things are a little more annoying now!”

Before he could even finish his sentence, the bloodlion was already gone from sight!

Blanching in fright, both Bai Yunfei and Long moved into a defensive stance, but the bloodlion wasn’t coming for them.

“Boss Zhang, look out!!”

The target of the bloodlion wasn't Bai Yunfei or Long, but Zhang Yunpeng, who was just about to start harvesting the purple-crowned snake!

It was quite evident that the bloodlion wouldn't let anyone steal away its 'spoils of war'.

Thanks to Bai Yunfei's warning, Zhang Yunpeng was able to put up a guard just in time. Unfortunately, he wasn't strong enough to fully block or evade against the bloodlion, and so by the time the bloodlion was upon him, very little was done as the bloodlion slashed at his chest!

"Eeeek!"

From behind Zhang Yunpeng, the figure of Xiao Kong flew up into the space between the bloodlion's claw and Zhang Yunpeng. With Xiao Kong there, it was able to bring up Zhang Yunpeng's soul armament, saving them from certain death!

"Bang!"

Hit with the recoil of the blow, he and Xiao Kong were sent flying backwards like a bullet!

Their trajectory brought them flying into Zhou Feng, bringing the three of them flying another hundred meters away before finally crashing to the ground.

The left part of Zhang Yunpeng's waist had three terrible looking wounds that bled blood quickly, and as he tried to stand back up, a mouthful of blood came out violently from his mouth, promptly leading to him fainting straight away!

He hadn't been able to fully fend off the bloodlion's attack and was almost killed because of it!

"Boss Zhang!"

Following his fall, a small figure in blue darted out from behind the trees for him--it was Han Yan!

Ye Zi and Han Yan were coincidentally not too far from where Zhang Yunpeng landed, so it only took a few mere seconds for the girl to reach her team leader. Eyes brimming with tears, but silent in her panic, she pressed both hands to his wound and started to treat it with Hydrotherapy.

“Roarr!!!” Roaring again, the three-eyed bloodlion opened its bloody jaws wide. A fireball three meters wide began to form in the area in front of its mouth, and when it fully formed, it flew off towards the direction of the unconscious Zhang Yunpeng and Han Yan!

## Chapter 388: Fighting a Bloodlion Solo

---

The fireball dragged against the ground in a gravity-defying act of traveling straight forwards. Filled with a decent portion of the bloodlion's strength, the fireball moved without deviation to strike down the unconscious Zhang Yunpeng and Han Yan who was healing him!

And neither of the two would even be able to move away from being hit!

With how fast the fireball was moving, a weak Soul Sprite like Han Yan wouldn't even have a snowball's chance of dodging it.

Even with how much they wanted to save her, Zhou Feng and Kun weren't fast enough to do so. Long's body flashed with purple light as he tried to concentrate, but then another violent mouthful of blood was coughed out from his exertion!

“Boom!!!”

And just like that, the fireball exploded onto the ground, devouring at the space where Han Yan and Zhang Yunpeng were!

“Yan!”

Ye Zi cried, tears brimming in her eyes. Zhou Feng and the others were all looking on in despair as well.

“Eh?”

It was Long who first realized something was off. Where was Bai Yunfei?

He was only just right next to him a second ago, but where he was now?!

Using his soulsense, Long's eyes widened with surprise when he realized what had happened.

“They're alright! Brother Bai....”

The dust kicked up by the fireball was starting to clear away now, revealing a translucent orange barrier in its place!

The red-washed figure of Bai Yunfei stood behind the barrier with his right hand stretched outwards. The Cataclysmic Seal was clenched in his hand, and the orange barrier had erected itself two meters in front of the brick to protect the three of them behind it.

From the aura Bai Yunfei was radiating now, he was as strong as an...early-stage Soul Exalt!

Dual Flame Arts: ‘Coil’ form!

“I’ll hold it off, you guys get back, now!” He yelled, startling the group into action.

Beneath his legs, purple light was already starting to spark to life, allowing Bai Yunfei to Flash Step past Zhou Feng and Kun to fight the enraged three-eyed bloodlion with his Fire-tipped Spear.

The bloodlion had noticed the change that overcame Bai Yunfei with just a brief pause. When it noticed Bai Yunfei coming rapidly for it, the bloodlion roared angrily and pounced forward to meet him head on with its claws!

“Bang!!”

Man and soulbeast clashed against each other in the form of claws versus Cataclysmic Seal. The Fire-tipped Spear had been knocked aside by another one of the bloodlion’s claws, but Bai Yunfei managed to land a kick onto the flank of the bloodlion, only to hiss in pain. It felt as though he had kicked an iron plate, and the recoil forced him to take three steps back.

Though at the very least, he managed to force the bloodlion back as well.

For the sake of buying enough time for everyone else to run away, Bai Yunfei couldn’t take even a single second to relax. Pushing off against the ground, he made another attempt to rush for the bloodlion again.

One after another, the bloodlion and Bai Yunfei clashed against each other. Only the angry roars of the soulbeast and the metallic clanging between their weapons were heard with each clash. Thanks to Bai Yunfei's 'coil' form, he was able to temporarily gain the strength of an early-stage Soul Exalt.

But compared to the mid-stage class six three-eyed bloodlion, there was still a very large gap that had yet to be bridged!

With each time the bloodlion struck against his Cataclysmic Seal, Bai Yunfei tried his best to find a way to use either the Fire-tipped Spear, the Cataclysmic Seal, or even his flying daggers to bring down the bloodlion.

Several dozen exchanges were had with Bai Yunfei having yet to be harmed—physically at least.

Using the Cataclysmic Seal to defend against the bloodlion was extremely effective, but it was also very draining in terms of soulforce. There were even some times where Bai Yunfei hadn't been able to use enough soulforce to properly insulate himself from the blows, leading to several near-misses from a serious injury.

It was fortunate that his soulforce was much higher than the average soul cultivator. His regeneration wasn't small by any means either, so he was able to maintain a calm demeanor throughout his fight.

“Bang!” Yet again, the Cataclysmic Seal blocked against the bloodlion's pouncing swipe. Readjusting itself, the Cataclysmic Seal withdrew its orange glow before pulsating with a powerful red glow instead. Flying at the bloodlion's waist, it flew quickly to try and strike it down, only for the tail of the bloodlion to come up!

“Pap!”

Upon contact, the Cataclysmic Seal was sent rebounding away!

Its tail was a surprisingly powerful tool!

However, there was a difference this time when the two struck! A wave of fire manifested outside of the barrier and wrapped around the bloodlion's tail. As soon as it completely surrounded the tail, the halo of fire contracted rapidly to constrict around the entirety of the soulbeast's body!

+10 Additional effect of the Cataclysmic Seal, Flame Twister!

10% chance to activate 'Flame Twister' and restrict the mobility of another by 10% for a maximum of ten seconds upon attacking.

Cooldown of 1 minute.

There was a noticeable difference in the bloodlion's movements after the Flame Twister had activated. Despite being a fire-type soulbeast, the Flame Twister wasn't something it could adjust and adapt to!

Eyes lighting up at the chance presented to it, Bai Yunfei moved swiftly to the bloodlion and stabbed at its throat with his Fire-tipped Spear!

Whilst moving slower than before, the bloodlion hadn't lost the entirety of its battle prowess. Dodging the spear by crouching, the bloodlion was able to avoid the spear by having it graze over the top of its head. Then, by arching its back to build up power in its front legs, it pushed off against the ground to retreat backwards and avoid Bai Yunfei from making a follow up.

Harrumphing, Bai Yunfei leapt forward once again. Since the soulbeast wasn't yet off the effects of the Flame Twister, he'd make use of the chances provided to him. He grabbed hold of the Cataclysmic Seal with his left hand and concentrated its elemental fire into the brick for a normal strike with it!

Without hesitation, he slammed the brick down onto the right part of the bloodlion's waist!

Threefold Slap!

A move that hadn't seen the light of day in battle for a very long



time, but a useful move nonetheless. The sound of contact was heard when the brick slapped against the soulbeast, but the bloodlion didn't look like it was hurt.

But then in the next second, its body was sent flying away without warning!!

+13 Additional Effect, Hurl!

“Roarr!!” The soulbeast was caught completely off guard from this out-of-the-blue effect. In an attempt to stop itself from flying away, the soulbeast tried using its elemental fire, but to no avail.

An irresistible force was forcibly moving the bloodlion, and even with its best attempts, it wasn't able to do anything to stop it!

Due to its air-borne status, the bloodlion was at its most vulnerable state yet.

But even with such a great opportunity to attack, Bai Yunfei had instead....turned towards the other direction!

The direction where the corpse of the purple-crowned snake was!

With a few leaps, Bai Yunfei arrived at the snake's head. The Fire-tipped Spear made quick work of the corpse, and in just one swing, the entirety of its head was completely detached from the snake's body.

Grabbing hold of the head, he tossed it with all his might!

“Long, catch!!”

At some point during Bai Yunfei's battle with the bloodlion, Long managed to reach the area where Zhang Yunpeng was to move him farther away from battle with the others.

When Long heard his name, his head snapped back just in time to see a purple object come flying at him. His hand caught the object, but then when he realized exactly what it was, his jaws dropped open, “This is...”

“The snake's crown, take it!” Kun cried out in joy.

“I’ll deal with this soulbeast, get away from here as fast as you can. The farther the better, and don’t come back!”

Twirling his spear, Bai Yunfei turned back to look in earnest at the re-orientated bloodlion.

“Don’t be brave!” Long snapped, “I’ll escort the others to safety and come back to he—”

“Forget it!! I won’t argue any more, I’ve it covered! You guys have the crown, so leave the forest!” Interrupted Bai Yunfei right as the bloodlion pounced at him.

“You guys got what you came for, I’ll be staying here to continue my training, so this is where we say our goodbyes!”

“What?”

This wasn’t an answer they were expecting to get.

While what he was saying was true, to leave him here to fight while they fled was a little....

“Brother Bai—”

“Shut up and do as I say!!” Bai Yunfei snapped, anger radiating in his eyes.

Long had been listening to the conversation in silence, as if thinking of his decision. With that final line from Bai Yunfei, he turned around to the others. “Got it, we’re leaving then!!”

“But—” Ye Zi began.

“We’ll just be a burden if we stay any longer.” Knowing that such a response would come, Long interrupted her. Already had he grabbed onto Zhang Yunpeng so that they could run away.

The injured Xiao Kong was already being cradled by Kun, meaning that there was nothing else they had to do. Everyone gave one final look to Bai Yunfei in gratitude before running away with Long to flee the forest....

“Whew....” Bai Yunfei sighed. “What are you going to chase now? Your opponent is me!!”

Stomping heavily onto the ground, he flew towards the soulbeast with renewed vigor to stop the bloodlion from chasing after the others.

Forced to move to the side to dodge, the bloodlion turned around to glare furiously at Bai Yunfei. Indignation was in full force in its eyes, and with a mighty roar, it dove at Bai Yunfei to try and tear him to pieces.

The rapidly dwindling auras of Long and the others as they made their escape wasn't lost on Bai Yunfei. Smiling in the fact that they would be safe, he twirled his spear and beckoned at the bloodlion.

“Well then....I'll take you on here and now!”

# Chapter 389: A Mental Attack

---

For miles around, explosion rocked the earth one after another. Dirt and rubble flew into the air along with the plant life with each explosion that shined even brighter than the stars above.

All of the soulbeasts within the area were cowered in fear with each tremor that shook the forest. The tremendous auras that were radiating off a certain part of the forest had left them all with complete and utter fear.

The Wave Treading Step was used in abundance as Bai Yunfei weaved left and right like a shadow. Each attack the bloodlion sent at him was dodged and followed up with the Fire-tipped Spear to stab with his left.

In his right, the Ardent Sun Glove shined brightly with red light to infuse his flying daggers with power to stab into the bloodlion's waist.

A fireball jettisoned out from the bloodlion's mouth, smashing into the two flying daggers in a brilliant explosion of red light and rebounding them away.

By the time the fireball disappeared from sight, the bloodlion was already mid-leap in an attempt to tear down Bai Yunfei. In another clash of red, the two figures intersected with one another.

Approximately ten minutes had passed since Long and the others managed to successfully flee the area. Combined with the prior five minutes before then, Bai Yunfei spent a total of fifteen minutes in his 'coil' form.

What Bai Yunfei was waiting for was the complete departure of Long's aura from the forest. He didn't want Long and the others to come back, so them leaving the forest completely gave Bai Yunfei some semblance of relief.

Landing on the opposite side of one another, the bloodlion

roared, firing yet another fireball that streaked about a meter above the ground at Bai Yunfei. Even with this one meter of height, the ground beneath it had a linear burn mark, showing just how intense the fireball was in heat.

The fireball was covering a large amount of ground by the time Bai Yunfei turned his head back. Rather than thinking about dodging or using the Cataclysmic Seal to defend, Bai Yunfei shifted a half step backwards with his right hand reared behind his body. The muscles in his arm bulged slightly as he prepared to punch, and then, in a flash of red light, he punched!

“Bang!!” The fireball made contact with his fist, leading to elemental fire scattering into every direction.

“So this is the strength of a mid-stage class six soulbeast....” Bai Yunfei commented. Ideas and plans streamed in his mind one after another as he observed the lion. With the ten minutes spent fighting, Bai Yunfei had at least some semblance of familiarity fighting one now.

Compared to the hillbeast, the three-eyed bloodlion was very different. The hillbeast placed emphasis on its defenses, which, Bai Yunfei would’ve found extremely hard to break if not for his Dual Dragon Burst whose strength could frighten even a late-stage Soul Exalt. The bloodlion emphasized offense over defense and gave even Bai Yunfei a feeling of awe for it.

Bai Yunfei’s ‘coil’ form gave him strength to fight on par with the bloodlion, however. This in itself was already a clear testament to Bai Yunfei’s strength and the support his equipment gave him. Combined, Bai Yunfei could fight as an early-stage Soul Exalt on equal footing with the mid-stage class six.

“My ‘coil’ form has another fifteen minutes left...if I keep waiting around, I’ll lose!” Urging his soulforce now, Bai Yunfei pushed off against the ground in a blaze of purple light. His figure blurred into a shadow as he streaked for the bloodlion.

On the way, one shadow turned into three to strike at the bloodlion from three separate angles!

+12 Additional effect of the Fire-tipped Spear; Doppelganger!

The bloodlion didn't move from its spots, however. When the three Bai Yunfeis approached, the bloodlion only growled softly as it charged up its elemental fire. All three of its eyes gave Bai Yunfei the death glare with a particularly crimson shade of color began to show in them for an eery look.

Then, its soulforce began to ripple and flow in a strange fashion....

“Roarrrrr!!!”

An ear-piercing roar of angry exploded out from the bloodlion's mouth, but there was no elemental fire. It was just an ordinary roar meant to intimidate rather than to harm.

The three shadows were already upon the bloodlion, however. The one on the very left was just about to strike when his face whitened in fear!

Feet locking up, Bai Yunfei stopped moving and fell forward--it looked almost as if he had tripped and lost his balance!

All four limbs of the bloodlion moved to dodge the strikes of the other two doppelgangers before opening its jaw wide open to bite down on the first Bai Yunfei!

“Crack!!”

There was a crunch as the teeth of the bloodlion closed in on one another, but no flesh was caught in between.

Somehow, Bai Yunfei managed to plant his spear into the ground and twist his body around enough to dodge the jaws of death onto his head. Still with the spear planted in the ground, he used that to help kick off the ground to slide a few meters to the side.

Now that he was safe, Bai Yunfei could feel his face slick with

sweat and his heart racing furiously.

In that one moment before the bite came, Bai Yunfei felt as if countless of icy-cold spikes were stabbing into his brain, and even into his soul! In that moment, his soulforce refused to obey him. Even his body refused to obey his commands!

“This is....a mental attack!!” His eyes contracted in realization.

Second later, his eyes shifted over to the ring he wore on his right hand. He felt some of his soulforce enter the ring during the attack when he lost all control over himself, but it was because of this drain of soulforce that he was later able to regain control over himself in time to save his life.

He wasn’t a stranger to this type of sensation. That was the sign of an additional effect being triggered!

The ring he wore now was one of the +12 rings he upgraded when he was trying to save Tang Xinyun back in Curopia City!

Equipment Grade: High  
Elemental Affinity: None  
Upgrade Level: +12  
Additional Attribute: +130 Spirit  
Soul Compatibility: 25%

+10 Additional Effect: Decrease soulforce consumption of a soul skill by 5%.  
+12 Additional Effect: Decrease effects of mental attacks by 15%.

Upgrade Requirement: 62 Soulpoints

“Damnit! It’s just a class six, how can it use mental attacks already?!” He wailed.

Then an idea hit him.

“Oh! A three-eyed bloodlion are special soulbeasts capable of learning how to attack the mind. But.....it’s an extremely rare chance to see one know how! How ‘lucky’ of me, I came across a

bloodlion that conveniently knew how?!”

Mental attacks were methods of attack that only Soul Kings or class seven soulbeasts knew how to use. Aside from that, there were a few soul skills that could replicate said effects, and some of the more rarer breeds of soulbeasts were capable of using mind-based attacks as well.

As said above, this bloodlion Bai Yunfei was fighting was exactly one of those rare breeds.

The bloodlion originally didn't think it'd need to use it against a human of all things, but after battling for so long, it had finally recognized Bai Yunfei as a predator, not prey.

The longer they fought, the more this 'feeling' grew, so it finally decided to end things here and now with its ultimate move.

“A mental attack....things have gotten thorny now!” Narrowing his eyes, Bai Yunfei began to think of what to do next.

There was no way that the bloodlion would give him enough time to think though. It pounced straight for him, forcing Bai Yunfei to leap out of the way before the bloodlion turned around and had its third eye flash crimson again.

And in that moment, Bai Yunfei felt his own mind and soulforce slammed with a foreign force, producing a dizzying effect!

“Damnit...” Snarling, Bai Yunfei bit his tongue, but that didn't help him snap out from his bind.

“Boom! Booom!!”

Two separate explosions were heard as Bai Yunfei retreated backwards. Before the explosion could hit him, an earthen barrier was erected in front of him to protect him from the worst, but by the time he regained control of himself, the barrier had already been brought down!

A wave of fire flew for Bai Yunfei, but he was able to swiftly move



out of the way by using the Wave Treading Steps.

Since its attack failed to land, the bloodlion roared in anger and flashed its third eye again at him!

“Again?!” He cried out.

Pushing his soulforce into the Cataclysmic Seal, Bai Yunfei was relieved to see another orange barrier pop up in place in front of him.

“Boom! Boom! Boom!!”

For the second time now, the attacks of the bloodlion landed against the barrier, with each blast progressively stronger than the first. And when each blast landed, Bai Yunfei’s barrier rippled like if it was made with water, and seemingly ready to break at any moment.

He was....in danger now!

# Chapter 390: The Decisive Blow!

---

Still standing in his original position, Bai Yunfei continued to transmit his soulforce from his body into the Cataclysmic Seal floating in front of him. Since the Cataclysmic Seal's consumption of soulforce wasn't fast enough to keep with the demand, Bai Yunfei saw fit to transmit his soulforce in it as well.

Bai Yunfei's very person wasn't viewable from the outside due to the amount of orange light being shone from the barrier. Inversely, this also meant that Bai Yunfei wasn't able to see what was going on on the outside.

But just from sound alone—there were explosions happening every few seconds—Bai Yunfei could tell that the bloodlion was attacking the barrier again and again.

“This is the fourth time! If I let his go on, I won't have any other choice!!” Gloom filled Bai Yunfei's face, his mind racing to come up with a solution, “I've only ten minutes left in my 'coil' form. This bloodlion's mental attacks are annoying, but in the end, it's all a matter of who can outlast the other, and...”

“Roarrrr!!!”

Another wave of dizziness flooded his mind before the +12 ring on his right hand diluted the effects. Brought back to a state of semi-clarity again, Bai Yunfei felt the bloodlion's attacks renew on his barrier, causing it to weaken even more!

Two seconds passed before Bai Yunfei was back to full status, to which he immediately started to fill his barrier with soulforce.

But something was amiss.

“Did it....stop?”

After experiencing the mental attacks several times by now, Bai Yunfei's senses were starting to get a feel for things. Just seemingly, the follow-up of the bloodlion after a mental attack

just....didn't match up!

“Am I seeing things?” Bai Yunfei's eyebrows scrunched together. He wasn't a hundred percent sure, but a guess was already brewing in him, “If not, then ‘that’ will be the time to strike!”

Again and again, the bloodlion roared in anger while raining down bursts of elemental fire against the barrier without pause. It was a little frantic now, as it originally thought it could easily defeat the human if it used its ultimate move.

But then came this stalemate where the bloodlion had already used its mental attack several times now without success!!

The earth barrier this human was using was far too annoying to get rid of and was practically harder to penetrate than the shell of an early-stage class six rockshell tortoise. If not for the barrier, the human behind it would've been turned into paste a long time ago.

If its rate of soulforce usage was to be relied on, the bloodlion had only ten minutes left before its tank would run empty. And if that were to happen, it'd be unable to battle, meaning that escape was the only possible solution after that. But....was that really it??

The very notion of fleeing was met with indignation by the bloodlion.

It was the sovereign of this area, it would not simply relinquish its hold on its territory just like so!

It could tell that as long as it maintained its mental attacks in conjunction with the bursts of elemental fire, the barrier would give away sooner or later, and the human behind it would die, it'd just need to keep on firing!!

The bloodthirst in the soulbeast was at its peak.

“Damnit damnit! That's another two minutes lost! If this goes on, I'll be in danger!!” A sense of urgency was starting to kick in in Bai Yunfei as well. Time had been spent waiting for the optimal moment to strike, and he had only just about gave up trying to

attack in between the mental attacks in favor of focusing on defending.

This situation right now was completely taxing on Bai Yunfei's mind. If this goes on, I'll be in danger!" A sense of urgency swelled up in Bai Yunfei's mind. All of his efforts had gone towards enduring these attacks in order to wait for the most optimal time to strike, but to take such a passive course of action didn't sit right with Bai Yunfei and was very taxing on him.

Another mental attack came at Bai Yunfei just as he recovered from the initial one and was preparing to beef up the defenses of his barrier again.

Who knew that the bloodlion would roar again at that moment!

After recovering from another mental attack, Bai Yunfei was just about to reinforce the barrier, the bloodlion roared once more!

It was attacking with a mental attack yet again!

"Crap!!"

Fear and apprehension flooded Bai Yunfei's eyes. If the mental attack were to hit him now, he'd lose the barrier once in for all.

The Yun's Soul Ring on his left hand flashed with light once to cover Bai Yunfei's body with it, removing the feeling of dizziness away from his mind!

"It's here!!" Was the first reaction of Bai Yunfei. The moment he was waiting for this entire time had finally appeared!

+12 Additional effect of the Yun's Soul Ring, activate!

10% chance to be completely immune to a mental attack.  
Cooldown of 1 hour.

Complete immunity to mental attacks....this was the moment Bai Yunfei was waiting for!

He gave up on trying to reinforce his barrier. With this

opportunity given to him now, Bai Yunfei looked to the bloodlion. The light hadn't even fully left its third eye and elemental fire was still being gathered in the soulbeast, meaning there was plenty of opportunities for Bai Yunfei to attack with!

"Here it is!" Bai Yunfei was ecstatic. After using its mental attack, the bloodlion was in a state of vulnerability!

Excited as he was, it didn't impact how he moved. With the Yun's Soul Ring's effect activated, he could charge head on without hesitation!

"Whoosh!" His right hand swung forward to shoot out a single explosive flying dagger at the bloodlion's third eye!

This one flying dagger was much stronger than the previous ones he threw, and when it closed in on the bloodlion's head, it exploded straight away!

"Roarr!!!!" A pain-filled roar came from the bloodlion. Now that its vulnerable moment was over, the bloodlion came back to its senses just in time to feel extreme pain!

With the explosive flying dagger exploding, the bloodlion was naturally forced to shut its eyes close.

Despite being aimed at the third eye, the flying dagger wasn't meant to explode and destroy it, but to deliver a burst of elemental fire to each of its three eyes to give its soulsense a huge jolt in the senses!

His left hand came up after the flying dagger was thrown to release the Cataclysmic Seal. Orange light was replaced by red, and its shape expanded in size with each inch it made towards the soulbeast. By the time ten meters of distance was covered, the brick was already the size of a door and was still increasing in size.

And while the soulbeast was busying roaring in pain from the dagger, the Cataclysmic Seal struck it!!

"Bang!!" The bloodlion's body lifted off from the ground when

the brick struck, and two sharp teeth of the bloodlion was ejected out from its mouth upon contact.

One flying dagger, one brick, and a short distance later, Bai Yunfei was just about to strike upon the bloodlion with his own fists!

He paused for a moment with his right foot sinking two inches deep into the ground behind him. Arching his back, his left palm extended towards the bloodlion's head as his right hand clenched. He twisted his back and primed his right arm, allowing his soulforce to turn the right hand alight with elemental fire!

There was half a second of pause before the light in Bai Yunfei's eyes hardened. Then, his right fist punched at the bloodlion's belly!

Ten percent power; Eighty-one Fold Fist Force!!

“Boom!!!”

There was a sickening crunch of bone and flesh as the bloodlion's massive body was sent flying like a bullet through the air, blood streaming out from its mouth and nose without stop!

But that wasn't the end!

Eyeing the airborne bloodlion, Bai Yunfei's arms withdrew to his sides. Clapping, he folded his fingers over each other first before going through a series of complicated hand seals. With both essence fireseeds churning violently now, the elemental fire in him was about to erupt!

It took two seconds for the final hand seal to be finished and his arms now back at his sides. Elemental fire coiled around both arms in tremendous amounts, like they were two malevolent dragons ready to be let loose.

This move was....the Dual Dragon Burst!

Now that the bloodlion was two hundred meters away and on the

ground, Bai Yunfei's eyes glinted. Now was the time to strike!

His arms twisted in preparation to punch....

The fiery dragons coiled around his arms were already starting to come out when Bai Yunfei suddenly leapt forward. He spun around in a half-circle to punch out not in the direction of the bloodlion, but to release the two dragons in the opposite direction!!

# Chapter 391: The Hidden Enemy

---

The two dragons traveled over several hundred meters in a matter of seconds, the fires of its body revealing....a black-robed person in its path!

This figure had been waiting on the top of the mountain just a while ago. A few moments ago, this person had been moving closer and closer to the battle. And if his elemental fire underneath his feet was any indication, and the motions of his right hand, he was preparing to take action against Bai Yunfei and the bloodlion.

But when the dual dragons drew close, his pupils contracted in fear. Pausing in his footsteps, the man's hand moved even faster to withdraw a black shadow to protect himself with!

“Boom!!”

The two dragons hit their mark in an explosion of red light and a sound unlike any other. But from within the explosion was yet another layer of red light that seemed to block off even the Dual Dragon Burst!

“Late-stage Soul Exalt....a Soul King almost!!”

The fact that the Dual Dragon Burst didn't stop the man didn't go unnoticed by Bai Yunfei. From the man's aura, Bai Yunfei was astonished to find out just how strong he was.

“Bang!” A secondary explosion scattered the Dual Dragon Burst into the area, and a black shadow came flying out to come crashing down on the earth near Bai Yunfei.

Upon closer observation, Bai Yunfei realized that the object wasn't the person, but the corpse of a bird-type soulbeast!! In his moment of peril, the figure had used a soulbeast puppet to protect himself from the explosion of elemental fire. While the soulbeast died within practically milliseconds of contact, but the soulforce it used in that one moment revealed it to be a mid-stage class six



soulbeast!

“A beast tamer!” His eyes narrowed in suspicion. That object the man pulled out had unexpectedly been a soulbeast that died before it could even scream when it was pulled out from its space ring.....

In other words, the man was from the Beast Taming School!!

“F\*ck....f\*ck!!!” From the remnants of the elemental fire came a figure in black. The first thing Bai Yunfei noticed about the man other than his black robes was his age. The man was in his fifties, and had frazzled gray hair to go with his age. The wrinkles on his face was pronounced, but did nothing to hide the sinister look on his face. In fact, his face was very intimidating.

The robes on the right part of his person was burnt to at least half of what it used to be, and his right arm itself was burnt slightly black—a clear sign that he had taken damage from the Dual Dragon Burst.

“Brat, were you planning to attack me?!” He glared angrily at Bai Yunfei. Not once did he imagine that he’d be ambushed by the person he was going to ambush, and so powerfully too!!

The move had been so powerful that even he himself had to go all out to protect himself! But it wasn’t enough, and he lost both his mid-stage class six twinhead vulture and injured his right hand!

Everything was going beyond what he expected, even for someone as far-sighted as he, a late-stage Soul Exalt. At first, he had been watching the battle with keen interest because of the youngster fighting, but he didn’t expect to not only be greeted with such a powerful move, but to be hurt so much by it!

How could he not be shocked in that case?!

“Me, planning all of this? You’re mixing up the details here, it was you that was planning to attack me, how dare you have the gall to say that to me?”

Bai Yunfei snorted. He wasn’t at all intimidated by this powerful

foe, but his body was already recovering his soulforce in preparation to fight.

All of the actions Bai Yunfei took so far in this fight wasn't meant only for the bloodlion, but also for this hidden figure in the back!

Something felt off from the very beginning, but Bai Yunfei couldn't put his finger on it. It was a weak feeling, and Bai Yunfei wasn't too sure if he was just being paranoid or not at first, but after using the Soul Concealment Art for so long, Bai Yunfei was sufficiently proficient at sensing soulforce when it was being suppressed.

So he entered combat with the bloodlion with this slight suspicion in his mind. And then when he gained a boost in power in thanks to his 'coil' form, he was able to confirm his suspicions to find out the truth—someone was observing him from the mountain!

His attempt to hide was well done, but not well enough to evade Bai Yunfei's senses. Bai Yunfei wouldn't be able to tell just how strong the man was, but he at the very least a mid-stage Soul Exalt!

In addition to that, this man had actually been watching the fight between the purple-crowned snake and the three-eyed bloodlion before Bai Yunfei and his group arrived; and didn't leave since then, meaning that he was clearly plotting something!

This was the real reason why Bai Yunfei 'drove' Long and the others away. The real danger wasn't the bloodlion, but the mysterious man in waiting. Should they stay in the Soulbeast Forest, they'd definitely be in danger.

But if they were taken out of the equation, then Bai Yunfei would be able to fight this mysterious foe without needing to worry about any other external variables.

Bit by bit, Bai Yunfei learned more and more about the situation at hand. At one point during the battle, Bai Yunfei felt the man's

gaze switch from the bloodlion to him, and that was when it all started to click.

After showing off plenty of his soul armaments, the malicious intent of the man was all too clear now.

Anyone with a malicious heart would be tempted by the amount of soul armaments he had; that much Bai Yunfei was all too familiar with.

Since the man's interest was in the bloodlion, Bai Yunfei was sure that the man wouldn't allow for it to be killed.

So when he was about to deliver the final blow, he decided to ambush the man instead if he came forward.

Of course, if the man decided not to show up, then Bai Yunfei would simply kill the bloodlion and flee straight away to avoid a confrontation.

Bai Yunfei was right in his inferences. Prior to Bai Yunfei's arrival, the man came across the snake and lion and decided to observe the fight. After a while, he was ecstatic to find out that the bloodlion was capable of attacking the mind! It was then and there that he decided to capture the soulbeast, and with luck, he'd be able to bind it to his will and turn it into a soulbeast puppet.

Bai Yunfei and his group didn't bring up much attention at first. Adventurers like them were common here in the Soulbeast Forest. If this particular group were to decide to get in the way, he'd kill them. Things were as simple as that.

What they did next was particularly surprising; Bai Yunfei most specifically. A late-stage Soul Ancestor that could become a Soul Exalt was definitely very surprising. He'd have to investigate this matter closely, so going after the group would be a waste of time.

The more Bai Yunfei fought, the more the man found himself interested.

And the more interested he became, the more his urge grew.

The urge to....kill and steal his secrets!!

But the battle in front of him was a volatile one. Things could change in favor of another at the drop of a hat, and Bai Yunfei was still consistently surprising him with how he was pushing the bloodlion back—and at some times nearly killing it!

He couldn't allow the bloodlion to die. So when it all looked like Bai Yunfei was about to kill it, he leapt into action to stop him.

But not once did he imagine that Bai Yunfei would suddenly attack him first!

The fact that Bai Yunfei was so vigilant to him added another layer of surprise, but it also helped him realize that he had been underestimating Bai Yunfei the entire time.

That mighty strike from earlier didn't even look like it exhausted Bai Yunfei by even a sliver—things were getting pretty ridiculous.

All these factors combined made him furious beyond belief. He was an elder of the Beast Taming School and a late-stage Soul Exalt that stood just a step away from becoming a Soul King.

In what way was it justifiable to suffer this 'disgrace'?!

To be injured to such a degree by a not-even Soul Exalt whelpling, it was preposterous!

Bai Yunfei's next words infuriated him even more. Up in the air now, his right arm flashed with all the indignation he had—

“Brat, I'll tear you to pieces!!”

The ring on his right hand twinkled ominously. A shadow, crimson in color and half the height of a person, appeared by the man's side. Soulfence as powerful as he was extended forth from the shadow's side as its four limbs stepped into the air with purple light sparking with each step. Before the figure could even be clearly seen, it disappeared in a streak of red to descend down onto Bai Yunfei like a shooting star!

From the powerful aura of the being, Bai Yunfei's eyes opened wide in frightful surprise.

“Fire and lightning! This is....a late-stage class six, a thunderfire wolf!!”

# Chapter 392: Thunderfire Wolf

---

Like a three-eyed bloodlion, a thunderfire wolf was a rare strain of soulbeast. Aside from its large size, it didn't differ too much in appearance than from any regular wolf, but its unique factor was its ability in being able to train in elemental lightning and fire; the two elements that most soul cultivators usually had trouble pairing together.

Unlike those soul cultivators, this wolf was capable of using both elements at the same time in battle!

With even training and dedication, the average soul cultivator could probably switch in between elements; but not at the same time. This feat alone was hard enough to do for most, so to use two elements simultaneously was a definite advantage over anyone else in battle.

To use two elements simultaneously required reaching a state of 'harmony' with both elements. A fusion of the two elements without losing control was practically impossible, and out of ten thousand soul cultivators, not a single one would be able to achieve said state.

Soulbeasts were of a different scenario. Those gifted by the heavens could attain strengths that soul cultivators could only long for—this thunderfire wolf was one of them!

Within the pyres of fire was the bolt of lightning, and with the lightning came the fire!!

It was the beast tamer's strongest soulbeast puppet. He first received it when it was a late-stage class five, but with enough training, he was able to bring it up to its current level. He actually liked to fight with a second soulbeast, as per usual with how beast tamers usually fought, but the second soulbeast he normally used was already dead after serving as his meat shield....

That thought made the man even angrier. Coming to the Soulbeast Forest was just for business at first, so he counted himself lucky for coming across the three-eyed bloodlion. But before he could even capture it, Bai Yunfei and his group came along, costing him both it and his mid-stage class six twinheaded vulture.

But the bloodlion was still alive. If he could just kill Bai Yunfei, he'd be able to recoup his losses. And if he killed Bai Yunfei, he'd be able to seize all of the soul armaments on him.

That'd be enough to make him more than happy!

He formed a seal with his left hand, commanding the thunderfire wolf to start with its most powerful attack. With his right, he summoned seven eagle-sized birds to his side, screeching as they followed the thunderfire wolves!

Early-stage class five soulbeast, dreamwind hawks!

They weren't very strong, but what they lacked in quality, they made up for in quantity. With the beast tamer controlling them, they'd be able to attack as a cohesive unit and make use of their strongest combinational attack, the 'Great Whirlwind Wall'.

Neither the seven dreamwind hawks or the thunderfire wolves had any emotions in their eyes, except for the apathetic sense to kill.

There was only a roar from the wolf before its entire body was basked in purple light. Elemental lightning sparked this way and that to make it seem about half as big as it was before, and within the elemental lightning was a tinge of fire. Circling around the wolf, its presence made the purple shadows of the wolf slightly more intimidating.

With fire acting as a supplementary to lightning, the thunderfire wolf was able to increase its speed several times over to come snapping down onto Bai Yunfei in a matter of moments!

The pervading elemental lightning was already making his body numb before the wolf's jaws could connect. He had been wary of its speed and was prepared for it. Stepping out of the way by using the Flash Step, he was able to move to the right of the wolf!

“Boom!!!”

Stone and rubble shot everywhere when the thunderfire wolf landed on the ground where Bai Yunfei once stood. In its place was a crater nearly a hundred meters in circumference! But the wolf didn't stop there. No sooner did it land on the ground did it immediately leap towards where Bai Yunfei was!

Bai Yunfei's Flash Step took him well over a hundred meters away from the wolf, so he was unharmed by the initial crater. Even when the wolf missed, Bai Yunfei didn't move to attack it. Instead, he leapt several meters into the air and began to skywalk into the opposite direction to get away from the wolf.

In his hands wasn't the Fire-tipped Spear, but both of his Desert Eagles! Turning around, he began to attack not at the thunderfire wolf, but....the beast tamer!

He paused his momentum so that he could fire accurately. With both guns lifted up, he adopted a strange posture to fire at the beast tamer.

This was....his gun fu!!

“Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang.....”

Following the rapid sounds of gunfire, several bullets were fired at the beast tamer in large amounts. Whether it be in the quantity of the bullets or how fast it was going, the beast tamer could hardly understand what was being fired at him!

“Bang! Bang! Bang! Boom! Boom.....”

Seven distinct explosions were heard following the gunfire, with seven different bursts of blood.



After that, seven objects suddenly dropped down from the skies!

Despite how scattered apart the birds were, all seven of the dreamwind hawks were completely killed already!!

Each of the seven hawks were riddled with bullets, but the ones that really mattered were the ones that hit them directly in the beak or its eyes. There simply hadn't been enough time for the beast tamer to command them to dodge before he lost connection with them, and that in itself lied one of the biggest shortcomings of soulbeast puppetry. Any puppet below a class six in strength lacked self-preservational skills, so without any directions, they'd be easily killed in this bullet storm.

"Im—impossible!!" The beast tamer exclaimed. Bai Yunfei hadn't used this way of attacking before when fighting the bloodlion, but the beast tamer didn't think that Bai Yunfei would actually have even more secrets up his sleeves!

It took three seconds for Bai Yunfei to rid him of the seven dreamwind hawks, and after they fell, Bai Yunfei was free to move forward again. Simultaneously moving out of the way to dodge the thunderfire wolf's attack, he aimed his two pistols at the beast tamer and pulled the trigger!

"Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!"

Four bullets were fired, two fire ones and two lightning ones. Of the two, the lightning bullets were faster, and one of the lightning bullets in particular was two times faster than the other three!

The beast tamer widened his eyes in surprise. His seven dreamwind hawks dying to the bullets was already more than enough to tell him that these bullets were dangerous and shouldn't be touched. Moving his head, he was able to dodge the first lightning bullet before he pushed himself completely out of the way to dodge the other three.

When the three bullets passed by him, one of the fire bullets

began to curve towards him, as if attracted somehow.

Without warning, it turned around when the beast tamer dodged and shot for his right eye!

“Bang!!”

There was a collision between bullet and flesh, with blood and bits of flesh flying out. Instead of the eye, the bullet had instead smashed against the beast tamer’s palm! A late-stage Soul Exalt had skin and flesh strong enough to withstand this bullet, but the bullet would still be strong enough to tear out some flesh!

“Gods....f\*cking damnit!!” Hissing, the beast tamer whipped his hand over to examine the scorched area of his palm.

This was the second time now. The second time that Bai Yunfei had caught him off guard and suffered from it!

“Die!!” He roared. The sinister look on his face somehow grew even more malevolent.

The wound on his right palm didn’t even matter to him anymore as he whipped through several hand seals before they melded into one last hand seal. Upon the last hand seal, his soulforce began to fluctuate strangely; but it wasn’t his own body that a change was happening in, but the thunderfire wolf!

“Roarr!!!!”

The thunderfire wolf was mid-stride when it roared again, but the soulforce in its body was starting to fluctuate more and more! With each cycle it made around its body, the soulforce grew rapidly, and within several moments, it was already at the levels of a late-stage class six!

Before, it wasn’t at the peak levels of a late-stage, but the beast tamer had made it so now. He couldn’t allow it to go any farther than that, since forcibly making the thunderfire wolf a class seven wouldn’t end well.

“Bang!”

From when the thunderfire wolf stepped off from the ground, a sonic boom was heard as it came for Bai Yunfei’s head with its claws and jaws ready to tear and bite!

The Cataclysmic Seal moved into action first. Erecting a barrier over Bai Yunfei, he heard a thud as the wolf slammed against the barrier with its fire-enhanced claws.

However.

Rather than the wolf being stopped by the barrier, the barrier trembled slightly before its claws began to tear half an inch through it!

“Boom!!”

The claw hadn’t even made its way completely through the barrier when the barrier.....disintegrated!

# Chapter 393: A Challenging Battle

---

The barrier had collapsed as soon as the the wolf was upon it!

But the barrier did its job; the attack of the wolf had lost all momentum and power.

Bai Yunfei leapt backwards as quickly as he could, widening the distance between them by several hundred meters before erecting another barrier when he came to a stop.

Rather than to let its prey go, the thunderfire wolf followed suit. Its entire body was basked in purple and red light before disappearing in a blur to attempt to devour Bai Yunfei again!

Bai Yunfei was afraid to use the Cataclysmic Seal to attack. Whether he enlarged it to attack with a push or a stamp, the wolf would be able to dodge both with ease and get close.

He needed the Cataclysmic Seal more for its defenses than its offense!

Its defenses was what he was relying most on right now. Thus, attacking the wolf was disastrously dangerous. His Desert Eagles were already back in his ring so that he could use the Fire-tipped Spear in conjunction with the Wave Treading Steps to avoid danger.

Soon, one Bai Yunfei turned into three to stab at the thunderwolf!

“Bang! Bang!”

The Bai Yunfei in the middle was snapped up in the wolf’s jaws and the one on the right had been torn in two by its claws in a matter of moments!

The doppelgangers served their purpose, however. They weren’t meant to attack, but to distract! With the wolf distracted, the Bai Yunfei on the left was able to stab at its armors with a burst of

concentrated elemental power!

“Booom!!”

The spark of contact triggered the Fire-tipped Spear's additional effect, sending the wolf flying away from Bai Yunfei. Careening into several trees, it tumbled across the ground, but....it wasn't hurt at all!

“So....this is the might of a late-stage class six soulbeast....” Bai Yunfei frowned. The two had only touched for just a small moment, but it was long enough for Bai Yunfei to really understand his chances against the wolf. Victory was practically impossible, and just withstanding one of the wolf's attacks would be a good question to ask right now....

“Should I use that then?” Hesitation played on Bai Yunfei's mind, “No. I shouldn't. Even if I get rid of the wolf, how am I going to deal with the soul cultivator? Should I kill him first then?”

He was operating under very bad conditions right now. There was a very powerful foe near him, and his 'coil' form was close to expiring, so he had to attack now!!

He snarled. The thunderfire wolf would have to be forgotten about for now. Turning around, he flew off into the air to scale a hundred meters high into the sky to where the beast tamer was!

“He wants to attack me first? How ridiculous!” The beast tamer knew straight away what Bai Yunfei was planning. It was a common tactic for other people to attack the beast tamer, but how could he let Bai Yunfei do as he pleased? Lifting his right hand, a purple figure flew straight out from the forest to stop Bai Yunfei; it was the thunderfire wolf.

Somehow, as if he knew just where and when the wolf would come from, Bai Yunfei came to a stop and raised his left hand to have the Cataclysmic Seal in it detach from him. The orange light from the brick was replaced by red and sailed for the wolf,

increasing in size as it did.

By the time the brick reached the wolf, it was already as big as a house!

It was a perfect counter for the situation. The wolf hadn't a way to dodge the brick, but....for a late-stage class six soulbeast, the brick wouldn't be enough to pose a threat to it!

Howling loudly, the wolf's entire body flashed with even more soulforce than before before elemental fire and lightning came 'rushing' out from it to slam into the Cataclysmic Seal!

“Boom!!!!”

Lights of purple and fire illuminated half the sky with countless sloughed-off blobs of elemental lightning and fire scattering this way and that to cover up the Cataclysmic Seal!

The Cataclysmic Seal itself had stopped its forward momentum to freeze there in the air. And then, with time, it....started to fly backwards!

A sneer crawled onto the beast tamer's face.

“You think yourself impressive with all your soul armaments, but your own strength isn't equally impressive, even I can kill you!”

His losses were bigger than expected, but victory was all but assured for him. Bai Yunfei was using those soul armaments like crutches, so if everything went according to his expectations then, Bai Yunfei would only be able to last for just another twenty-five minutes.

After that, he wouldn't even have to step in himself to make sure Bai Yunfei wouldn't be able to fight back.

“Eh?” Just then, something sparked confusion in the beast tamer, “This feeling, it's...”

Completely unexpected to him, the Cataclysmic Seal suddenly

turned small to fly behind Bai Yunfei, where the beast tamer realized just what he was doing, “This move again?!”

Bai Yunfei had retreated a hundred meters away from where he once was. His entire figure was completely overwhelmed in red, and both of his arms were by his sides with coils of intense flames around them as well.

And just when the beast tamer caught sight of Bai Yunfei, Bai Yunfei punched out!

Dual Dragon Burst!!

The two fiery dragons came forth from his hands before spiralling towards the thunderfire wolf protecting the beast tamer!

Before, this move costed the beast tamer his twin-headed vulture, so the beast tamer was extremely loathe to lose his thunderfire wolf here. With a mental command, he sent the thunderfire wolf away to dodge the dragons.

This however, left the beast tamer himself open to the dragons, since the wolf had been the only thing in the way between him and Bai Yunfei!

“Hmph! You think this’d be enough to hit me?” The beast tamer sneered. The dragons might’ve been moving at great speeds, but he was still a late-stage Soul Exalt—a being just below that of a Soul King! How in the world would he be struck down by a move like this again?!

Concentrating soulforce to his feet, the beast tamer pushed mightily off the ground to avoid the two dragons!

The Dual Dragon Burst missing didn’t seem to bother Bai Yunfei. Rather than disappointment, a flash of light entered his eyes.

While the beast tamer was preoccupied with ordering the thunderfire wolf to attack him, Bai Yunfei’s hand pressed against each other to form a seal before then pointing both hands forward and then to the side!

The Dual Dragon Burst....wasn't only capable of going in one direction!!

In a spectacularly strange sight, the two dragons a hundred meters below the beast tamer suddenly split apart in response to Bai Yunfei's hand movements!

And then, Bai Yunfei's hands flew up before clasping together again!

Just like that, the two dragons changed directions like changing the corner, but upwards rather than left or right. They flew up to the same height as the beast tamer before following Bai Yunfei's hand to come together to.....hit the beast tamer!

From the very start of the battle, the beast tamer had been put into a corner by Bai Yunfei one after another. It was almost as though the seventy years of experience the old man had wasn't worth a squat against Bai Yunfei, and right now, the beast tamer was in the most dangerous spot yet!

Not only did the dragons change direction quickly, but without warning. The beast tamer hadn't even stabilized himself in the air yet when the dragons came from left and right to slam against him!

His face paled drastically. There wasn't even time for him to even command the thunderfire wolf, the man had nothing else on his mind but to....explode!

Explode with all his remaining strength! This way, he'd be able to save himself!

"Bang!!" Red light began to pour out from the beast tamer as all of his elemental fire drained away from his body and surround himself in it like an egg! In the next second, the two dragons slammed into the elemental fire shield!

"Boom!!!"

With terrifying force, the two dragons slammed into the egg. A maelstrom of fire exploded into the world and set the entire



mountain behind the beast tamer on fire and even causing parts of the mountain to quake and collapse!

All of the red light and fire flying off from this circular sphere the beast tamer was in made him seem like he was situated in a miniature sun. All of the trees and wood underneath him were unable to handle the height combusted into flames!

On the other side when he was preoccupied, Bai Yunfei was assaulted by a strong gust of wind before a pair of very sharp claws came tearing for his chest!

# Chapter 394: Escaping

---

When Bai Yunfei was preoccupied with attacking the beast tamer, the thunderfire wolf had stuck its claws through his barrier. This time, the barrier had only lasted half a second before shattering into pieces!

And this time, there was still enough power behind the wolf's claws to strike at Bai Yunfei's chest!

"Bang!" In a last ditch effort to save himself, he lifted his Returner Bracer to defend against the wolf's claw, drawing sparks and even bits of blood!

It wasn't enough to fully stop the wolf's claws from reaching him, but at the very least, the area protecting his heart was safe.

Then came a searing pain when the claws stabbed into his left shoulder!

He retreated a hundred meters away, and the thunderfire wolf came zig-zagging in hot pursuit! Even without the beast tamer to command the wolf, it was still able to follow his last command to bite Bai Yunfei to death!

"Time's almost up, I've got to go!" Bai Yunfei calculated, "Three seconds...I just need three seconds!"

It was unknown just what plan Bai Yunfei was thinking of, but his arms flashed through two hand seals before rushing back at the thunderfire wolf!

And the speed he was traveling at....was far faster than before!

Since the wolf was zigging back and forth, knowing just where it would attack from was very difficult. But with how fast Bai Yunfei was moving, he'd be able to contend with the wolf on equal grounds!

With both beast and human moving faster than lightning, not

even a second transpired when Bai Yunfei cut off the thunderfire wolf! If it were any other soulbeast, this situation wouldn't startled them, but the thunderfire wolf wasn't the regular soulbeast. Now that its prey was right in front of it, it opened its jaws wide open to bite down on Bai Yunfei with fangs filled with both elemental fire and lightning!

Its jaws were situated so that it'd snap down onto Bai Yunfei's head full. If it connected, Bai Yunfei would be dead for sure.

Before it could bite, Bai Yunfei landed a ruthless right punch on the wolf's throat!

Eighty-one Fold Fist Force!!

“Boom!!”

The elemental fire from Bai Yunfei's fist clashed with the elemental fire and lightning from the thunderfire wolf's body in a chaotic explosion. And following the contact, the thunderfire wolf's body was sent flying into the forest!

In the moment of contact, Bai Yunfei's strength had reached the levels of a....mid-stage Soul Exalt!!

The moment was only that, though. A moment and nothing more, as if it was an illusion.

Thanks to the blow he dealt to the thunderfire wolf, Bai Yunfei had enough momentum in his attack to go even faster in the direction where the bloodlion was!

The fierce battle between the beast tamer and Bai Yunfei had only been just a few minutes. Those few minutes were long enough for the bloodlion to recover somewhat from its wounds, but the Eighty-one Fold Fist Force had still done enough damage to completely break all of its bones and rupture several internal organs!

Any other soulbeast would've succumbed to such wounds a long time ago, but to the bloodlion, a wound like this wasn't even fatal.

Given enough time, it'd fully recover from its wounds.

But a few minutes was clearly not enough time.

So when it saw Bai Yunfei come charging at it, the bloodlion's eyes were filled with despair!

There was nothing it could do to escape!

Still, Bai Yunfei closed in on it without hesitation. His Fire-tipped Spear was already back in his right hand and ready to strike. With a swish, it flew forward to stab at the bloodlion with a glinting red light at its tip!

“Roar!!” Struggling to its feet, the bloodlion was operating in desperation now. Elemental fire leaked from its body as it prepared itself to make its final stand.

But it was...too late! Bai Yunfei's feet flashed with red light, aiding his speed forward by another magnitude and turning his figure into a shadow. Disappearing and reappearing in front the bloodlion, he stabbed outwards again to strike the bloodlion in the mouth!

“Boom!!!”

Ninefold Stab!

The explosion effect of the spear was activated without mercy, and amidst the explosion of red light, the bloodlion was....completely blown apart!

Bai Yunfei twisted his arm, masterfully maneuvering the spear to retrieve the bloodlion's soulgem into the air. Catching it, Bai Yunfei turned away from the aftermath. His spear was replaced by the Tempest Sword so he could hop onto it, and in the next second, he flew off into the skies!

In a fluid motion of events, Bai Yunfei was already flying far away from the scene!

“Damnit!!” A furious roar sounded out from below. Right after

Bai Yunfei had killed the bloodlion, another boom was heard from within the fiery maelstrom from the Dual Dragon Burst. A dreadful amount of soulforce was felt following the explosion, revealing the elemental fire protected beast tamer after all of the fire was blown away.

He looked very haggard compared to before the Dual Dragon Burst had hit him. Both of his sleeves were completely burned away, and his arms were flowing freely with blood. His hair was a mess, and his eyes were bloodshot; but most particularly was his face, which was distorted heavily in anger as if ready to devour someone.

He looked down at the segment of the forest where the thunderfire wolf was only just charging back out from, and then a little ways ahead, only to have his eyes widen in horror!

The bloodlion was dead, and Bai Yunfei was escaping with its soulgem in hand!

“Trying to run away?! You’ll die here today!!” A scream filled with great fury erupted from his mouth; clearly denoting just how close he was to falling off the brink of rationality. His anger was followed by a meteoric flash of red light as he chased after Bai Yunfei!

His speed—aided by his anger—wasn’t any slower than the Tempest Sword, and in no time at all, he was already a kilometer high into the air!

Bai Yunfei was already two kilometers away from the beast tamer however and was still gaining speed.

The distance was widened by another few kilometers when Bai Yunfei’s Tempest Sword suddenly swerved left behind a mountain, and then....

Bai Yunfei’s soulforce disappeared!

Just like if he died, Bai Yunfei’s soulforce had vanished into thin

air!

“What?!” Words couldn’t even begin to describe what the beast tamer was feeling. A few minutes ago, he was locked onto Bai Yunfei’s aura, and now, it was as if Bai Yunfei never existed to begin with!

Several precious seconds went by as the beast tamer tried his best to locate Bai Yunfei. His eyes scanned the horizon, and his soulsense was working furiously for even the smallest of traces beneath the sea of trees.

But the only thing he could sense was the aura of soulbeasts.

“Im....impossible!!” The amount of times he already muttered this word today was lost to him.

He was unwilling to give up the search though. Looking every within several kilometers, his eyes strained for even the smallest of caves that Bai Yunfei could’ve hid in.

But Bai Yunfei was still nowhere to be found.

Shock, confusion, anger, humiliation, and refusal....

These five emotions swam around the beast tamer’s mind like fish. There was nothing he could do.

Nothing but to howl furiously to the heavens!

“Aaaaahhhhhh!!!!!!”

The man was an elder of the Beast Taming School! A beast tamer of mighty power and position! And yet, here he stood today, humiliated by a late-stage Soul Ancestor whelping!

His mid-stage class six twin-headed vulture and seven early-stage class five dreamwind hawks were dead, the precious mid-stage class six three-eyed bloodlion he had his eyes on was killed, and his enemy....had successfully fled!!

All of his anger was practically tearing apart his body to come out from him, and screaming had only alleviated just a sliver of that

anger....

“Eh?!”

Something caught his attention.

Whirling around to glare at a mountain point a few hundred meters away, he roared, “Who’s there?! Come on out!”

A small fluctuation of soulforce caught his attention just a moment ago. In his anger, the beast tamer had completely disregarded the source, but now that he was slightly calmer than before, he finally noticed that this source of soulforce had a mysterious method of hiding themselves.

The fact that this person could hide himself so well made him wary. He himself didn’t think that there’d be anyone possible of concealing their auras as well as he could and still hide close enough without being detected.

That didn’t stop him from commanding his thunderfire wolf after the figure though. Stopping midway between the figure and the beast tamer, the wolf growled dangerously.

A sliver of blood remained on the wolf’s fangs from its final gambit with Bai Yunfei, but the wounds it suffered from him wasn’t too debilitating.

“Haha....have no fear senior, this one means no ill will.” The figure chuckled. Even from two hundred meters away, the chuckle was still audible enough for the beast tamer to hear before the figure stepped out from behind the stone he was hiding from.

Illuminated by the moonlight, it was easy for the beast tamer to see that this newcomer was a gray-robed young man of his thirties. His hair flowed freely behind his handsome, but slightly scrawny face. He had a small beard on his chin that was clearly not routinely kept, and his facial expression was that of a frivolous person.

If Bai Yunfei was still here, he’d be able to recognize this person

straight away since this was the person who once gave him ‘advice’ back in Redfire City....

Na Lanyin!!



# Chapter 395: Reluctance!

---

“Who are you, and why were you hiding here?!”

There'd be no way that the beast tamer would drop his guard with someone coming out of nowhere, even if it looked like they meant no harm.

To be more specific, this person didn't look like he had an ounce of wanting to fight, and his soulforce was as serene as one could possibly get.

Still, the fact that his soulforce flared up a little bit beforehand meant that caution would needed to be had just in case.

It didn't look like Na Lanyin minded the hostile look on the beast tamer's face, though. “This one is Na Lanyin, I was just taking a nap here coincidentally, nothing too conspiratory. I didn't want to get caught up in your battle, so I hid my aura, so please don't mind me, senior.”

“Na Lanyin?”

His name didn't seem like an important one, but for some reason, the beast tamer felt as though he had heard this name somewhere before.

“Haha, I'm just a nobody from the newer generation. If there's nothing else more to be said, then I'll be taking my leave....”

Na Lanyin turned to the left to walk away, but a burst of soulforce from the beast tamer stopped him cold in his tracks.

“Senior,” Na Lanyin sighed, “what's the meaning of this? I've said already I've no ill will.”

Following the beast tamer's command, the thunderfire wolf growled menacingly at Na Lanyin before settling into a hostile stance.

"A nobody?! Would a nobody dare walk into the Soulbeast Forest

right after a soulbeast wave happened? Speak! Who is your master? And why were you following me?!” The beast tamer demanded.

He wouldn't let Na Lanyin go now; since he was seen in such a haggard state, Na Lanyin wouldn't live to tell the tale.

This led to Na Lanyin furrowing his eyebrows together. The beast tamer was clearly ready to kill him and was only asking for his master just to reconfirm his identity.

He looked at the beast tamer, who shivered slightly. It felt as though Na Lanyin was looking straight through him, but that feeling made him feel even more vigilant than before.

Na Lanyin would have to die for sure. His urge to kill him was even stronger than before now.

No matter who Na Lanyin's master was, he wouldn't be leaving here alive. As long as he covered his tracks well enough, no one should know what happened.

But then, Na Lanyin's eyebrows raised upwards in surprise first before he smiled. “Haha, you flatter me too much. My master ordered me to come to the forest to find a soulbeast to form a contract with, not grudges.

He paused here to take a breath. “My master is....Ling Yin!”

The beast tamer didn't care at all for the first part, but then when he heard the name, his eyes dilated instantaneously with shock!

“Ling Yin....Ling Yin the Wanderer?!” The beast tamer exclaimed, “You're the apprentice to him?!”

Na Lanyin nodded with a smile.

“Ah! I know now! The first elder said before that Ling Yin the Wanderer has an apprentice named Na Lanyin!” Memories of where he heard Na Lanyin came flowing into the beast tamer's mind all at once.

“Haha, if there’s nothing more the senior wants, then this one will be taking his leave then.” Na Lanyin smiled and bowed.

The look on the beast tamer’s face had taken on a shade even darker than before, but he didn’t stop the other from leaping down the mountain and disappear into the night.

He didn’t move even an inch from his spot until Na Lanyin’s soulforce couldn’t be felt anymore. It wasn’t as though he fully believed in Na Lanyin’s words, but....

He couldn’t risk it!

‘Ling Yin the Wanderer’, that was a name that could make any sliver of urge to kill evaporate from him!

If Na Lanyin was from a major school or perhaps a youngling from a major house, he’d probably take his chances and kill the boy. But, he couldn’t do that if he was the apprentice of Ling Yin!

If the deed was done, Ling Yin would be able to find out, no matter how much the beast tamer destroyed all evidence and hid his tracks. Even if Ling Yin had to travel the entire world, he’d find the beast tamer and exact revenge!

For it was said in the legends that Ling Yin the Wanderer was omniscient....

In this world, there existed five great wandering soul cultivators. There weren’t many that knew about Ling Yin, but of those who did, ninety-nine percent of them had never seen him before, making him one of the most mysterious figures to all soul cultivators.

Observer of the Heavens, the Allknowing, Seeker of the past, Oracle of the future—

—All these described Ling Yin’s person in his legend.

As a wandering soul cultivator, he had affiliations to no one and could stand shoulder to shoulder with even the headmaster of the

## Fate School!

For that reason, the beast tamer didn't dare fight Na Lanyin and stood aside to watch him go by without another word.

Meanwhile, Na Lanyin was already a good distance away from where the beast tamer was. Turning his head, he smiled before continuing his peaceful walk into the forest.

Every so often, he'd whistle a tune to himself or mutter something to himself under his breath.

"The people of the Beast Taming School are really overbearing, aren't they? If I didn't say master's name, he would've attacked me for sure. That would've been a hard battle to fight then...."

"Tsk. A 'death upon meeting', type of person. If a person like that were to die in this forest, that wouldn't be a bad thing...."

"It was surprising to see that kid here again, though. Seem's like we really are 'fated'...."

.....

In the completely opposite direction, Bai Yunfei was wearing his Walk-on Strawhat and using the Soul Concealment Art to the best of his ability to obscure his soulforce.

With the aid of those two things, he was able to run through the forest on physical strength alone.

Already an hour had passed since he fled from the beast tamer, but for the sake of maintaining his cover, Bai Yunfei didn't dare use any soulforce just in case.

He probably wouldn't be found out here, but Bai Yunfei thought it prudent to err on the side of caution and continue running under this cover.

Since he was running using his own physical strength rather than using soulforce, none of the soulbeasts paid attention to him, and even if they did, Bai Yunfei ran away faster than they could

catch up.

In another two hours, Bai Yunfei was already a long ways away.

Finding a small brook, Bai Yunfei decided to stop and take a rest here.

Sitting on top of a giant stone, Bai Yunfei let out a sigh of relief before gulping in the refreshing cold air.

There wasn't a single spot on his body that wasn't hurting. It felt as though tens of thousands of ants were crawling over and biting his body, and the wound on his left shoulder was still bleeding slightly. The blood that had been spilt from it earlier had already stained his robes a crimson red, and if not for the blood clot that had formed and his bodily strength, Bai Yunfei would've fainted from blood loss a long time ago.

Circulating soulforce around his body, Bai Yunfei sighed again in relief. He took to a crossed-legged position to get comfortable and started healing himself.

By relying on the +13 effect of Yun's Soul Ring, he could heal himself without worry of running out of soulforce. His own soulforce had already replenished itself for the most part on his way here, so all that needed to be taken care of now was his physical wounds.

About an hour later, Bai Yunfei opened his eyes back up. Taking a look at his own now uninjured body, he smiled.

Standing up, Bai Yunfei stretched in a way to release the air between all of his joints with a satisfying pop.

From the looks of things, he was fully healed!

If the beast tamer saw him now, he would've been so shocked at the sight that his eyeballs would pop out from their sockets.

Bai Yunfei's eyebrows furrowed together slightly upon realization that his robes were still a bloody mess. With a leap, he

landed straight into the brook....

It didn't take long for him to fully wash himself in the brook. With a fresh new set of robes, Bai Yunfei was already back to a minty-fresh condition; as if he didn't even fight the bloodlion or beast tamer at all.

He climbed onto a nearby tree and hid himself inside of the foliage. Now that he was hidden, he laid on top of a thick tree branch and relaxed.

Soon enough, he fell asleep.

Despite his physical wounds being fully recovered, the fatigue extolled on his mind was significant enough for him to take a rest to fully recover.

# Chapter 396: Meeting Na Lanyin Again!

---

The days following Bai Yunfei's escape from the beast tamer were passed without further incident. Rather than stay in one area for too long, Bai Yunfei moved around every so often.

Five days later, Bai Yunfei was already ready to forget about the beast tamer and continue on his own adventure.

With how expansive the Soulbeast Forest was, it'd be easier for the beast tamer to find a needle in a haystack than to find Bai Yunfei.

Bai Yunfei came to the forest to train, but to have so many matters like the soulbeast wave and the beast tamer happen so quickly was beyond what he thought would happen. Experience was experience nonetheless. He could begin his 'ordinary' adventure now, if anything.

For ten days, Bai Yunfei traveled through the forest before finally arriving in the class six area.

He met plenty of soulbeasts on the way—many of them being late-stage class fives. There were a few class six soulbeasts, but they only served to be practice dummies for Bai Yunfei rather than being a threat.

After so many battles, Bai Yunfei felt his combat experience being rather sizeable, but combat experience didn't directly relate to his strength of soulforce. He was still a late-staged Soul Ancestor, and he hadn't any signs of being able to make a breakthrough either.

If Bai Yunfei could help it, he didn't want to kill any of the soulbeasts he came across. This was true even when he was traveling with Zhang Yunpeng and the others on their way to the class five area.

The reason why he felt this way was probably in part due to Hong Yin's influence. Unlike the other soul cultivators, Bai Yunfei didn't want to kill a soulbeast for its soulgem.

Excluding the soulbeast wave where the soulbeasts were the invaders, Bai Yunfei felt it to be wrong.

In the Soulbeast Forest, it was him who was the 'invader'.

As a secondary goal, Bai Yunfei was here for a soulbeast to form a contract with. But not once did Bai Yunfei come across any soulbeast that caught his interest.

When it came to forming a soul contract with a soulbeast, the best method of doing so was to form a very amiable bond between the two. Not every soulbeast wanted to kill; there exists many peaceful and friendly ones too. But the latter type of soulbeasts were comparatively few, and without any extenuating circumstances, these soulbeasts wouldn't form a soul contract with any soul cultivator.

Another way of doing so was to simply beat the soulbeast into submission and use soulforce to bend the soulbeast to one's will. This method wasn't always successful of course, and many soulbeasts would rather die than to submit. And the stronger and more aware a soulbeast was, the harder this method became.

If Bai Yunfei couldn't find any suitable soulbeasts in the class five area, going to the class six area was the only reasonable option after that. With how strong Bai Yunfei was, he should be fine as long as he stayed within the first half of the class six area.

In his heart, he knew that he just had to find a class six soulbeast to form a contract with. If he formed one with a class five soulbeast, it wouldn't be able to keep up with his strength.....

Strength wasn't the only factor in choosing a soulbeast. Like humans, soulbeasts had also varying levels of aptitude and talent. Some soulbeasts could only go as far as being a class five or class six soulbeast, and some soulbeasts who were more gifted than others were potentially limitless. Between a soulbeast who was already a class five and a soulbeast who could potentially become a class six, it was a simple answer on which one to pick.



And since Bai Yunfei trained in elemental fire, he wanted to find a soulbeast that was also capable of elemental fire, or elemental wood to supplement his strength.

And so with all the caution he could muster, Bai Yunfei made his way into the class six area.

Only two days transpired before Bai Yunfei found himself unfortunate enough to come face to face with three mid-stage class six green-eyed tigers. Battling hard in their cave, Bai Yunfei managed to make his escape rather than fight to the death.

In this dangerous area, fighting a battle with one's life on the line was a very foolhardy task.

Another five days passed without incident, but Bai Yunfei found it far more strenuous than his one month traveling in the class five area. It wasn't without benefit, however, as Bai Yunfei found himself gaining an exponential amount of combat experience and a lot of medicine.

On the eve of the seventh night, Bai Yunfei found himself a nice resting spot near a river. For dinner, he fished himself several large fish and began to started to roast them over a fire.

"The map's getting really vague now, I'm going to be on my own from here on out. Maybe I'll go a little deeper tomorrow....." he muttered as he crunched on a fish.

Sudden movement from behind him caused Bai Yunfei to narrow his eyes. Putting the fish down, he spoke without turning his head, "Friend, if you're here, you may as well come and sit. I've some fish you can eat."

"Oh? You found me out that easily?"

A sparse few seconds after Bai Yunfei spoke, another voice from a hundred meters away replied to him.

Then a figure stepped out from the shadows.

The fact that this person didn't seem to bear any ill will gave some semblance of peace to Bai Yunfei, but when he turned his head around, he found himself starting in surprise.

“You're....”

He thought for another second to place a name to the face.

“You're Na Lanyin!!”

“Haha, so you still remember my name, brother? That's a hard feat....” He chuckled.

Walking on over, he took a seat on the stone in front of Bai Yunfei, “It's been a few years since our last meeting, you've changed quite a bit, brother!”

“Ah, I'm Bai Yunfei.” Feeling somewhat awkward with how he was being addressed, Bai Yunfei introduced himself.

“Ah, so you're brother Bai, it's nice to meet you.”

“.....”

A sweatdrop fell down Bai Yunfei's face. “Well, you can call me Yunfei, brother Na Lanyin.....”

“Haha, alright then! If you don't mind calling me big brother, then I won't object to it.”

He took a fish into his hands and took a tentative bite into it, “Wow, you're quite skilled at cooking too, Yunfei. I ran out of rations a few days ago, so imagine my anguish when I had to subsist on fruits and nuts.”

Under the amazed eyes of Bai Yunfei, Na Lanyin devoured another three pieces of fish before he wiped his mouth in satisfaction and burped.

“Big brother, what brings you to this part of the forest?” Bai Yunfei asked.

“Ah, nothing much, just talking a walk,” Na Lanyin started to

pick at his teeth with one of the fish bones, “just tryin to find a soulbeast to form a contract with.”

“.....” Again, Bai Yunfei forced a smile to his lips. “I didn’t think I’d meet big brother Na Lanyin again, and here of all places.”

The Na Lanyin of today looked very aloof compared to before, where he looked a little worse for wear before. Back then, Bai Yunfei knew better than to peg him as a nobody; he had a mid-heaven tier soul armament, how could anyone with one of those be a nobody?

And his strength was a mid-stage Soul Exalt to boot!

Bai Yunfei’s own senior, Jiang Fan, was only able to become a mid-stage Soul Exalt last year, and he was much older than Na Lanyin!

There were of course, extenuating circumstances between the two. Crafters focused more on trying to achieve a higher level of soul compatibility between their soulbound armaments and them rather than training, so it took longer than usual for them to progress.

But still, this didn’t take away even an inch away from the fact that Na Lanyin was a soul cultivator capable of beating out any other prodigy in the empire!

“Ah, it really is a coincidence eh? I was just following wherever the earth took me when I found you. The gears of fate have started to move, perhaps....” He nodded; the first half of his sentence had been fine, but the last bit was very mystic sounding.

“The gears of fate? Sounds like some sort of third-rate epic, since when did you become a storyteller, big brother Na Lanyin? Weren’t you a fortune teller?”

“Oh? How’d you know that I spent an entire month in the Town of Braves telling stories?”

“.....”

# Chapter 397: Guidance (First)

---

“Wait wait, hold on! Did you say you’re Bai Yunfei?!”

Na Lanyin’s head whipped back to Bai Yunfei, “Bai Yunfei....the same Bai Yunfei from the Crafting School?!”

Since he didn’t ask before, Bai Yunfei thought Na Lanyin didn’t know who he was; but it turned out that he was just slow on the uptake. “Yeah, that’s me.”

Surprisingly, Na Lanyin didn’t seem to look shock after getting his confirmation. He only nodded, “I see, no wonder you had so many soul armaments. Even one of the Beast Taming School’s elder wasn’t able to compete with that....”

“Eh?” Bai Yunfei was the surprised one here, “You know what happened to me and the Beast Taming School?!”

He nodded, “I just so happened to see the fight. But since you looked like you had a handle on it, I didn’t interfere, I hope you won’t begrudge me for that?”

“How could I? You had nothing to do with it, so what reason would you need to join the fight?” Bai Yunfei shook his head, “Hold on, you said elder of the Beast Taming School?”

“Yeah, his name is Xing Yuan. Of the five elders of the school, he’s the last and weakest of them.”

“The fifth elder....and the weakest?!” Bai Yunfei was astounded, were the other elders all Soul Kings?!

Isn’t....isn’t this a little too ridiculous?

If he had to compare, the elders of the Crafting School were far weaker. Aside from Xiao Binzi, who was a Soul King, the second and third elders were only late-stage Soul Exalts. And the fourth elder Jiang Fan was only a mid-stage Soul Exalt.....

This of course, was only on the surface. Bai Yunfei knew that

there were still plenty of predecessors locked up within the Northern Point, but he neither knew how strong they were or what they looked like.

“But what’s an elder of the Beast Taming School doing here in the Soulbeast Forest? Is he looking for more soulbeasts?” Confusion was starting to settle in Bai Yunfei’s mind now. He knew that he knew that the Soulbeast Forest was where the beast tamers usually went for soulbeasts, he didn’t think that he’d meet one here of all places, and an elder of all people.

With that knowledge now, Bai Yunfei found it prudent to ask if Na Linyin had seen anyone else from the school.

“Ah, big brother Na Linyin, yo—eh? Big brother? What’s wrong?”

A strange gleam was in Na Linyin’s eyes, as though he was pleasantly surprised about something. Standing up, he spoke with great urgency, “Yunfei, something just came up, so I’ll be leaving first!”

And before Bai Yunfei could reply, he ran straight out to the right!

“Big brother Na Linyin....” He started to speak, but Na Linyin was already gone.

All that was left was a single sentence.

“Yunfei, what you’re looking for is to the northwest. You’ll come across ‘good luck’ there!”

“.....”

With Na Linyin’s aura quickly retreating away, Bai Yunfei didn’t move from his spot until he couldn’t even sense the other man’s soulforce anymore.

“Coming and leaving so quickly. He’s a busy guy, that Na Linyin. How strange.”

The rest of the fish was polished off by him in silent thought.

“The northwest, huh....”

Dusting himself off, Bai Yunfei stood up from his seat. “Well, I’ll go that way tomorrow then.”

What Na Lanyin said to him wasn’t disregarded. His warning before back in Redfire City had been invaluable, since what he said had truly taken place in Curopia City. If not for his warning, Bai Yunfei would’ve regretted the events that happened there for his entire life.

Combined with the fact that Na Lanyin had a mid-heaven tier soul armament, Bai Yunfei was extremely curious on this mysterious person. He had a sneaking suspicion that Na Lanyin was from the Fate School, but before he could even ask, he was already gone.

Since Na Lanyin suggested he go northwest, Bai Yunfei decided to give up on his plan to go just north like before.

“Northwest....northwest.....”

He glanced to his left, “Should be that direction, right?”

Not quite sure of the direction, Bai Yunfei shook his head and climbed up a nearby tree.

“Forget it, I’ll figure it out when the sun’s up. Time to rest!”

.....

Meanwhile on the other side, Na Lanyin was making his way through the dark forest with his lips trembling somewhat as he muttered to himself. His left hand would often swap between gestures, and his right had a constant faint glow of white, that upon further investigation, revealed itself to be a palm-sized tortoise shell!

“Is it you? Are you the one able that’s calling to me....”

Who he was speaking to was unknown.

“Are you really as mysterious as master says you are? I’m absolutely certain I want you as my partner, but did you know I was already coming? The feeling’s weak, is this your test for me?”

“Hehe, I’m excited. I’ll definitely find you....”

.....

On the morning of the second day, when the rays of the sun was bleeding through the leaves onto Bai Yunfei’s face, he started to wake. Reaching a lazy hand up to rub his eyes, Bai Yunfei yawned and leapt down from the tree.

“Now, the sun’s over there....so that means east is over....there. So this is northwest then.” After a moment of observation, Bai Yunfei embarked onto his journey northwest.

Since Na Lanyin had told him to go northwest, Bai Yunfei was extremely careful to maintain this path, in case he got lost. Sometimes, he’d come across a soulbeast, but he’d defeat them and climb over their unconscious bodies in order to avoid a detour.

.....

Half a month later, Bai Yunfei found himself starting to tire. The soulbeasts he was coming across were stronger than before, and in much denser amounts. Sometimes, Bai Yunfei was afraid to even initiate combat or pique the attention of a group of soulbeasts.

One morning, Bai Yunfei was eating his meal in the hidden minicave of a large tree. Once that meal was done, he’d continue on his journey.

“If nothing happens today, I’ll give up for now. The path’s a little different than before, but I’m pretty close to the center of the class six area, aren’t I?” Bai Yunfei thought to himself.

“What kind of soulbeast will I find here? Those bloodfire wolves from yesterday weren’t bad, but their self-awareness was practically nil....” After coming across the red magiboar and the quickshade bird, Bai Yunfei was adamant on finding a soulbeast as

self-aware as they were.

“Maybe something like senior Jiang Fan’s six-tailed firefox? But he found that by accident in the class six area, wonder if my luck will be good enough to find anything....”

“Boom!!!!”

A sudden explosion snapped Bai Yunfei out from his thoughts. Looking towards the direction of the blast, Bai Yunfei noticed two strong amount of soulforce conflicting with each other and dispersing large amount of elemental power into their surroundings.

“Eh? Is there a fight?!”

Eyes glowing with excitement, Bai Yunfei took out his Walk-on Strawhat to wear and began to conceal his soulforce to head straight for the area.



# Chapter 398: Battle Between Wolf and Bird (Second)

---

The battles that took place in the Soulbeast Forest was by no means an irregularity to Bai Yunfei. With how long he'd been in the forest, he had already seen plenty of battles take place between soulbeasts. But he spent most of his time observing those before leaving when the outcome of the battle was essentially determined. He was disinclined to try and steal the soulgem of a soulbeast from another, though he knew that if any other soul cultivator were to hear this, they'd all curse him for his 'mercy' and stupidity.

There was another reason why he was so interested in watching soulbeasts fight. Aside from observing how soulbeasts fought, the more important factor was to look at the soulbeasts themselves. If there was one he found interest in, then Bai Yunfei would 'lend' a hand when it seemed like that soulbeast was on the verge of death.

This type of 'first meeting' would go a long ways away to establish a sense of friendship between soulbeast and soul cultivator, and that'd make forming a soul contract a lot easier.

This 'trick' was commonly employed by many soul cultivators to form soul contracts.

Bai Yunfei didn't sense any sliver of danger from this battle, so he didn't hesitate to run on over to observe it.

After several minutes, Bai Yunfei found himself a nice tree to hide in and watch the battle take place down below.

"This is a....late-stage class five?" What he saw disappointed Bai Yunfei somewhat. He had expected an intense battle between soulbeasts, but the ones fighting down below were basically mediocre ones and were quite weak for his standards.

Despite being known as the class six area, it didn't necessarily

mean only class six soulbeasts lived here. Class five soulbeasts were in abundance, but they generally stuck to a pack and lived in smaller denominations than their class six counterparts.

One of the soulbeasts was washed completely in green light; it was a late-stage class five greenwood wolf.

The other soulbeast was a bird the size of a crane with plumage the colors of the rainbow. It was a late-stage class five prisma oriole.

Greenwood wolves were generally considered to be wood-type soulbeasts with better than average talent while looking pretty similar to any generic wolf.

Prisma orioles were naturally gifted with the ability to train in multiple elements. The lowest amount they could learn was two, and at most they could learn....seven different elements! For this reason, these prisma orioles were highly treasured as a rare species, but on the inverse, prisma orioles were also one of the least gifted soulbeasts. They could at their very strongest become a late-stage class five soulbeast, and never in recorded history had there been a class six prisma oriole.

Because of that, no soul cultivator was willing to accept one as their soulbeast partner.

Since neither of the two soulbeasts caught Bai Yunfei's interest, he was very disappointed and began to turn around to leave.

But then when a sudden soft chirp was heard, Bai Yunfei noticed something strange and turned back to watch the fight.

Observing the fight a little longer, Bai Yunfei was starting to understand something about it. "I see, so this is a battle to try and breakthrough...."

The greenwood wolf was a late-stage class five, and based on its power, it was on the verge of becoming a class six. If it won this battle, it'd be able to breakthrough.

This was extremely similar to the battle between the three-eyed bloodlion and the purple-crowned snake, if not identical. In the ruthless world of soulbeasts that weren't class seven in strength, there needn't be words nor feelings; it was a survival of the fittest where only the strongest would make it to the top. Soulbeasts would kill, or be killed, and their soulgems would serve as sustenance for the victor for them to become even stronger.

“That prisma oriole is much stronger than any other late-stage class five, but not so much that it's probably at its peak level of strength. It also has an advantage in the skies even if it can't beat the wolf, but why is it fighting so hard?”

No matter how much he observed the two soulbeasts, he couldn't understand why the bird was acting as it was.

According to logic, the prisma oriole was no match for the greenwood wolf. Since the greenwood wolf didn't have the ability to skywalk, the bird would be able to flee without trouble if it wanted to, and the wolf's long ranged elemental strikes wouldn't do any harm at all.

But rather than follow that logic, the prisma oriole was trying its utmost to grapple with the wolf in an attempt to engage it in a close-combat battle!

Unable to make heads or tails over the matter, Bai Yunfei continued to watch the battle from his hiding spot.

It seemed as if the oriole was protecting something.

If he looked behind the two soulbeasts, there was a large cliff wall with a cave about thirty meters above ground. No matter how much the oriole fought, it never left more than a hundred meters away from the cave.

“Is....is it hiding some sort of treasure?!”

The possibility of treasure caught Bai Yunfei's attention. If there was treasure big enough to catch the attention of another soulbeast

and warrant the safeguarding by another soulbeast to protect with all its life, why wouldn't he be interested?

“Roarr!!!”

Whilst Bai Yunfei was in the middle of his conjecturing, the greenwood wolf suddenly let loose a roar and began to gather a concentrated sphere of elemental power in its mouth to fire!

It's target wasn't the prisma oriole, but the....cave it was protecting!

“Chirp!!”

There was a shrill chirp of fury from the oriole as it disappeared in a flash of multicolored light to fly towards the cave!

“Boom!!”

The elemental sphere was fired, but rather than hitting the cave, it slammed into the prisma oriole!

Following the surge of elements from the blast, the prisma oriole dropped from the skies. It landed on the protruding part of the cliff where the cave was, creating a large crater in the ground.

Due to the power of the blast, the oriole wasn't fast enough to take off into the skies before a dark-green light leapt onto the perch to strike!

“Chirp!”

With its talons being held onto by the wolf's claws, the oriole bird could do nothing but cry out and struggle as best as it could.

Just seconds after the two started struggling, they fell off the perch and to the ground down below!

But no sooner did they fall did the wolf pry its jaws wide open and snap at the oriole's throat!

“Chirpp!!”

An extremely loud but sorrowful cry was heard from the oriole

then, filling the air with its verbal reluctance and attachment to life, but also a blood chilling sense of insanity!

It was too late for the oriole to move, as the fangs of the wolf was already just centimeters from its throat.

But it didn't need to move!

Just before the fangs could make contact, when the wolf heard the cry of the oriole, it let out a yelp and disengaged from the bird to leap as far away as possible!

“Boom!!!!”

What came next from the bird was a mighty explosion whose force was felt all the way to where Bai Yunfei was even. The trees all around him shuddered with the force, and light the colors of the rainbow exploded forth from the oriole along with its blood splashing against the nearby trees.

In the end, the oriole decided to blow itself up!

Despite leaping away in time to save its life, the greenwood wolf was not without injury. Its entire left side was a mangled mess with parts of it being charcoaled black even.

Still, it was alive.

It howled angrily at the crater where the oriole once was and then turned to go back towards the cave.

Since it blew itself up, the prisma oriole's soulgem was gone. That act in itself was another factor in the wolf's anger, but the objects left in the cave was still enough to make up for the loss of that soulgem.

Perhaps there'd be something in the cave that'd allow it to become a class six soulbeast.....

# Chapter 399: An Uneggspected Discovery (Third)

---

Right as the greenwold wolf was about to leap into the cave, a flash of green light flew overhead to enter the cave first!

That flash of light was Bai Yunfei!

Having flown onto the perch with his Tempest Sword, Bai Yunfei stared icily at the wolf, “Scram!!”

“Rrr....” The beginnings of a growl was making its way out from the wolf’s throat when an indomitable amount of pressure began to flood it.

Straight away, the hairs on the wolf’s body started to prick up as an instinctive warning sign to tell it that it was no match for this human!

It was reluctant to leave, but even the wolf knew that only the strong survived, and the human was the clearly stronger one here.

With one last withering look at the cave behind Bai Yunfei, the wolf turned tail and trotted back into the forest, no longer to be seen.

Now that the wolf was gone, Bai Yunfei was free to do as he pleased. First, he looked to where the prisma oriole once. The fact that it killed itself surprised Bai Yunfei.

“It’d go to such extreme lengths to protect whatever’s inside the cave....” sighed Bai Yunfei, “Wonder what’s inside then?”

And so with curiosity deep in his mind, Bai Yunfei strode into the cave.

The cave wasn’t very wide at about two meters wide, and not all too deep with there only being ten meters to walk.

Compared to the passageway, the dead end of the cave was

slightly wider in circumference. Moss adorned the walls of the cave and parts of the ground, but aside from that, there was nothing else of notice.

Bai Yunfei took several small steps into the cave so he could look around, and when his eyes landed upon something, they widened in surprise.

“This is....”

Rather than a pile of rare treasure like Bai Yunfei expected, what he saw disappointed him.

“Is this really what the prisma oriole sacrificed its life to protect?”

A small ‘nest’ about two meters in circumference laid on top of the mossy center of the cave. Five separate eggs the size of footballs were neatly placed over the nest--these were the eggs of the prisma oriole.

As things turned out, the prisma oriole that sacrificed its life was a female, and the mother of these five eggs.

And since he had been expecting treasure rather than eggs, Bai Yunfei was rather disappointed at the outcome....

“You sacrificed your life to protect them, and yet you were still unable to protect them....” He sighed with pity.

Of the five eggs here, all five of them were completely without life.

Not a single crack was to be seen on these eggs, but Bai Yunfei could tell that the eggs were dead. Normally, eggs containing soulbeasts had signs of life that could be detected with soulforce, but these eggs were devoid of that.

It was most likely that the outbreak of energy the greenwood wolf unleashed with its elemental attack during the final moments of the battle had been powerful enough to shock and ‘kill’ the

fragile soulbeasts within the eggs.

If these eggs were what the wolf wanted, it was no surprise that it tried so hard. The eggs could be used as a tonic with effects that were potentially better than the soulgem of any one prisma oriole.

“Ugh, I wasted my time for something like this? Prisma orioles might be priceless to some, but they’re absolutely useless to me!” He ranted to himself. There was nothing else in the cave but these eggs, so Bai Yunfei felt it a waste of time to stay here any longer and prepare to leave.

“Eh?”

But then a glint of light caught his attention. Freezing in his steps, Bai Yunfei turned back to the nest to look closely at it.

In between the eggs, there was a small fist-sized white stone.

“Could this be a.....” Bai Yunfei’s eyes widened, unsure if what he was seeing was actually real or not.

To confirm his doubts, his hands reached out and pressed a finger to it.

Unique Equipment

Equipment Grade: Mid Earth  
Elemental Affinity: None

Special Effect 1: Increase chance of success when upgrading by 500%  
Effect cannot be stacked with any other similar effects.

Special Effect 2: Increase chance of success when crafting by 300%.  
Effect cannot be stacked with any other similar effects.  
Cannot be upgraded.

A stream of information ran through Bai Yunfei’s head.

“Haha!! An upgrade stone!” Bai Yunfei whooped in joy; he hadn’t expected to ‘pick up’ an upgrade stone here of all places!



All of the earlier disappointment he was feeling was now completely gone. The upgrade stone made up for more than he wanted, and now, Bai Yunfei was excited enough to look more closely at the cave for anything else.

But none of the corners of the cave showed anything else of interest. Not even a second upgrade stone was found.

Presumably, the prisma oriole probably found this upgrade stone outside and took it home in hopes that the aura it was distributing would be able to strengthen its offspring.

Unwilling to give up, Bai Yunfei dug through the nest for anything else.

In the end, there was nothing.

“Haha, I was too greedy, just having one upgrade stone here is already a pretty good de....

“Eh?”

His finger brushed against one of the eggs while he was speaking to himself, and when a stream of information began to flow into his mind, Bai Yunfei found himself going speechless.

Equipment Grade: Mid Human

Elemental Affinity: Fire, Earth, Metal, Lightning

Attack: 350

Upgrade Requirement: 75 Soulpoints

His fingers clasped tightly around the egg in disbelief, “This....this is equipment too?!”

What an utterly strange sight! A soulbeast egg had stats?! And that of a mid-human tier?!

Bai Yunfei released the egg from his hand, and then picked it up again to check.

It still had those stats.

The egg was indeed a mid-human tier piece of equipment.

“Is it because there’s no life left in the egg?” Bai Yunfei conjectured. It was a relatively simple inference since the egg was indeed without life, but Bai Yunfei didn’t understand how an egg that was basically the same as a rock would somehow become upgradeable.

As far as tiers go, even a soulbeast egg--which was several times harder than a rock, or even steel--would find it hard-pressed in being called a mid-human tier item.

What Bai Yunfei was interested most in was this one line in the stats where it labeled their elemental affinities. Some of the eggs had three affinities at the very least, and at most six!

He sat down next to the nest with one of the eggs with six affinities. Slowly rotating it over in his hands, Bai Yunfei looked closely at it, “Should I....upgrade it?”

A situation like this was a first for Bai Yunfei. Curious beyond curious, he ultimately decided to try and upgrade them to see what would happen. Upgrading wasn’t a dangerous thing, so there was no harm in trying. If he left the eggs here, another soulbeast would eat them, so why not use them as experiments....?

Anxious for the results, Bai Yunfei grabbed one of the eggs.

“Upgrade!”

# Chapter 400: Renactment of Deja Vu and Bamboozlement (Fourth)

Upgrade Successful

Equipment Grade: Mid Human

Elemental Affinity: Earth, Wood, Metal, Wind

Upgrade Level: +10

Attack: 355

Additional Attack: 180

Soul Compatibility: 10%

+10 Additional Effect: 7% chance to inflict blind for 10 seconds when attacking.

Upgrade Requirement: 75 Soulpoints

.....

With the fifth egg being upgraded to +10, Bai Yunfei could sigh in relief and think about what he had learned.

In front of him all five eggs were completely still on the ground. Perhaps it was because they were all +10 now, but with the light coming off of them, the cave felt slightly more mythical in nature.

Bai Yunfei felt disappointed despite that. He had been expecting some unique stats, but none of these ‘equipment’ had anything special after being upgraded to +10. It really did feel like they were just normal mid-human tier equipment.

“Ugh, a wasted effort. It’s just a soul armament in a giant egg form!” Bai Yunfei angrily sighed. “What can I even do with this ‘soul armament’? I can’t even trade them!

“Might as well upgrade them for the experience.”

He took one of the eggs into his hand.

“Upgrade.”

Upgrade Failed

Equipment Destroyed

Upon failure to upgrade, the egg was reduced to multicolored ashes that sprinkled down to the floor.

“Urgh....” Disappointment filled Bai Yunfei’s mouth. This wasn’t an unexpected result, and neither was it a painful outcome, so Bai Yunfei continued.

“Upgrade.”

Upgrade Failed
Equipment Destroyed

Another one of the eggs was reduced to ashes, resulting in him taking a third.

“Upgrade.”

Upgrade Successful
Equipment Grade: Mid Human Elemental Affinity: Metal, Water, Wind, Earth, Wood, Lightning Upgrade Level: +11 Attack: 370 Additional Attack: 255 Soul Compatibility: 15%  +10 Additional Effect: 8% chance to inflict knockback when attacking.  Upgrade Requirement: 75 Soulpoints

“Oh? It worked?”

Surprised, Bai Yunfei put the egg aside to work on another.

“Upgrade.”

Upgrade Failed
Equipment Destroyed

“Last one,” Bai Yunfei picked up the fifth egg, “upgrade.”

Upgrade Successful
Equipment Grade: Mid Human Elemental Affinity: Fire, Wood, Wind Lightning Upgrade Level: +11 Attack: 360 Additional Attack: 240 Soul Compatibility: 15%  +10 Additional Effect: 10% chance to increase attacking power by 50%. Upgrade Requirement: 75 Soulpoints

“It worked again?!” Bai Yunfei was speechless, “Two out of five! Tsk, why didn’t I have this type of luck when upgrading other equipment before?”

Despite two of the eggs being +11, Bai Yunfei didn’t really care about them. They were still something he could amuse himself with and didn’t care if they broke, so he took the egg with six elements into his hands.

“Upgrade.”

Upgrade Failed
Equipment Destroyed

Watching as the egg was reduced to ashes, Bai Yunfei chuckled, "Thought so...

“And now for the last one!

“Upgrade.”

Upgrade Successful

Equipment Grade: Mid Human  
Elemental Affinity: Fire, Wood, Wind, Lightning  
Upgrade Level: +12  
Attack: 360  
Additional Attack: 350  
Soul Compatibility: 25%

+10 Additional Effect: 10% chance to increase attacking power by 50%.  
+12 Additional Effect: 40% chance to inflict confusion for 15 seconds.  
Cooldown of 20 seconds.

Upgrade Requirement: 75 Soulpoints

“Uhm....” This time, Bai Yunfei was really without words.

“It worked again?!”

“Really, what kind of luck is this? If I’d known earlier, I would’ve upgraded something more useful.

“It’s been a long time since I managed to upgrade anything to +12, and an egg to boot. What kind of joke is this....”

Somewhat pained at his success, Bai Yunfei decided to go for broke.

“Upgrade!”

Upgrade Successful

Equipment Grade: Mid Human  
Elemental Affinity: Fire, Wood, Wind, Lightning  
Upgrade Level: +13  
Attack: 360  
Additional Attack: 550  
Soul Compatibility: 45%

+10 Additional Effect: 10% chance to increase attacking power by 50%.

+12 Additional Effect: 40% chance to inflict confusion for 15 seconds.

Cooldown of 20 seconds.

+13 Additional Effect: Create a spatial blade with strength proportional to the amount of soulforce consumed.

Cooldown of 30 seconds.

Upgrade Requirement: 75 Soulpoints

Fury exploded onto Bai Yunfei's face in form of a red light as he stared in disbelief at the egg in his hand.

"I....thi...wha...I..."

Incoherent at the event that had just transpired, Bai Yunfei couldn't even believe his eyes. They were glued to the egg, and while his eyes were staring unflinchingly at it, his face was already going through several shades of red and green.

In his anger, he flew to his feet and smashed the egg to the ground, "F\*cking hell, I've been cheated!"

.....

This wasn't the first time Bai Yunfei acted this way....

Having remembered such a feeling before, Bai Yunfei practically cried to himself, "This is exactly just like that one time!"

That one time he referred to was when the brick had been upgraded to +13....

Still slightly dazed by the results of the egg, Bai Yunfei took a while to retrieve the egg from the one meter deep hole in the ground. Dusting it off from any of the dirt, Bai Yunfei stared again at it in disbelieving silence.

"Is the Upgrade Equipment Technique 'intentionally' doing this to me? I blew up dozens of earth tier soul armaments the last time,

and not one of them made it to +12!! And now, here I am with a +13 egg I picked up out of nowhere....

“What’s going on? Having the brick become +13 was already shameful enough. I can pass the brick off as being some sort of easy to use street weapon, but an egg? What am I going to do with that, throw it at my enemies?!”

Just thinking about how he’d use the egg to block an enemy’s attack or use it to slam into their heads made Bai Yunfei shudder fiercely.



# Table of Contents

[Upgrade Specialist in Another World](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 301: Going Home](#)

[Chapter 302: Reunion Between Mother and Daughter](#)

[Chapter 303: Paying a Visit](#)

[Chapter 304: Utter Defeat!!](#)

[Chapter 305: Intimidation](#)

[Chapter 306: Worth It!](#)

[Chapter 307: A Conversation and A Test](#)

[Chapter 308: There'll Always Be An Unexpected Windfall Amidst the Buyout](#)

[Chapter 309: Kou Tingting](#)

[Chapter 310: Detoxifying Earring and Hydrotherapy](#)

[Chapter 311: Reunion Festival](#)

[Chapter 312: I am the Bandit Chief](#)

[Chapter 313: A List of Prodigies](#)

[Chapter 314: Dragonfruit](#)

[Chapter 315: Baby Wind Squaller](#)

[Chapter 316: Junior Headmaster of the Beast Taming School](#)

[Chapter 317: A Must Have!!](#)

[Chapter 318: Bidding War](#)

[Chapter 319: Shocking Everyone](#)

[Chapter 320: Mo Ni](#)

[Chapter 321: A Reunion With Jing Mingfeng!](#)

[Chapter 322: Trading for the Soul Concealment Art](#)

[Chapter 323: The 'Blackwind' Dagger \(First\)](#)

[Chapter 324: An Unexpected Twist? \(Second\)](#)

[Chapter 325: Friends?! \(Third\)](#)

[Chapter 326: Instant Death? \(Fourth\)](#)

[Chapter 327: Instant Death \(First\)](#)

[Chapter 328: Double Kill!!! \(Second\)](#)

[Chapter 329: The Mushroom is Back, But Now What?! \(Third\)](#)

[Chapter 330: Xinyun Was Kidnapped!](#)

[Chapter 331: Forming an Essence Fireseed Again!](#)

[Chapter 332: The Stone Asura](#)

[Chapter 333: Battling a Soul Exalt](#)

[Chapter 334: Pushed Back? Time to Counterstrike! \(First\)](#)

[Chapter 335: The Overusage of a Technique and Despair! \(Second\)](#)

[Chapter 336: The Collision of Two Fireseeds! \(Third\)](#)

[Chapter 337: The Final Explosion \(Fourth\)](#)

[Chapter 338: The Death of Hidden Snake \(Fifth\)](#)

[Chapter 339: A Safe Rescue \(Sixth\)](#)

[Chapter 340: The Mastermind Was Him! \(First\)](#)

[Chapter 341: Resting After a Battle and the First Rumors of Fame \(Second\)](#)

[Chapter 342: The 'Soulbound' Yun's Soul Ring \(Third\)](#)

[Chapter 343: Misgivings](#)

[Chapter 344: Misgivings](#)

[Chapter 345: The Third Son of Tang](#)

[Chapter 346: Tranquility](#)

[Chapter 347: Poisoned?!](#)

[Chapter 348: Elder Hai](#)

[Chapter 349: A Game Between Two Experts](#)

[Chapter 350: Welcoming Gifts](#)

[Chapter 351: Dual Flame Arts and the Dual Dragon Burst!](#)

[Chapter 352: Unexpected Guests](#)

[Chapter 353: Meeting Mo Ni Again](#)

[Chapter 354: When All Worries Melt Away](#)

[Chapter 355: A Meeting of Foes](#)

[Chapter 356: Anger From A Son's Death](#)

[Chapter 357: Expulsion](#)

[Chapter 358: Returning a Tiger to Its Mountain?](#)

[Chapter 359: Hunted!](#)

[Chapter 360: The Closure to a Chapter](#)

[Chapter 361: Smooth Training and....Unknown Dangers!](#)

#### [Book 4 - Soulbeast Forest](#)

[Chapter 362: Two Years Later at Praestia Pass](#)

[Chapter 363: Accepting a Request](#)

[Chapter 364: Adventuring Team](#)

[Chapter 365: A Tentative Understanding](#)

[Chapter 366: Soulbeast Ambush](#)

[Chapter 367: A Two Year Summary and an Unordinary Situation](#)

[Chapter 368: An Unexpected Crisis!](#)

[Chapter 369: A Wave of Soulbeasts!](#)

[Chapter 370: Battle Determination](#)

[Chapter 371: A One Man Wall!](#)  
[Chapter 372: Dual Desert Eagles and Gun Fu](#)  
[Chapter 373: Dual Flame Arts: Coil!](#)  
[Chapter 374: The Final 'Mountain' of a Soulbeast!](#)  
[Chapter 375: The Hillbeast](#)  
[Chapter 376: Coil x Dual Dragons!!](#)  
[Chapter 377: 'Long', Swordsman of the Three Swords Style](#)  
[Chapter 378: The Final Battle](#)  
[Chapter 379: The Subsiding Wave of Beasts](#)  
[Chapter 380: A Rendezvous](#)  
[Chapter 381: A Request](#)  
[Chapter 382: Becoming Famous Again](#)  
[Chapter 383: The Unusual Soulbeast Forest](#)  
[Chapter 384: Fighting a Pack of Wolves](#)  
[Chapter 385: Suddenly, A Purple-crowned Snake!](#)  
[Chapter 386: Three-eyed Bloodlion!](#)  
[Chapter 387: A Sudden Breakthrough!](#)  
[Chapter 388: Fighting a Bloodlion Solo](#)  
[Chapter 389: A Mental Attack](#)  
[Chapter 390: The Decisive Blow!](#)  
[Chapter 391: The Hidden Enemy](#)  
[Chapter 392: Thunderfire Wolf](#)  
[Chapter 393: A Challenging Battle](#)  
[Chapter 394: Escaping](#)  
[Chapter 395: Reluctance!](#)  
[Chapter 396: Meeting Na Lanyin Again!](#)  
[Chapter 397: Guidance \(First\)](#)  
[Chapter 398: Battle Between Wolf and Bird \(Second\)](#)  
[Chapter 399: An Unegxpected Discovery \(Third\)](#)  
[Chapter 400: Renactment of Deja Vu and Bamboozlement \(Fourth\)](#)